

UNIVERSIDADE DE LISBOA
FACULDADE DE CIÊNCIAS
DEPARTAMENTO DE FÍSICA



A MULTIWAVELENGTH STUDY OF
NEAR- AND MID-INFRARED
SELECTED GALAXIES AT HIGH REDSHIFT:
ERGs, AGN-IDENTIFICATION AND
THE CONTRIBUTION FROM DUST

HUGO G. MESSIAS

Doutoramento em Astronomia e Astrofísica

Ano 2011

UNIVERSIDADE DE LISBOA
FACULDADE DE CIÊNCIAS
DEPARTAMENTO DE FÍSICA



A MULTIWAVELENGTH STUDY OF
NEAR- AND MID-INFRARED
SELECTED GALAXIES AT HIGH REDSHIFT:
ERGs, AGN-IDENTIFICATION AND
THE CONTRIBUTION FROM DUST

HUGO G. MESSIAS

Doutoramento em Astronomia e Astrofísica

Tese orientada pelo

Prof. Doutor José Manuel Afonso

Ano 2011

Para os meus Pais, Irmãos e Juaninha

Acknowledgements / Agradecimentos

Although the thesis is written in English, allow me to thank in Portuguese the people that have been part of my life for more than a thesis-time.

Obrigado Mãe e Pai! Pelo esforço em fazer de nós o que somos. Por seguirem as vossas convicções metendo-nos sempre em primeiro lugar, independentemente das condições em que o faziam. Por nos terem proporcionado todas as aventuras que vivemos, por nos terem levado por becos e ruelas, e caminhos de três estrelas, por termos dado a volta à Terra. Hei-de vos agradecer com um forte abraço sem mais dizer, mas queria que as primeiras linhas deste texto fossem vossas. Seja qual fôr o resultado, Parabéns!

A vocês meus dois irmãos! Às nossas tardes de improviso Ritchardeano, enquanto o Ritché terminava o seu Técnico, que agora muito tenho recordado e me têm posto a rir mesmo nas alturas em que isto corre pior. Obrigado aos dois pelo pão-com-chouriço à noite, pelos “Salta puto!!” e “diverte-te puto!”, pelos treinos em que vamos os três deixar os pulmões. Obrigado pelas sobrinhas que trouxeram ao Mundo. Parabéns Anuxas e BIpa!

A ti Juaninha! Nós que ainda poucos passos demos, mas já passámos por muito. Obrigado à dança que nos uniu e que nos acompanhará enquanto pudermos bater com a unha no braço cadeira. Os próximos tempos não parecem dos mais fáceis, mas hão-de passar bem mais rápido que estes últimos quatro anos. Tu vais voar! Vamos conseguir! Beijuhu! Obrigado Lídia e Victor e Parabéns!

Aos meus avós! Pelas bolachas Maria do “pacote azul”, pelo assobio até à música, pelas tardes de calor na Aldeia, pelas torradas na lareira. Por me terem dado os pais que deram!

Ao grupo do Judo. Em especial, a vocês os dois, Moraes e Rui! Passaram bem para lá de simples treinadores. Cada geração que vos passa nas mãos junta-se à próxima sem haver problemas de idade. Puxamos todos uns pelos outros, mesmo fora do tapete, e é aí que revelamos o grupo consistente que somos. Como o capitão disse “Levantem a cabeça!”, porque para o ano regressa às nossas mãos. Matos, boa sorte para o doc! Às nossas músicas Hugão! Beijo grande Inês! Rosi, começa a fazer a prancha.

Ao grupo do Tango. Às minhas duas mentoras Dalila e Alexandra, à minha professora Miriam, ao meu curioso companheiro Francisco que ninguém consegue acompanhar a sua energia. A todos!

Um beijo enorme à Guida que tantas manias incutiu nesta família e outro à Maria Amélia. As duas aturaram um puto no seu auge de reguilice (mas sempre divertido, espero). Os meus parabéns! Queria ainda agradecer ao Colégio Moderno por me ter possibilitado seguir a opção Artes-Física do 10^o ao 12^o ano, permitindo, deste modo, atrasar a derradeira

decisão até ao último ano de liceu.

This thesis would not be possible without the doctoral grant SFRH/BD/31338/2006 from Fundação para a Ciência e Tecnologia. I am deeply thankful for the opportunity given by the institution. I wished I had produced more during the thesis itself, but all the work done is scientifically relevant and I will acknowledge your support in any of the outcomes resulting from my thesis work. Please, do continue to help students fulfilling their goals. As many as possible! Science is future and development, and we all need that right now. I also acknowledge support from FCT through the research grant PTDC/FIS/100170/2008, University of California Riverside for the support that enabled me to work with Bahram Mobasher, from the Space Telescope Science Institute and Anglo-Australian Observatory during a visit to the respective headquarters.

Obrigado Afonso! I am aware that in the beginning your patience was immense after all that knocking on your door. I hope I was a good first experience nonetheless, and I wish you all the luck, both professionally — as the new CAAUL director — and, more importantly, family-wise — with the three kids to handle. Thank you for all the opportunities you gave me, allowing me to travel the world. You have taught me a lot, I just hope I make the most out of it. Hopefully, I will be back and help CAAUL grow even more. And thank you for the help throughout this last months of thesis writing.

“Merci” Bahram, Azin, Armeen, and Tara for welcoming me to your home. I do appreciate that a lot! It was really a nice time with you and the Darc’s, and I can’t thank you enough. You have a friend in Lisbon waiting for a visit of yours. I hope we keep seeing each other, and never let contact go. Thank you Bahram for the opportunity to work with you (it was a great experience) and for the opportunities you have provided, allowing me to make contact with the people from the other side of the Atlantic. I do hope we keep collaborating along.

Thank you Andrew for always being the first to give comments to my “hard” drafts, and to welcome me at AAO. Thank you so much Mara for the support, I owe the ESO presentation to you. Thank you Dave and Tânia for the help on the ERG work. Thank you Harry, Norman, and Tomas for the opportunity to work with you.

To both of my friends Fernando Buitrago and Antonio Cava, a big Thank You for the help on the Passive Disk Galaxies project. I would not have made it this far if it wasn’t for you two. I hope we keep collaborating from now on.

Thank you João Yun for bringing me to the OAL in the first place and introducing me to Afonso, Rui Agostinho for guiding me through the amazing Observatório Astronómico de Lisboa and to show me how fun Astronomy is, João Retrê for the inhuman effort to bring together the team that now brings OAL to life at night, and Cristina Fernandes for the latex thesis template that helped a lot the thesis writing.

I would like to thank FIREWORKS, Norris & Afonso et al., GOODS, MUSIC, COSMOS, Luo et al., SWIRE, SDSS, UKIDSS, 2MASS, Seymour et al., teams for producing the public catalogues and images on which this thesis is based. I have to thank COSMOS and SERVS teams for the opportunity to observe during their telescope times, respectively, at Keck II and Telescopio Nazionale Galileo.

I thank the following people for insightful conversations that allowed this thesis to

improve: Tommy Wiklind, Duília de Mello, Leonidas Moustakas, Tomas Dahlen, Harry Ferguson, Norman Grogin, Andrea Comastri, Jennifer Donley, Vernesa Smolčić, Jennifer Lotz (also for providing the morphology code), Jessica Krick, and Pablo Pérez-González. And, although they made my life hard (and one still is), I have to thank the anonymous referees that pushed this work to a higher level.

I acknowledge the use of C language with which I wrote most of my codes, Virtual Observatory Tools (Topcat, VODesk, Aladin, VOconv, but specially Topcat!), Supermongo, Miriad, Karma, IRAF, NoMachine, IDL and above all, Ubuntu system. Thank you all the developers.

I acknowledge the frequent use of SAO/NASA ADS and B-ON online libraries, ESO data archive, NASA/IPAC Extragalactic Database, and Vizier.

Thank you all my friends back in the USA. You made my life great there. It was really nice meeting you all! And for those who went with me on the New Zealand trip.... no words! Well.. a few, next time.. lets stop! Thank you for this great trip!

I apologize in case I have missed any important references throughout the thesis. It was not my intention. I only have few years of Astronomy experience and unfortunately, could not absorb all the information so far.

Resumo

Com a primeira geração de câmeras *CCD* de infra-vermelho (IV) nos anos 70 e 80, como um melhoramento aos primeiros detectores de IR, possibilitou coberturas sistemáticas de grande área nesta região do espectro. Esta nova janela que então se abria mostrou à comunidade científica quão limitada era a nossa visão do Universo quando restringida aos telescópios de óptico, mais desenvolvidos nessa altura. Hoje em dia sabemos que a maior parte da acção acontece fora do regime do óptico. Os raios- γ e X mostram-nos os eventos mais energéticos do Universo (o mais distante remonta à época em que o Universo tinha somente 600 milhões de anos, Tanvir et al., 2009), o IV (1–1000 μm) que revela quantidades enormes de poeira a reemitir luz absorvida do ultra-violeta/óptica, e o rádio que até aos meados dos anos 90 foi o recordista das fontes mais distantes observadas no Universo. Esta tese está focada no regime do IV, ao mesmo tempo que considera as restantes janelas espectrais de maneira a maximizar a caracterização das amostras de galáxias consideradas neste estudo.

Uma análise multi-comprimento-de-onda (MCO, dos raios-X às frequências de rádio) das propriedades de populações de galáxias extremamente vermelhas (GEVs) é apresentada de início. Um conjunto de dados entre os mais profundos alguma vez obtidos são tidos em conta neste trabalho. A região do céu é das mais intensamente observadas: o *Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey*¹ / *Chandra Deep Field South*². Ao adotar uma metodologia puramente estatística, considera-se toda a informação fotométrica e espectroscópica disponível em amostras numerosas de objectos extremamente vermelhos (OEVs, 553 fontes), IRAC³ OEVs (IOEVs, 259 fontes), e galáxias vermelhas distantes (GVDs, 289 fontes) de maneira a obter distribuições em distância, identificar galáxias que alberguem um núcleo galáctico activo (NGA) ou zonas de formação estelar, e, utilizando observações rádio neste campo, estimar densidades de taxa de formação estelar ($\dot{\rho}_*$) robustas e independentes da existência de poeira nestas populações de galáxias. As propriedades de sub-populações de galáxias “puras” (aquelas que pertencem somente a um dos grupos referidos) e “comuns” (aquelas que são comuns aos três) são também investigadas.

Em geral, um grande número de NGAs são identificados (até 25%, baseado em critérios

¹Cobertura Profunda no Sul das Origens pelos Grandes Observatórios

²Campo Profundo no Sul do *Chandra*. O telescópio espacial *Chandra* opera nos raios-X (0.5–8 keV) e deve o seu nome ao astrofísico Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar, <http://chandra.harvard.edu/>

³*Infra-red array camera* (IRAC, câmara em grelha de IV) do telescópio espacial *Spitzer*, <http://irsa.ipac.caltech.edu/data/SPITZER/docs/irac/>

de raios-X e IV), sendo na sua maioria objectos de tipo-2 (obscurecidos). A emissão rádio oriunda de actividade NGA não é tipicamente forte, implicando um acréscimo de 10 a 25% nas médias/medianas das luminosidades rádio ao incluir-se GEVs que albergam AGN. Porém, os NGAs são frequentemente encontrados em GEVs, e a sua não identificação poderá aumentar significativamente (em 200% em alguns casos) as estimativas de $\dot{\rho}_*$ das GEVs. Este resultado pode ser interpretado de duas maneiras: ou a população GEV que alberga um NGA tem efectivamente uma grande componente de formação estelar ou a emissão NGA está a enviezar fortemente os resultados. Deste modo, apesar da contribuição da formação estelar para a luminosidade rádio permaneça inconclusiva em galáxias que alberguem um NGA num estudo de rádio, pode-se ainda assim estimar limites superiores e inferiores de $\dot{\rho}_*$ em populações GEV. São assim identificadas sub-populações que cobrem uma larga escala de taxas de formação estelar (TFE) médias, desde menos de 10 massas solares (M_\odot) por ano ($M_\odot \text{ ano}^{-1}$) até $150 M_\odot \text{ ano}^{-1}$. Ao separar em intervalos de distância ($1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3^4$) obtém-se uma evolução signficante em $\dot{\rho}_*$. Enquanto OEVs e GVDs seguem a evolução geral da população de galáxias observada no Universo, IOEVs aparentam uma evolução constante. Contudo, os IOEVs são os maiores contribuidores para a $\dot{\rho}_*$ total a $1 \leq z < 2$ (até um nível de 25%), enquanto os OEVs poderão contribuir até 40% a $2 \leq z \leq 3$.

A comparação de estimativas de TFEs no rádio com as de ultra-violeta confirma a natureza “poeirenta” das populações comuns (com um obscurecimento médio de $E(B - V) = 0.5 - 0.6$ e máximos de $E(B - V) \sim 1$), e também que a comparação directa destes dois regimes do espectro é válida para obter uma estimativa de obscurecimento nas galáxias. GEVs são também conhecidas por serem galáxias massivas a grande distância, e, neste trabalho, obtemos funções e densidades de massa estelar, mostrando que 60% da massa estelar existente no Universo a $1 \leq z \leq 3$ está em GEVs e que esta fracção aumenta em populações de galáxias gradualmente mais massivas. É também efectuado um estudo morfológico para uma caracterização mais completa de GEVs, que revela uma população de GVDs, que contém uma mistura de populações estelares jovem e adulta assim como actividade obscurecida NGA.

Estes resultados no cômputo geral poderão apontar para o facto de OEVs, IOEVs, e GDVs serem de facto parte da mesma população, porém vista em fases diferentes de evolução galáctica. Isto está de acordo com o cenário já proposto por alguns autores que defendem as fases de galáxia de sub-milímetro, galáxia obscurecida por poeira, GDV, e OEV como uma sequência de evolução galáctica.

A segunda parte desta tese é dedicada a um trabalho que começou inicialmente como uma necessidade para a demografia de NGAs em GEVs, revelando-se como um dos grandes resultados desta tese, com grande relevância para o telescópio espacial *James Webb*⁵ (*TEJW*) que será colocado no espaço em breve (2014). É sabido que o IV possibilita a selecção de galáxias com actividade nuclear, que poderá nem ser detectada nas cober-

⁴O *redshift* (z) é uma unidade de distância em astronomia que não é linear com a distância medida em metros, mas tem em conta a expansão do Universo.

⁵<http://www.jwst.nasa.gov/>

turas de raios-X mais profundas devido a extremo obscurecimento. Muitos critérios de IV foram explorados para cumprir este objectivo e intensamente testados. A grande conclusão é que a grandes distâncias ($z \gtrsim 2.5$) a contaminação por galáxias não activas é abundante. Isto não é de todo viável para estudos do Universo mais jovem, que é o grande objectivo de muitos estudos em curso hoje em dia e de futuras coberturas profundas. Ao utilizar modelos de distribuição espectral de energia que cobrem uma variedade de propriedades galácticas, novas versões de critérios de IV mais eficientes na selecção de NGAs a grandes distâncias (até $z \sim 7$) são apresentadas. Com particular ênfase nos comprimentos-de-onda cobertos pelo *TE JW* (1–25 μm), criou-se um critério IV (que usa bandas K e IRAC, KI) como alternativa aos critérios existentes a $z < 2.5$. É também criado um critério IV que selecciona NGAs com grande fiabilidade desde distâncias locais até ao final da época de reionização ($z \sim 7$). Tanto KI como KIM requerem filtros já existentes, sendo possível a sua aplicação no imediato. Amostras de controlo com cobertura MCO (desde os raios-X às frequências rádio) são também utilizadas para estimar a fiabilidade destes novos critérios em comparação aos já existentes. Conclui-se que os modelos utilizados e amostras de controlo indicam um melhoramento significativo do KI em comparação com outros critérios de selecção NGA baseados somente em filtros IRAC, e que o KIM é fiável mesmo a distâncias maiores que $z \sim 2.5$.

O último capítulo tem por objectivo alertar que a poeira existe e não deve ser subestimada. Este é e deveria ser sempre um facto que um astrónomo deveria-se manter ciente. Ao utilizar dados UKIRT/CFHT/*Spitzer* no *Cosmological Survey* (COSMOS), regimes de altas temperaturas de poeira (800–1500 K) são investigados, ao invés do regime mais frio normalmente referido na literatura (< 100 K). Funções de luminosidade de IV (FLI) são obtidas (comprimentos-de-onda de repouso 1.6, 3.3, and 6.2 μm) assim como é estimada a sua dependência com a distância e populações de galáxias. A conhecida bimodalidade das FLI é observada. Fracções de poeira são extraídas por base num modelo de emissão puramente estelar, e as primeiras funções de densidade de luminosidade de poeira quente alguma vez feitas são apresentadas. Ao separar em galáxias elípticas, espirais, de forte formação estelar e NGAs, mostra-se como a emissão NGA pode contribuir significativamente mesmo a 1.6 μm , provocando um provável enriquecimento (sistemático e crescente) em qualquer estimativa de massa estelar baseada em luminosidades de IV. Este efeito, tal como a fracção de NGAs, aumenta com a distância, sendo por isso de grande importância a adopção de um procedimento cuidado para a estimativa de massas estelares, mesmo numa análise de ajuste á distribuição espectral de energia. Por fim, é apresentada a evolução da densidade de luminosidade da poeira quente, revelando um decréscimo bem mais acentuado do que o da história de formação estelar no Universo. Há duas interpretações válidas para este resultado: ou a reduzida TFE no Universo local é incapaz de aquecer quantidades de poeira suficientes para esta dominar a 3.3 μm ou há efectivamente um decréscimo na quantidade de poeira existente nas galáxias no Universo local. Um estudo recente com o Observatório Espacial *Herschel* dá força ao último cenário.

Por último, é apresentado um conjunto de projectos futuros que têm por objectivo tanto o melhoramento do trabalho aqui descrito, como a aplicação das técnicas desenvolvidas durante esta tese. Estas últimas resultam em três projectos importantes: um estudo já

em curso de discos adultos a grandes distâncias, sendo este um dos futuros campos de investigação de grande relevância na altura em que o *Atacama Large Millimeter Array* (ALMA) estiver completo; um censo dos NGA mais obscurecidos a grandes distâncias; e uma comparação directa e consistente entre a emissão de poeira quente (800–1500 K) e fria (< 100 K) dependendo não só em luminosidade de IV como distância.

PALAVRAS CHAVE: infra-vermelho; galáxias; evolução; actividade nuclear; formação estelar; poeira.

Abstract

The main focus of this thesis is the IR spectral regime, which since the 70's and 80's has revolutionised our understanding of the Universe.

A multi-wavelength analysis on Extremely Red Galaxy populations is first presented in one of the most intensively observed patch of the sky, the Chandra Deep Field South. By adopting a purely statistical methodology, we consider all the photometric and spectroscopic information available on large samples of Extremely Red Objects (EROs, 553 sources), IRAC EROs (IEROs, 259 sources), and Distant Red Galaxies (DRGs, 289 sources). We derive general properties: redshift distributions, AGN host fraction, star-formation rate densities, dust content, morphology, mass functions and mass densities. The results point to the fact that EROs, IEROs, and DRGs all belong to the same population, yet seen at different phases of galaxy evolution.

The second part of this thesis is dedicated to the AGN selection in the IR, with particular relevance to the soon to be launched *James Webb Space Telescope* in 2014. We develop an improved IR criterion (using K and IRAC bands) as an alternative to existing IR AGN criteria for the $z \lesssim 2.5$ regime, and develop another IR criterion which reliably selects AGN hosts at $0 < z < 7$ (using K , *Spitzer*-IRAC, and *Spitzer*-MIPS_{24 μ m} bands, KIM). The ability to track AGN activity since the end of reionization holds great advantages for the study of galaxy evolution.

The last chapter of this thesis focus on the importance of dust. Based on deep IR data on the Cosmological Survey, we derive rest-frame 1.6, 3.3, and 6.2 μ m luminosity functions and their dependency on redshift. We estimate the dust contribution to those wavelengths and show that the hot dust luminosity density evolves since $z = 1 - 2$ with a much steeper drop than the star-formation history of the Universe.

KEY WORDS: infra-red; galaxies; evolution; active; starburst; dust.

Contents

Acknowledgements/Agradecimientos	i
Resumo	v
Abstract	ix
List of Figures	xiii
List of Tables	xvii
List of Abbreviations	xxi
List of Unconventional Units	xxv
List of Conventions	xxvii
1 Introduction	1
1.1 The Λ -Cold Dark Matter Universe	1
1.2 An unseen Universe	3
1.3 The power of luminosity and mass functions	10
1.4 Finding AGN	14
1.5 Dust everywhere	17
1.6 Thesis outline	19
1.6.1 Extremely red galaxies	19
1.6.2 The IR selection of AGN	21
1.6.3 The contribution of dust to the IR	22
1.6.4 Future work	23
2 A multi-wavelength approach to ERGs	25
2.1 Introduction	25
2.2 Sample Selection	27
2.2.1 Methodology	27
2.2.2 The FIREWORKS catalogue	29
2.2.3 Red Galaxy Samples	32

2.2.4	Sub-classes of ERGs	34
2.3	Multi-wavelength AGN identification and classification	35
2.3.1	Optical Spectroscopy	35
2.3.2	X-Rays	36
2.3.3	Mid-Infrared	39
	2.3.3.1 Classification: MIR colours	40
	2.3.3.2 MIR degeneracy at $z > 2.5$	41
2.3.4	Radio	45
2.4	Properties of ERGs	47
2.4.1	Redshift Distributions	47
2.4.2	AGN content of ERGs	50
2.4.3	Radio Stacking	56
2.4.4	Star formation activity in ERGs	58
2.4.5	Dust content	68
2.4.6	Mass Functions	70
2.4.7	Morphology	82
	2.4.7.1 The case of pDRGs	88
2.5	Conclusions	94
3	Selecting $0 < z < 7$ AGN	99
3.1	Introduction	99
3.2	Distinguishing AGN from Stellar/SF IR contributions	102
3.2.1	Template predictions	104
	3.2.1.1 The template set	104
	3.2.1.2 An enhanced wedge diagram	105
	3.2.1.3 Extending to high redshifts	111
3.3	Test bench	115
3.3.1	The GOODS and COSMOS samples	118
	3.3.1.1 GOODS-South	121
	3.3.1.2 COSMOS	127
3.3.2	IR-excess sources	129
3.3.3	SDSS QSOs	131
3.3.4	H z RGs	135
3.4	Discussion	137
3.4.1	Selection of type-1/2 and low-/high-luminosity sources	137
3.4.2	Photometric errors	149
3.4.3	$K - [4.5]$ at $z < 1$	149
3.5	Implications for JWST surveys	150
3.6	Conclusions	155

A Obscured/unobscured AGN	157
A.1 X-ray versus optical diagnostics	157
A.2 N_{H} versus hardness-ratio	159
A.3 Band ratios versus spectral fit	159
A.4 The adopted classification	161
A.5 Comparison with Treister et al. (2009b)	161
4 Infra-red dust luminosity functions in COSMOS	165
4.1 Introduction	165
4.2 The sample	167
4.2.1 Redshifts and galaxy populations	167
4.2.2 IR selection of AGN	172
4.3 Estimating the Dust Content	173
4.4 Dust Luminosity Density Functions	179
4.5 Conclusions	196
5 Future prospects	199
5.1 On the application to other surveys	200
5.2 Extremely red galaxies	202
5.2.1 Dependencies on clustering	202
5.2.2 Morphology evolution	203
5.2.3 Stacking algorithm	204
5.3 High- z passive discs	205
5.4 The search for the most obscured AGN	210
5.5 Direct comparison of the evolution of hot and cold dust	212
5.6 Closing remarks	212
Bibliography	213

List of Figures

1.1	The WMAP first data release	2
1.2	N-body Simulations	4
1.3	The dawn of EROs	6
1.4	Characterizing the LF	11
1.5	Cooling and ejection of gas	13
1.6	The AGN unified model	15
2.1	The difference between z_{spec} and z_{phot}	28
2.2	The overlap between ERG populations	33
2.3	K_s -selected IEROs	34
2.4	HR degeneracy at high- z	38
2.5	ERGs on the KI colour-colour space	42
2.6	Correcting KI at $z > 2.5$	44
2.7	An evolved disc at $z_{\text{phot}} = 2.5$	46
2.8	Redshift distributions of ERGs	48
2.9	Redshift distributions of pure and common ERGs	49
2.10	AGN fraction with colour	52
2.11	AGN fraction with redshift	53
2.12	Variation of $i_{775} - K_s$ colour with redshift	54
2.13	Variation of $J - K_s$ colour with redshift	55
2.14	SFR distribution of the radio detected ERGs	63
2.15	ERGs SFR densities with redshift	69
2.16	K_s -sample z -mass distribution	75
2.17	ERGs mass densities with redshift	79
2.18	ERGs mass functions with redshift	80
2.19	$I - K$ versus $J - K$: disentangling old and passive populations	81
2.20	ERGs on the Gini- M_{20} space	85
2.21	Pure and common ERGs on the Gini- M_{20} space	86
2.22	pEROs on the Gini- M_{20} space: dependency on $J - K$	87
2.23	ACS imaging of pDRGs	90
2.24	SED fitting to pDRG photometry	92
2.25	Spectroscopy of AGN pDRGs	93

3.1	Infrared spectral energy distributions	103
3.2	The Lacy et al. (2004, 2007) AGN criterion	107
3.3	The Stern et al. (2005) AGN criterion	108
3.4	The KI AGN criterion	109
3.5	Line emission effect on Photometry	111
3.6	The IM colour-colour space	113
3.7	The IM regions of interest	115
3.8	The 8.0 – 24 colour evolution with redshift	116
3.9	Magnitude distribution of GOODSs sample	122
3.10	MUSIC sources on KI and KIM colour-colour spaces	128
3.11	IR colours for SDSS-DR7 QSOs	134
3.12	IR colours of high- z radio sources	136
3.13	X-ray luminosity distributions	138
3.14	X-ray AGN completeness of IR AGN criteria	139
3.15	\mathcal{S}_{12} dependency on X-ray luminosity	141
3.16	\mathcal{S}_{12} and f_{obs} dependency on redshift	142
3.17	The high-redshift degeneracy of HR	144
3.18	\mathcal{S}_{12} dependency on intrinsic X-ray luminosity for IR criteria	146
3.19	Application of the $K - 4.5 > 0$ cut	150
3.20	KIM for <i>JWST</i>	152
3.21	SED flux evolution with redshift I	153
3.22	SED flux evolution with redshift II	154
A.1	Induced bias due to hard and soft band relative sensitivities.	163
4.1	Sample redshift distribution	169
4.2	Redshift completeness with magnitude	170
4.3	Sample completeness	171
4.4	AGN fraction evolution with redshift	173
4.5	Stellar and dust IR emission	174
4.6	Interpolating the 1.6 μm	175
4.7	Rest-frame luminosities: 1.6 versus 3.3 μm	177
4.8	Rest-frame luminosities: 1.6 versus 6.2 μm	178
4.9	Rest-frame 1.6 μm LFs	180
4.10	Rest-frame 3.3 μm LFs	181
4.11	Rest-frame 6.2 μm LFs	182
4.12	Evolution of 1.6 μm LFs with redshift	185
4.13	AGN flux boost at high redshift?	188
4.15	Rest-frame 3.3 μm dust LDFs	192
4.16	Rest-frame 3.3 μm dust LDFs evolution with redshift	193
4.17	Rest-frame 6.2 μm dust LDFs	194
4.18	Dust luminosity densities evolution with redshift	195

5.1	Selecting high- z passive disc galaxies	208
5.2	WFC3-H160 imaging of passive disc galaxies	209

List of Tables

2.1	ERG number statistics	31
2.2	Robust Radio stacking of ERG populations	59
2.2	. . . . .	60
2.3	Radio properties of ERGs	64
2.3	. . . . .	65
2.4	The dust content of ERG populations	71
2.4	. . . . .	72
2.5	Mass and sSFRs of the ERGs	77
2.5	. . . . .	78
3.1	GOODS-South $0 \leq z < 1$ control sample	124
3.2	GOODS-South $1 \leq z < 2.5$ control sample	125
3.3	GOODS-South $2.5 \leq z < 4$ control sample	126
3.4	KIM classification of GOODS-South sample.	129
3.5	COSMOS control sample	130
3.6	KIM classification of COSMOS sample.	130
3.7	Selection of IRxs sources.	132
3.8	AGN-type selection in GOODS-South.	147
3.9	AGN-type selection in COSMOS.	148
4.1	Redshift ranges	168
4.2	Sample statistics	172
4.3	Luminosity density fractions	196

List of Abbreviations

- FL — Função de Luminosidade
FLI — Função de Luminosidade de Infra-vermelho
GEV — Galáxia Extremamente Vermelha
GVD — Galáxia Vermelha Distante
IOEVs — IRAC Objectos Extremamente Vermelhos
IV — Infra-Vermelho
MCO — Multi-Comprimento-de-Onda
NGA — Núcleo Galáctico Activo
OEVs — Objectos Extremamente Vermelhos
- 2MASS — Two Micron All Sky Survey
ACS — Advanced Camera for Surveys
AGN — Active Galactic Nuclei
ALMA — Atacama Large Millimeter/submillimeter Array
ANN z — Artificial Neural Networks photometric redshift code
ASKAP — Australian Square Kilometre Array Pathfinder
ATCA — Australia Telescope Compact Array
Blazar — Blazing Quasi-stellar Object
BLAGN — Broad Line Active Galactic Nuclei
BQSO — Bottom Quasi-stellar Object (see Polletta et al., 2007)
BOOMERanG — Balloon Observations of Millimetric Extragalactic Radiation and Geophysics
 \mathcal{C} — Completeness
CIV — Carbon IV ion
CANDELS — Cosmic Assembly Near-infrared Deep Extragalactic Legacy Survey
CAS — Concentration, Assymetry, Smoothness
CCD — charge coupled device
CDFs — *Chandra* Deep Field South
cERG — Common Extremely Red Galaxy
CFHT — Canada France Hawaii Telescope
CMB — Cosmic Microwave Background
CO — Carbon monoxide molecule

COBE — Cosmic Background Explorer
COSMOS — Cosmological Survey
CXB — Cosmic X-ray Background
CXO — *Chandra* X-ray observatory
DM — Dark Matter
DOG — Dust Obscured Galaxy
DRG — Distant Red Galaxy
ECDFs — Extended *Chandra* Deep Field South
ELAIS — European Large Area ISO Survey
ERG — Extremely Red Galaxy
ERO — Extremely Red Object
ERS — Early Release Science
FB — X-ray Full-Band
FeLoBAL -Iron (Fe) Low-ionization Broad Absorption Line galaxy
FIR — Far Infra-red
FIREWORKS — catalogue assembling the data on the Faint InfraRed Extragalactic Survey (FIRES) fields *Hubble* deep Field South and MS 1054-03
FORS2 — FOcal Reducer and low dispersion Spectrograph 2
FWHM — Full Width at Half Maximum
 f_{obs} — obscured fraction of AGN sources
G — Gini coefficient
GATOR — General Catalog Query Engine
GMRT — Giant Metrewave Radio Telescope
GNS — GOODS NICMOS Survey
GOODS — Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey
HB — X-ray hard-band
HDF — Hubble deep field
HR — Hardness Ratio
HR10 — object number 10 of Hu & Ridgway (1994)
HSO — Herschel Space Observatory
HST — *Hubble* Space Telescope
HzRG — High redshift (z) Radio Galaxy
IERO — IRAC Extremely Red Object
IM — IRAC+MIPS colour-colour space
IMF — Initial Mass Function
IR — Infra-Red
IRAC — Infra-Red Array Camera
IRAS — Infra-Red Astronomical Satellite
IRBG — Infra-Red Bright Galaxy
IRS — Infra-Red spectrograph
IRxs — Infra-Red excess
ISAAC — Infrared Spectrometer And Array Camera
ISM — Inter Stellar Medium

ISO — Infra-Red Space Observatory
 JWST — *James Webb* Space Telescope
 KI — K+IRAC criterion
 KIM — K+IRAC+MIPS_{24 μ m} criterion
 L07 — Lacy et al. (2004, 2007) criterion
 LDF — Luminosity Density Function
 LF — Luminosity Function
 LIRG — Luminous Infra-REd Galaxy
 M₂₀ — the second-order moment value of the 20% brightest pixels
 mag — magnitude
 MAST — Multimission Archive at STScI
 MC — Monte Carlo
 MCO — Multi-Comprimento-de-Onda
 MeerKAT — Karoo Array Telescope
 MF — Mass Function
 MIPS — Multiband Imaging Photometer
 MIR — Mid-Infra-Red
 mm — millimeter
 MUSIC — MUltiwavelength Southern Infrared Catalogue
 MWA — MIT Haystack Observatory
 N_H — Hydrogen (H) column density
 NICMOS — Near Infrared Camera and Multi-Object Spectrometer
 NIR — Near-Infra-Red
 NLAGN — Narrow Line Active Galactic Nucleus
 N V — Nitrogen V ion
 O III — Oxigen III ion
 \mathcal{P} — Probability
 PAH — Polycyclic Aromatic Hydrocarbon
 PD — Probability Distribution
 PDG — Passive Disc Galaxy
 pDRG — pure Distant Red Galaxy
 pERO — pure Extremely Red Object
 PhD — Latin Philosophiae Doctor
 PIMMS — Portable, Interactive Multi-Mission Simulator
 PLE — Pure Luminosity Evolution
 QSO — Quasi-Stellar Object
 \mathcal{R} — Reliability
 R_{eff} — effective radius
 S05 — Stern et al. (2005) criterion
 \mathcal{S}_{12} — type-1/type-2 relative sensitivity
 \mathcal{S}_{HL} — X-ray high/low-luminosity relative sensitivity
 SB — X-ray Soft-Band
 SCUBA — Submillimeter Common User Bolometer Array

SDSS — Sloan Digital Sky Survey
SED — Spectral Energy Distribution
SF — Star Formation
SFH — Star Formation History
SFR — Star Formation Rates
SiIV — Silicon IV ion
SKA — Square Kilometre Array
SMBH — Super Massive Black Hole
SMG — Sub-Millimeter Galaxy
S/N — Signal-to-Noise
SST — *Spitzer* Space telescope
SWIRE — Spitzer Wide-area Infrared Extragalactic Survey
TEJW — Telescópio Espacial *James Webb*.
TFE — Taxa de Formação Estelar
TP-AGB — Thermally Pulsing - Asymptotic Giant Branch
TQSO — Top Quasi-Stellar Object (see Polletta et al., 2007)
type-1 — unobscured AGN
type-2 — obscured AGN
UDS — Ultra Deep Survey
UKIDSS — UKIRT Infrared Deep Sky Survey
UKIDSS-DXS — UKIRT Infrared Deep Sky Survey - Deep Extragalactic Survey
UKIRT — United Kingdom Infrared Telescope
ULIRG — Ultra-Luminous Infra-Red Galaxy
UV — Ultra-Violet
VIDEO — VISTA Deep Extragalactic Observations
VIMOS — VISIBLE MultiObject Spectrograph
VISTA — Visible and Infrared Survey Telescope for Astronomy
VLBI — Very Large Baseline Interferometer
VLA — Very Large Array
VLT — Very Large Telescope
VLT-UT — Very Large Telescope — Unit Telescope
WFC3 — Wide Field Camera 3
WISE — Wide-Field Infrared Survey Explorer
WMAP — Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe
XMM-*Newton* — X-ray Multi-Mirror Mission — *Newton*
 z — redshift
 z COSMOS — spectroscopic catalogue of COSMOS
 α — spectral index
 Γ — X-ray photon index
 Λ CDM — Λ Cold Dark Matter
 $\dot{\rho}_*$ — star-formation rate density
 ρ_M — mass density

List of Unconventional Units

Jansky — $1 \text{ Jy} \equiv 10^{-23} \text{ erg s}^{-1} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ Hz}^{-1}$

light-day — $1 \text{ light-day} \simeq 2.59 \times 10^{13} \text{ m}$

light-year — $1 \text{ light-year} \simeq 9.461 \times 10^{15} \text{ m}$

M_{\odot} — solar masses ($1 M_{\odot} \simeq 1.989 \times 10^{33} \text{ g}$)

pc — parsec ($1 \text{ pc} \simeq 3.086 \times 10^{18} \text{ cm} \simeq 3.26 \text{ light-years}$)

speed of light — $c \simeq 2.998 \times 10^8 \text{ m s}^{-1}$

yr — year ($1 \text{ yr} \simeq 31557600 \text{ s}$)

List of Conventions

AB magnitudes — $m_{AB} = 2.5 \times \log(f_\nu [\text{erg s}^{-1} \text{cm}^{-2} \text{Hz}^{-1}]) - 48.6$

AB to Vega conversion — $(I, J, H, K, [3.6], [4.5], [5.8], [8.0])_{AB} = (I, J, H, K, [3.6], [4.5], [5.8], [8.0])_{Vega} + (0.403, 0.904, 1.373, 1.841, 2.79, 3.26, 3.73, 4.40)$ (Roche et al., 2003, and <http://spider.ipac.caltech.edu/staff/gillian/cal.html>)

Power-law SED — $f_\nu \propto \nu^{-\alpha}$

Luminosity — $4\pi d_L^2 \times f_\nu \times k_{\text{corr}}$

Radio k_{corr} — $(1+z)^{\alpha-1}$

X-ray k_{corr} — $(1+z)^{\Gamma-2}$

Γ — $\Gamma \equiv 1 - \alpha$, $\Gamma = 1.8$ (Tozzi et al., 2006)

Hardness Ratio — $\frac{H-S}{H+S}$ ($H \equiv$ hard-band photon counts; $S \equiv$ soft-band photon counts)

Hubble constant — $H_0 = 70 \text{ km s}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-1}$

Cosmological constant — $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.7$

Total matter density — $\Omega_m = 0.3$

Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 The Λ -Cold Dark Matter Universe

The Lambda cold dark matter (Λ CDM) cosmology model is now widely accepted as the one that best explains our Universe, or at least what we know about it. One of the biggest achievements was the prediction of a radiation field emitted when the hot and dense young Universe became transparent to thermal radiation (about 300–400 thousand years after the Big Bang, at a redshift of $z \sim 1000$). This is known today as the cosmic microwave background (CMB). At present, due to the expansion of the Universe, this radiation is observed at longer wavelengths (1–2 mm) equivalent to a black body at a temperature of 2.725 K. At the beginning of this millennium, and following the pioneering work of its predecessors (e.g., COBE¹ in 1992, BOOMERanG² in 2000), the Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP, Bennett et al., 2003) took an unprecedented detailed picture of the “baby universe”, as the WMAP team likes to call it. Figure 1.1 shows the best image we have so far of the (believed to be) Big Bang afterglow, revealing temperature variations on the order of a millionth of a degree. The patterns seen in the WMAP image

¹<http://aether.lbl.gov/www/projects/cobe/>

²<http://cmb.phys.cwru.edu/boomerang/>

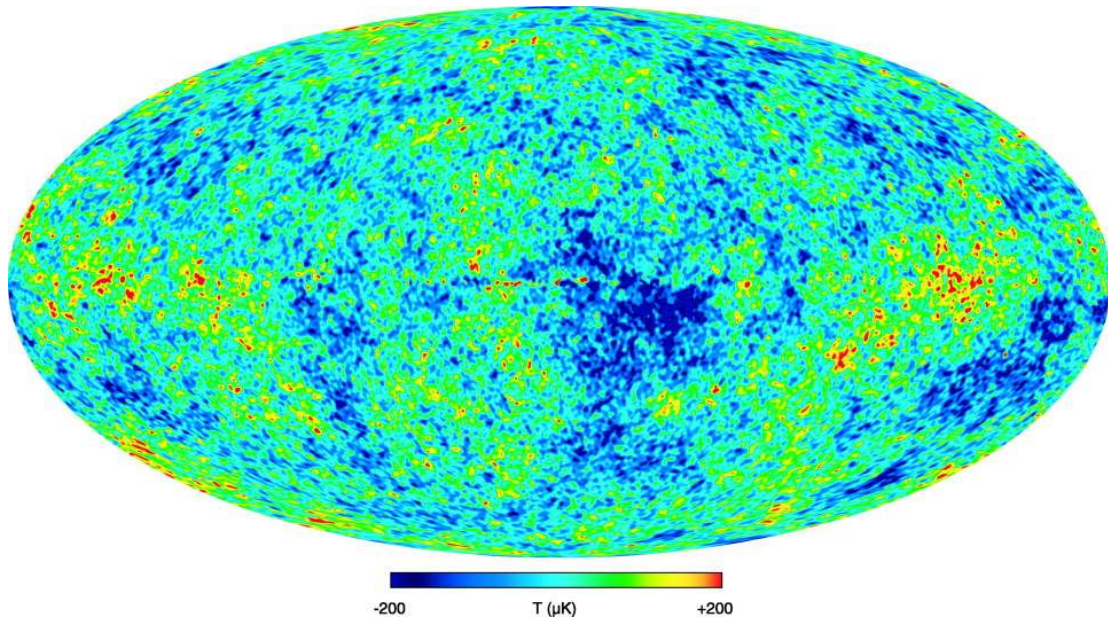


Figure 1.1: The best picture yet of our hot young Universe. Note the colour scale varies between -200 and $200 \mu\text{K}$. The over-densities are believed to be the predecessors of the galaxy clusters we see today. From Bennett et al. (2003)

are now believed to be density variations of matter, thus providing a means to track down the initial conditions of galaxy formation.

How these temperature fluctuations vary and how far apart they are in the sky (the so-called angular power spectrum) can be used, among other things, to derive cosmology constants, implying a Universe composed by 75% of ‘dark energy’ (Ω_Λ), and the remaining 25% (Ω_M) in the form of either ‘dark matter’ (DM, 21%) or matter we see in galaxies and in the inter-galactic medium (only 4%). The power-spectrum is also used as an input for any model attempting to trace back the origins of the Universe we see today. One recent work of reference is without any doubts the *Millennium Simulation*³ (Virgo Consortium, Springel et al., 2005c, but see also Kang et al. 2005; Croton et al. 2006b,a; Bower et al. 2006; De Lucia & Blaizot 2007). This numerical N-body simulation made use of enormous computer power at the Computing Centre of the Max-Planck Society (in Garching, Germany) to run

³<http://www.mpa-garching.mpg.de/galform/virgo/millennium/>

a never attempted sizeable simulation (tracing $\sim 10^{10}$ particles since redshift $z = 127$) over the course of 28 days of continuous computation. This simulation assumed an hierarchical evolution of dark matter halos through dissipationless mechanisms of gravitational instability governed by the input power spectrum, the cosmology parameters, and the nature of the dark matter itself. This hierarchical dark matter halo assembly carries with it the gas which then cools and condenses to form galaxies (Figure 1.2). However, although now we (seem to) understand the evolution of DM, the baryonic evolution (hence, that of galaxies) is far more complex than a “simple” gravitationally induced evolution. The physics inherent to baryonic evolution comprise gas cooling, star-formation mechanisms resulting in the production of dust and metals, feedback processes (such as super-nova winds and supermassive black hole ejecta), and mergers (see Kay et al., 2002; Benson et al., 2003, and references therein for a more detailed discussion on feedback models).

1.2 An unseen Universe

Although the ideas which resulted in the development and belief of the Λ CDM model can be traced back to the 70’s (Peebles, 1980), and even 50’s (Hoyle, 1951), the first semi-analytical⁴ models to account for many of the ingredients of galaxy evolution appeared in the 90’s (White & Frenk, 1991; Cole, 1991; Lacey & Silk, 1991), reporting successes (e.g., inter-galactic hot gas detectable in X-rays probably linked to the well-predicted star-formation rates in spirals) and acknowledging problems which still persist today (e.g., the steep faint-end of luminosity functions). Interestingly, this was close in time to the discovery (or recognition) of one of the biggest headaches hierarchical theorists have ever faced (and somehow still face). In the 80’s, the early stages of IR astronomy allowed the astronomers to access the infra-red (IR, $\lambda > 1 \mu\text{m}$) spectral regime, which was about to

⁴The naming results from the trial-and-error strategy used in this models, making use of tunable physical parameters to fit the observations.

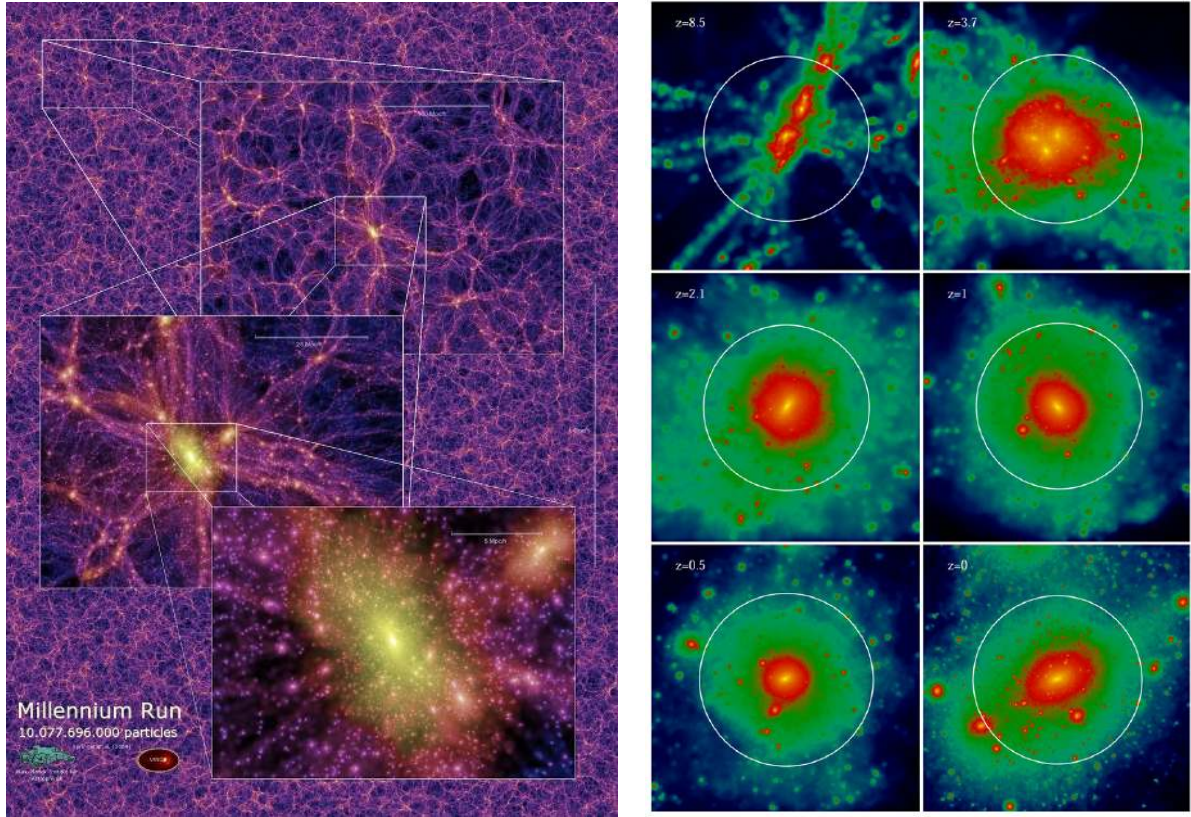


Figure 1.2: Zooming through a structured Universe into a dark matter halo at $z = 0$ in the Millennium Simulation (left panel). Each zoom scales down to a factor of four (credit: Virgo Consortium). On the right panel, a high resolution N-body simulation showing different stages of the dark matter halo hierarchical merging (from $z = 8.5$, top left, to $z = 0$, bottom right). Redder regions indicate higher densities regions (figure from Baugh, 2006).

reveal an unseen and unpredicted Universe. The PhD work of Elston in 1988 (Elston, 1988), making use of the first generation of IR CCD cameras (instead of single-element detectors), revealed two objects with optical-to-near-IR colours ($R - K$) redder than the massive central cluster galaxies seen locally, as well as a handful of objects undetected in R -band as candidates for $z > 1$ passively evolved galaxies (Figure 1.3). At the time, the enthusiastic possibility for a detection of a primeval galaxy, with the Lyman limit redshifted between the R and K bands, took over the remainder interpretations of either

passively evolved or dusty starburst galaxies at $z > 1$. Soon afterwards, it was found that these galaxies were actually $z \sim 0.8$ “normal” galaxies (Elston et al., 1989). It should be mentioned that roughly ten years before the work of Elston et al., such red colours had been observed in luminous ultra-steep spectrum radio galaxies (Rieke et al., 1979). Later, even more extreme colours ($R - K \sim 6-7$) were found for distant radio galaxies (Walsh et al., 1985; Lilly et al., 1985). What was special about the Elston et al. work (using a similar colour-magnitude plot as Lilly et al., 1985) was that, in just a 10 arcmin^2 survey and to a limit of $K \sim 17$ (Vega magnitudes), a numerous population of red galaxies was found. In case the sources happened to be $z > 1$ central cluster galaxies, their number density was not expected even by the upper limits set by Gunn et al. (1986, 50 cluster per square degree at $z = 1$). The members of this red galaxy population currently known as extremely red objects⁵ (EROs, probably introduced by Dey et al., 1999). The name is broadly used in the literature to refer to many types of extreme red colour criteria using extremely red optical-to-IR colours ($R - K > 5$, $R - K > 6$, $I - K > 4$, $I - H > 3$, etc...).

The $z > 6$ dream of Elston et al. was made possible by the works of Steidel & Hamilton (1993), Madau (1995) and Steidel et al. (1996), who showed that the Lyman continuum break was indeed an effective way to select high redshift sources, but the starting point was the $z > 2-3$ Universe. This technique, together with the *Hubble Space Telescope* (*HST*), allowed the selection of $z \sim 4$ galaxies still during the 90’s (Madau et al., 1996; Steidel et al., 1999), and, more recently, of $z \sim 6 - 8$ galaxy candidates with the incorporation of the Wide Field Camera 3 (WFC3) on board *HST*⁶ (Oesch et al., 2010; Bouwens et al., 2010; McLure et al., 2010). However, these rest-frame ultra-violet/optical selected galaxies

⁵The ERO nomenclature (instead of extremely red galaxies, Hu & Ridgway, 1994) owes its origin to the difficulty in disentangling red galaxies from cool galactic stars while using the $R - K$ colour alone. Current multi-wavelength surveys allow for a better, yet never perfect, separation.

⁶The reason why we had to wait for WFC3 is due to the high thermal atmospheric IR background affecting ground-based telescopes (Mountain et al., 2009), preventing even the 8–10 m class telescopes, which have the increasing disadvantage of their strong telescope warm emission, to detect these faint high-redshift galaxies.

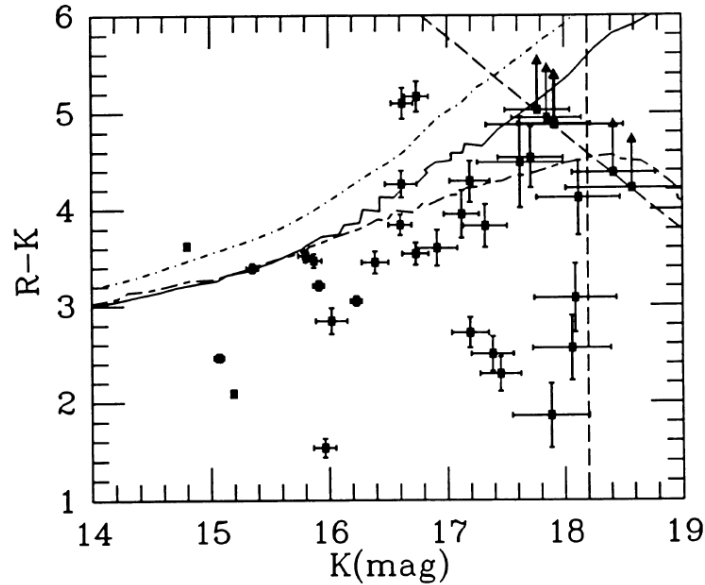


Figure 1.3: The colour-magnitude diagram used to identify two high redshift candidates showing $K \sim 16.7$ and $R - K \sim 5$ above the model track for a central cluster elliptical (dotted-dashed line). Note the six optically undetected objects (with upward pointing arrows on the dashed line marking the R -band limit). The brighter source is at $z \sim 0.3$ (L. L. Cowie & S. J. Lilly 1988, private communication) and still shows a reasonable $R - K \sim 3.6$ red colour. Credit: Elston et al. (1988)

show a rather dust-free biased view of the Universe, and in that sense the work of Elston and others addressing optically faint galaxies (e.g., radio galaxies, see references above, and the luminous IR galaxies, Sanders & Mirabel 1996) was truly pioneering. Since then, the IR (1–1000 μm) spectral regime was acknowledged as one of the most relevant for the study of galaxy evolution, unveiling a significant population of both massive evolved systems, comprising the bulk of the stellar mass at such high redshifts (Fontana et al., 2004; Georgakakis et al., 2006; van Dokkum et al., 2006; Marchesini et al., 2007), and dusty starbursts, largely contributing to the star formation history of the Universe (a contribution frequently larger than that from ultra-violet/optical selected galaxies, Blain et al., 1999; Chary & Elbaz, 2001; Smail et al., 2002; Chapman et al., 2003).

Understanding and modelling the IR Universe, however, has been everything but an

easy task, and there are still missing pieces to the puzzle. This difficulty to understand what we actually observe originates in the original concept of hierarchical models: smaller systems merge together to form larger ones. This implies that the last galaxies to form are the most massive ones and these are hence younger. However, this couldn't be farther from reality. In recent years, it has been shown that not only massive galaxies ($10^{10-11} M_{\odot}$) are already present at $z > 2$ (e.g., Mobasher et al., 2005; Papovich et al., 2006; van Dokkum et al., 2006; Wiklind et al., 2008; Wuyts et al., 2009a; Marchesini et al., 2009), but the most massive ones ($> 10^{11} M_{\odot}$) seem to be (fully) assembled by $z \sim 1$. Furthermore, these apparently show (practically) no mass build-up activity since that epoch (either by in-situ star-formation or even merger assembly, e.g., Cimatti et al., 2006; Conselice et al., 2008). Smaller systems, on the contrary, continue to show significant specific star-formation (the star-formation per unit mass, Gavazzi & Scodreggio, 1996; Guzman et al., 1997; Brinchmann & Ellis, 2000; Juneau et al., 2005; Bauer et al., 2005; Bundy et al., 2006). This is now called the “downsizing” scenario (Cowie et al., 1996). However, there is still a lack of agreement in defining and characterizing downsizing. The actual evolution of massive galaxies since $z \sim 1 - 2$ is unsettled. Some do defend there is no significant evolution for the most massive galaxies, implying a characteristic luminosity/mass above which the systems are fully assembled (McCarthy, 2004; Drory et al., 2005; Damen et al., 2009). Others estimate a slight evolution resulting from reminiscent star-formation⁷ (e.g., Lilly & Longair, 1984; Schweizer & Seitzer, 1992; Barger et al., 1996; Hopkins et al., 2009b) and minor-merger activity (Naab et al., 2007, 2009; Bezanson et al., 2009; van Dokkum et al., 2010). Others even support the “dry” merger scenario, where two equally massive galaxies, already deprived from gas supply, merge to form a larger system with no enhanced star formation (Bell et al., 2004; van Dokkum, 2005; Bell et al., 2006; De Lucia & Blaizot,

⁷This was observed in the 80's in radio galaxies whose IR colours revealed no evolution up to $z \sim 1$, as opposed to their optical-IR colours showing a significant evolution indicative of a reminiscent younger stellar population (Lilly & Longair, 1984).

2007; Faber et al., 2007). To increase the clutter even more, many groups oppose to the downsizing concept. They find that, in reality, all galaxies present an equal decrement on star-formation rate (SFR) from high redshifts to the local Universe (e.g., Zheng et al., 2007; Damen et al., 2009; Dunne et al., 2009; Fontanot et al., 2009; Karim et al., 2011). What they support is the scenario where the most massive systems (likely in the most massive dark matter halos) start their star-formation (and hence assembly) earlier than less massive ones (Baugh et al., 1999; Tanaka et al., 2005; De Lucia et al., 2006; Neistein et al., 2006), explaining why, at each epoch, more massive galaxies present smaller specific SFRs than less massive galaxies. Still, both populations will present an equal decay of star-formation activity.

The wide variety of results and opinions may be related to a plethora of reasons, either technical or related to selection effects (Conselice, 2008; van der Wel et al., 2009; Hopkins et al., 2010). Large uncertainties inherent to mass estimates (highly dependent on template library, e.g., Marchesini et al., 2009) may induce large — and systematic — variations in each data set. Selection of massive passively evolved galaxies is not homogeneous in the literature. Some groups use morphology to select spheroids (missing those with a recent merger history), others use rest-frame colours or even a spectral energy distribution (SED) fitting procedure (missing those galaxies with reminiscent star-formation, which induces an UV excess, see discussion in Conselice, 2008). It should be stressed, however, that all agree on the existence of (extremely) massive (relatively old) galaxies at high redshifts, even at $z > 3$ (e.g., Marchesini et al., 2009, and references therein, but see Lilly 1988 for one of the first examples at such high redshifts).

Modelists, on the other hand, have to face a bigger problem: create a model able to match observations in the full observed redshift range, explaining along the process the disparity between models and observations and, if possible, that between conflicting observational results. Interpreting observations implies a proper prediction, for instance, of

redshift and colour distributions, number densities, luminosity and mass functions (Section 1.3), for both massive and normal galaxies, both cluster and field samples. When considering EROs for the first time, hierarchical models did fail largely to predict number densities, redshift distributions, and morphologies of EROs (Firth et al., 2002; Roche et al., 2002; Smith et al., 2002). This led people to re-evoke monolithic collapse (Eggen et al., 1962; Tinsley, 1972; Larson, 1975; van Albada, 1982) as the mechanism necessary to produce the properties of such massive galaxies at high- z (e.g., see the work by the K20 team, Cimatti et al., 2002b; Pozzetti et al., 2003, and companion papers). Pure luminosity evolution (PLE) models (as in ‘monolithic models’) did follow the basic requirements to form such exotic population (number densities and redshift distributions). However, PLE models fail to match the general picture of galaxy evolution (Benson, 2010, for a review on galaxy formation theory). More recently, with the improvement of hierarchical models and the implied prescriptions (e.g., accounting for feedback processes and environment, Section 1.3), many authors have claimed success predicting red galaxy properties without the need of PLE. However, most results are either valid under limited conditions (either at specific magnitude limits or considering only a sub-set of galaxy type) or succeed only to predict specific properties (number densities or redshift distribution; e.g., see Gonzalez-Perez et al. 2009 on Nagamine et al., 2005; Kong et al., 2006; Kitzbichler & White, 2007, see also Gabor et al. 2010).

Overall, the difficulty in explaining the red galaxy population, among other reasons, points to the need of understanding the IR as one of the best means to constrain any state-of-the-art model of galaxy evolution.

1.3 The power of luminosity and mass functions

One of the longstanding problems is, without any doubt, the ability to predict the galaxy luminosity function (and ultimately the mass function) from the highest redshift to the local Universe. Luminosity and mass functions are among the best tools for the study of galaxy evolution. They show how galaxies are distributed (or organised) in luminosity and mass. By providing the relative numbers between bright and faint or massive and light galaxies, they enable the determination of the evolution mechanism of galaxies. Sometimes, they may even allow an attempt to establish initial conditions of formation (Binggeli et al., 1988; Benson et al., 2003), and draw implications to the initial baryonic power spectrum (e.g., Benson et al., 2003), which is directly correlated with the dark matter power spectrum (see the discussion, for instance, by Drory et al., 2009, on the correlation between halo and galaxy mass). In the 70's, Schechter (1976) proposed an analytical equation to describe the general shape of a LF:

$$\Phi(L) = 0.4 \ln(10) \Phi^* \times 10^{(L-L^*)(1+\alpha)} \times \exp(-10^{(L-L^*)})$$

where L is the luminosity (in logarithmic units) at which one wishes to estimate the galaxy number density Φ , α is the slope of the faint-end of the LF, L^* denotes the characteristic luminosity at which the LF exhibits a rapid change in the slope, and Φ^* is the normalization (Figure 1.4). Although in specific occasions, multiple Schechter functions are necessary to fit the observations (induced by the dependency on galaxy nature, e.g., Drory et al., 2009), one is generally enough, and is quite useful for further comparison between results of different research teams.

One of the first examples of the LF usefulness was its application to the Coma cluster, already since the beginning of the mid-XX century (Hubble & Humason, 1931; Zwicky, 1951; Abell, 1959). The shape of Coma's LF faint-end slope has "changed" over the years

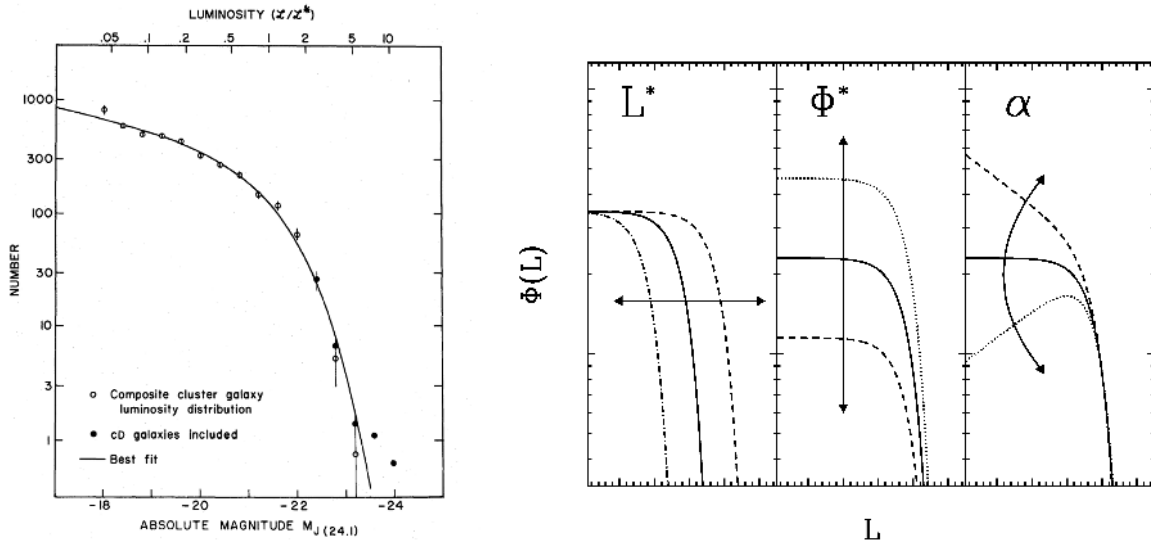


Figure 1.4: On the left hand side, Figure 2 from Schechter (1976) is shown as an example for a LF (in this case, at 5000 \AA with observations with J(24.1) filter, Oemler, 1974). On the right hand side, a simple sketch showing how changing the Schechter function parameters affects the shape of the LF: L^* fixes the horizontal shift (left panel), Φ^* fixes the vertical shift (middle panel), while α determines the LF faint-end slope.

as instrumentation improved and enabled the detection of fainter dwarfs (e.g., Mobasher & Trentham, 1998), forcing the theory to follow each new finding and peculiarity of Coma cluster (see the review by Biviano, 1998, and references therein).

Current observational facilities have now reached incredible depth levels, providing estimates of the galaxy LF (and MF) as far back as the first Gyr of universe time (e.g., Bouwens et al., 2007; Ouchi et al., 2009; Oesch et al., 2010). Current large deep fields allow for a proper statistical study on the evolution of the galaxy population, enabling the community to probe well into the first half of Universe life (e.g., Steidel et al., 1999; Marchesini et al., 2009; Cirasuolo et al., 2010; Ilbert et al., 2010), and to assess evolution dependencies on environment, galaxy nature and stellar mass (e.g., Zucca et al., 2009; Bolzonella et al., 2010; Peng et al., 2010; Fu et al., 2010; Strazzullo et al., 2010; Ikeda et al., 2011). The reader can now realise the rather complex recipe needed to establish a

good match between modelling and observations. Any state-of-the-art model today has to take into account the many physical mechanisms (e.g., Kay et al., 2002) and scenarios (e.g., Henriques et al., 2008, on dwarf galaxy disruption), each accounting for a specific feature of a given galaxy LF.

The two luminosity ends of the LF have always been (and still are) hard to predict by even the most elaborated models. Since the beginning of modelling era, the faint-end slope has frequently been overestimated (predicted slopes are too steep, small α). Regarding the bright-end, we have set the scene already, a pure hierarchical model under-predicts luminous galaxies at high redshifts, while over-predicting them in the local Universe. In order to explain both extremes, alternative routes were taken, which led to the apparently crucial *feedback* effects (Kay et al., 2002; Benson et al., 2003, and references therein). These are physically motivated and evidences for their existence have been observed. On the one hand, the over-predicted faint-end can be explained if a star-forming bursting dwarf had its gas-supply ejected from its gravitational potential through super-nova winds blowing the gas to the outer regions of the halo (Kay et al., 2002, and references therein). Two modes can then be identified, one of them (weaker) allowing the recapture of the ejected gas in a later stage of evolution (Figure 1.5) or during a merger, while the other completely expels the gas out of the gravitational potential. Both are used to efficiently explain different properties of the galaxy population. Dwarf galaxy disruption can also account for a flatter faint-end slope. In case dwarf galaxies happen to be falling into the core of a cluster, tidal interactions or ram pressure gas-stripping may occur, preventing more stars to be formed (e.g., Boselli et al., 2008; Henriques et al., 2008).

On the other hand, the quenching of star-formation in the most luminous and massive galaxies can not be explained based on stellar winds feedback. It is just too weak to expel the gas out of the deepest gravitational potentials. One mechanism is gas *conduction* (e.g., Benson et al., 2003). This may cause an increase in the gas cooling time, as energy can

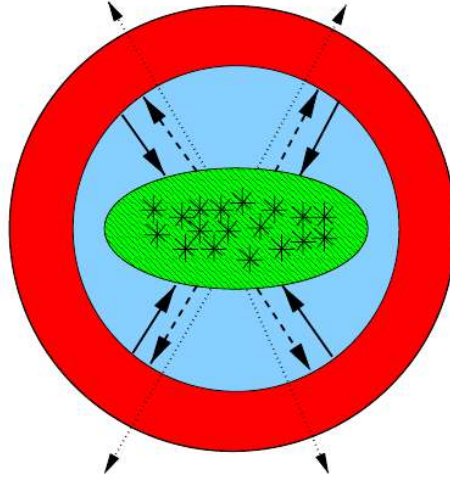


Figure 1.5: A sketch from Baugh (2006), showing the cooling of gas from the outer hot halo (solid arrows). As the gas cools and settles into a disc (green region) to form stars, the hottest ones soon explode as super-novæ, reheating part of the cooled gas which then returns to the hot halo (dashed arrows) or is even completely expelled (dotted arrows). The blue region refers to the dark matter halo.

be transported into the inner regions of the halo induced by conduction in the ionized gas. Depending on the halo temperature, conduction may become relevant. In massive hot halos, likely hosting a more significant baryonic mass, massive galaxies assemble through mergers. In fact, Benson et al. (2003) reach a better matching to the observed LF (in both luminosity ends) when comparing with other kinds of feedback, with the caveat that it seems to require extremely high conductivity values. As an alternative, a *super-wind* may be evoked (see the seminal modelling work by Granato et al., 2001, 2004). The source of such magnitude is now believe to reside at the centre of each galaxy, in the form of a super massive black hole (SMBH). These are strong enough to deplete a galaxy halo of gas-supply (without recapture), quenching the star-formation activity, preventing a galaxy to grow larger, and hence producing the sharp edge of the LF bright-end. However, there is growing evidence for multiple active galactic nucleus (AGN) accretion modes, and each is applied differently depending on galaxy nature and cosmic time. For instance, the

“radio mode” (the low accretion rate version) is usually preferred at lower redshifts, while a merger induced short blast-wave-like AGN feedback (the “quasar mode”) is considered for the high redshift regime (Croton et al., 2006b,a; Fontanot et al., 2011). The improvement is notable (see Bower et al., 2006, for probably the best matching result achieved by a model accounting for AGN feedback), yet still not perfect at the LF faint-end (Cirasuolo et al., 2010), thus still needing some fine-tuning. Hence, observations are fundamental to constrain the models. It is of the utmost importance to quantify and characterise the AGN population throughout Universe time, to pinpoint critical stages of evolution and to study how the interplay between host and AGN determines the evolution of both. As we shall see in the following section, and Nature would not do it in any other way, this is anything but straightforward.

1.4 Finding AGN

AGN are an intriguing force of Nature. It is widely believed that accretion onto a nuclear SMBH is the key for AGN activity (Rees, 1984). The study of AGN populations started back in the 60’s with the identification of the first quasi stellar object (the radio 3C-48, Greenstein & Matthews, 1963; Matthews & Sandage, 1963), or more accurately with Carl Seyfert 20 years earlier (Seyfert, 1943, although the AGN nature was only acknowledged in the mid-70’s). Now known as Seyfert galaxies, these systems were classified depending on the properties of their spectra: Seyfert 1’s (showing broad and narrow emission lines) and Seyfert 2’s (showing only narrow emission lines). Intermediate classifications were than needed owing to an apparent continuum of properties between these two classes (e.g., Osterbrock & Koski, 1976). A new paradigm was about to come to light after the study of optical spectra of polarized light from Seyfert 2 galaxies (Miller & Antonucci, 1983; Antonucci & Miller, 1985). Antonucci (1993) described it as the unified AGN model (see

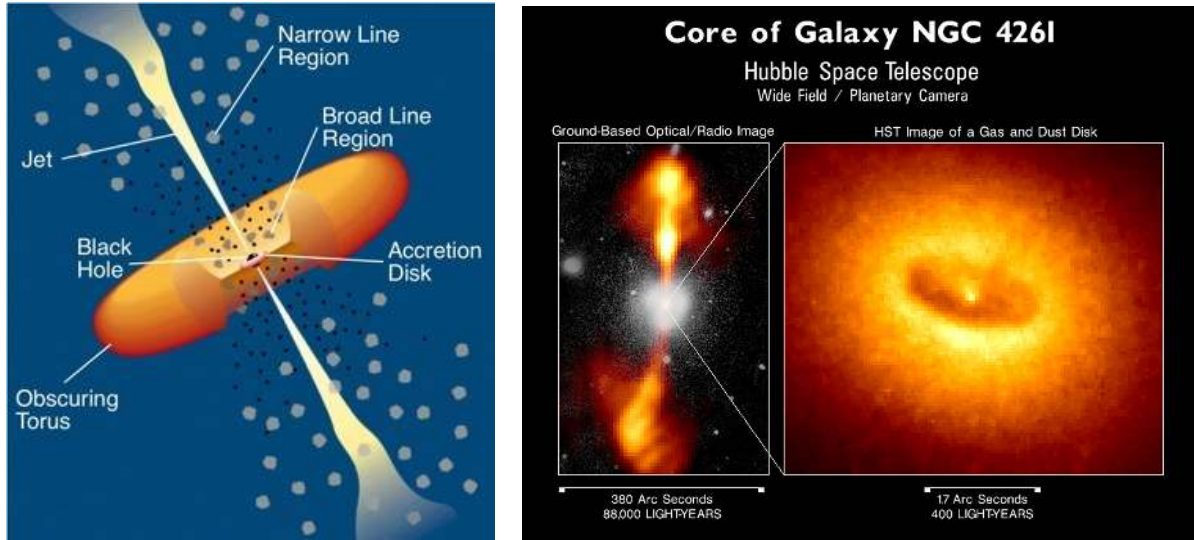


Figure 1.6: A representation (not to scale) of the unified AGN model (left hand side). The black hole and the accretion disc are indicated at the centre. Broad line features originate from clouds close to the nucleus (~ 100 light-days) or from the accretion disc itself, but may be obscured by the dust torus (~ 100 light-years in diameter) depending on the viewing angle. Narrow line regions are farther (~ 1000 light-years) from the nuclear source. Also shown is a radio jet coming from the central engine. On the right hand side, the detection with *HST* of a dusty thin disc surrounding the nuclear source of NGC 4261. Credit: Urry & Padovani (1995, left hand side), and Jaffe et al. (1996) and Ferrarese et al. (1996, right hand side).

also Urry & Padovani, 1995). In this scenario, the central engine, a SMBH, is common to all AGN, and the observed differences are assigned to different viewing angles of the central SMBH (Figure 1.6). Nowadays, other AGN types (e.g., radio AGN and Blazars, X-ray type-1 and type-2 AGN) have also been linked to the unification model.

Most of the work done until the 90's was based in ultra-violet (UV) or optical, while radio would only provide rare extreme objects. Today we know that light originated in such type of activity is seen throughout the complete electromagnetic spectrum and detectable up to the highest known redshifts (e.g., Jiang et al., 2006; Seymour et al., 2007; Nenkova et al., 2008; Schneider et al., 2010; Ricci et al., 2011, and references therein).

The X-rays regime is currently the most preferred one to study AGN evolution. This

relates to the fact that, at such high spectral energies, obscuration will affect less the X-rays emission as opposed to UV and optical. This even improves with increasing redshifts as more energetic rest-frame energies (hence less affected by dust) will be observed. Adding to that, such high energies can only hold for powerful mechanisms, which normal stellar populations are unable to achieve. Hence there is a stronger dominance in the X-rays from AGN emission over that of host galaxy, when compared to what happens at UV/optical wavelengths. Nonetheless, X-rays still suffer significant obscuration. One of the biggest evidence is the observed cosmic X-ray background (CXB), which has been resolved approximately 10 years ago at a 70–90% level by *Chandra* and XMM space telescopes. However, it was soon found out a decrease of that fraction with increasing spectral energies (down to 50% at > 8 keV, Worsley et al., 2004, 2005, and references therein). This is due to a high fraction of unobscured sources easily detected at softer energies, and high intrinsic obscuration column densities (N_{H}) in the sources comprising the hard CXB. Seyfert 2s are four times more numerous than Seyfert 1s in the local Universe (Maiolino & Rieke, 1995), being half of the Seyfert 2s compton thick ($\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 24$ Maiolino et al., 1998; Risaliti et al., 1999). At higher redshifts, obscured:unobscured source ratios of 3:1 to 4:1 are predicted based on the CXB and synthesis models (Comastri et al., 2001; Ueda et al., 2003; Gilli, 2004; Treister et al., 2005; Tozzi et al., 2006). In deep fields, however, the ratio seems be smaller (2:1, due to incompleteness toward obscured objects), but can get as high as 6:1 when considering specific galaxy populations (SCUBA galaxies, Alexander et al., 2005, and this work, Chapter 2). Hence, although reliable, X-rays AGN studies may be significantly affected by enhanced obscuration, specially at high redshifts.

Long known since the 70's (with ground-based telescopes, Kleinmann & Low, 1970; Rieke, 1978, and references therein) and 80's (with the start of IR space-based observations, de Grijp et al., 1985; Miley et al., 1985; Neugebauer et al., 1986; Sanders et al., 1989), active galaxies are prone to show intense emission at IR wavelengths. This is a powerful tool as

it allows the selection of AGN sources not revealed at other wavelengths. This is mostly due to the already referred dust obscuration hiding AGN signatures at optical and even X-ray wavelengths. The absorbed energy is subsequently reprocessed by the enshrouding dust and emitted at IR wavelengths, producing an IR emission excess beyond $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ ⁸. A major accomplishment in recent years has been the development of purely photometric techniques, in the 3–8 μm range, for the efficient selection of sources with enhanced IR emission redward of the $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ stellar peak, characteristic of an active galactic nucleus (AGN) (e.g., Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005; Polletta et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2007; Fiore et al., 2008, ; this work). These techniques effectively allow for the detection of a significant fraction of AGN sources missed even by the deepest X-ray-to-optical surveys.

It should be mentioned that none of the spectral regimes should be discarded in detriment to any of the remainder for the purpose of AGN selection (unless the science case implies such assumption). Each one of them is sensitive to specific (and sometimes distinct) AGN populations and/or phases and/or regions of emission (Figure 1.6). Although some overlap between these AGN populations is expected, they should all be considered in ensemble (radio included), if the ultimate goal is the complete selection of AGN host galaxies. Geared with such tools and with the recent development of clumpy dust torus models (e.g., Nenkova et al., 2008; Hönig & Kishimoto, 2010), it is now possible to address with unprecedented detail the evolution of AGN host galaxies up to high redshifts.

1.5 Dust everywhere

As it was frequently highlighted in the previous sections, dust exists and its effects cannot be underestimated. There are clear evidences that dust is common in the Universe (Chary

⁸Blueward of this wavelength, the contribution of AGN emission through this reprocessed light mechanism diminishes significantly due to dust sublimation. Only scattered light and the tail of the Wien's thermal emission from the hottest dust grains are expected.

& Elbaz, 2001; Hauser & Dwek, 2001; Le Floc'h et al., 2005; Dole et al., 2006; Franceschini et al., 2008) and is observed even at high redshift (e.g., in the radio-quiet QSO at $z = 4.69$ announced by Omont et al., 1996). Hence, not only a significant number of galaxies is missed even in the deepest surveys due to extreme dust obscuration, but corrections have also to be applied to the light reaching us from the remainder galaxy population, bringing an undesired model-dependency to the process (e.g., Buat et al., 2005; Bouwens et al., 2009). This forced the community to turn its efforts to other wavelength regimes. Although optical telescopes have been those to provide the deepest and sharpest views of the sky, facilities other wavelengths will soon catch up, such as IR (with *James Webb Space Telescope* launch in 2014), millimetre (ALMA currently coming online), and radio observatories (the very large baseline arrays and coming facilities such as ASKAP, MeerKAT, and MWA as precursors of the long-awaited SKA).

Hence, it is of great importance to determine, for example, how much dust is present in galaxies, how much does dust affect the light reaching us, and how it has evolved through cosmic time (Dunne et al., 2010). For this purpose, the IR and millimetre (mm) spectral regimes have been the best unveiling the properties of dust in galaxies (for a review, see Hunt, 2010), as it mostly emits at these wavelengths. The X-ray-to-optical light absorbed by dust, is reprocessed and re-emitted at IR wavelengths. Hence, the IR is a viable tool to evaluate the dust content in galaxies. And in its turn, dust is believed to be produced either by supernovæ (Rho et al., 2008; Barlow et al., 2010) and/or low/intermediate mass asymptotic giant branch stars (Gehrz, 1989; Ferrarotti & Gail, 2006; Sargent et al., 2010). Dust itself may then be an indicator of the current and past star-formation history of a galaxy. However, much of the work done to this regard at IR and mm wavelengths (e.g., Saunders, 1990; Saunders et al., 1990; Blain et al., 1999; Le Floc'h et al., 2005; Jacobs et al., 2011), has relied on shallow data or in small number statistics when compared to optical-based studies. This is related to the yet unsolved lack of multi-plexing spectral

power and/or sensitivity of mid-IR ($> 8 \mu\text{m}$) facilities (space- and ground-based⁹), and the sensitivity of mm facilities. This implies that all but the brightest sources in the sky will be possible to study. Consequently, the conclusions arising from those studies can not be, by any means, generalised to the overall galaxy population. One way to solve the problem is through the application of stacking techniques (e.g., Zheng et al., 2006; Martin et al., 2007; Martínez-Sansigre et al., 2009; Lee et al., 2010; Rodighiero et al., 2010; Greve et al., 2010; Bourne et al., 2011), allowing the estimate of the general properties of a given population, yet limiting any study relying on luminosity functions.

1.6 Thesis outline

This thesis is mostly focused on galaxy populations selected at IR wavelengths. As described above, recent years have assigned them a crucial roll on unveiling the mysteries of galaxy evolution from the early Universe to what we see locally.

1.6.1 Extremely red galaxies

Chapter 2 presents a multi-wavelength analysis of the properties of Extremely Red Galaxy (ERG) populations, selected in the GOODS-South/Chandra Deep Field South field. A different statistical analysis from the one in Messias et al. (2010) is adopted, where uncertainties related to low low S/N photometry and limitations in modelling SEDs are accounted for. By using all the photometric and spectroscopic information available on large deep samples of Extremely Red Objects (EROs, 553 sources), IRAC Extremely Red Objects (IEROs, 259 sources), and Distant Red Galaxies (DRGs, 289 sources), we derive redshift distributions, identify AGN powered and star-formation powered galaxies, and, using the radio observations of this field, estimate robust dust-unbiased star formation rate densities

⁹Ground-based facilities have in addition to account for the strong atmospheric thermal background, preventing a proper study of the faintest galaxies.

($\dot{\rho}_*$) for these populations. We also investigate the properties of “pure” (galaxies that conform exclusively to only one of the three ERG criteria considered) and “combined” (galaxies that verify simultaneously all three criteria) sub-populations. Overall, a large number of AGN are identified (up to $\sim 25\%$, based on X-ray and mid-IR criteria), the majority of which are type-2 (obscured) objects. Among ERGs with no evidence for AGN activity, we identify sub-populations covering a wide range of average star-formation rates, from below $10 M_\odot \text{ yr}^{-1}$ to as high as $140 M_\odot \text{ yr}^{-1}$. Applying a redshift separation ($1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$) we find significant evolution in $\dot{\rho}_*$. While EROs and DRGs follow the general evolutionary trend of the galaxy population, no evolution is observed for IEROs. However, IEROs are the largest contributors (up to a 25% level) to the global $\dot{\rho}_*$ at $1 \leq z < 2$, while EROs may contribute up to 40% at $2 \leq z \leq 3$. The radio emission from AGN activity is typically not strong in the ERG population, with AGN increasing the average/median radio luminosity of ERG sub-populations by, nominally, between ~ 10 and 25%. However, AGN are common, and, if no discrimination is attempted, this could significantly increase the ERG $\dot{\rho}_*$ estimate (by 200% in some cases). This can be understood in two ways: either the AGN host population is indeed actively forming stars or AGN emission can strongly bias such studies. Hence, although the contribution to the radio luminosity of star-forming processes in AGN host galaxies remains uncertain, one can still estimate lower and upper limits of $\dot{\rho}_*$ in ERG populations from the radio alone. A comparison between the radio estimates and the ultra-violet spectral regime confirms the dusty nature of the combined populations.

ERGs are known to be massive systems at high redshift, and, in this work, mass functions are produced and stellar mass densities estimated, showing that at $1 \leq z \leq 3$, 60% of the mass of the universe resides in ERGs. A morphology study is pursued for a better characterization of this ERG sample, revealing an interesting population of DRGs, which show a mixture of young and old stellar populations together with obscured AGN

activity. These results all together may point to the fact that EROs, IEROs, and DRGs are all the same population, yet seen in different phases of evolution. Finally, a study currently under way on high redshift passive evolved discs is presented as one of the future science fields of great relevance in the time of the full Atacama Large Millimetre Array (ALMA).

1.6.2 The IR selection of AGN

Chapter 3 is focused on the AGN selection at IR wavelengths. It is widely accepted that the mid-IR (MIR) enables the selection of galaxies with nuclear activity, which may not be revealed even in the deepest X-ray surveys. Many MIR criteria have been explored to accomplish this goal and tested thoroughly in the literature. The main conclusion is that at high redshifts ($z \gtrsim 2.5$) the contamination of these AGN selection criteria by non-active galaxies is abundant. This is not at all appropriate for the study of the early Universe, the main goal of many of the current and future deep surveys. Using state-of-the-art galaxy templates covering a variety of galaxy properties, we develop improved near- to mid-IR criteria for the selection of active galactic nuclei (AGN) out to very high redshifts. With a particular emphasis on the *James Webb Space Telescope (JWST)* wavelength range (1–25 μm), we develop an improved IR criterion (using K and IRAC bands, KI) as an alternative to existing MIR AGN criteria for the $z \lesssim 2.5$ regime. We also develop a new MIR criterion which reliably selects AGN hosts from local distances to as far as the end of re-ionization ($0 < z < 7$, using K , IRAC, and MIPS-24 μm bands, KIM). Both KI and KIM are based in existing filters and are suitable for immediate use with current galaxy observations. Control samples with deep multi-wavelength coverage (ranging from the X-rays to radio frequencies) are also utilized in order to assess the quality of the new criteria compared to existing ones. We conclude that the considered galaxy templates and control samples indicate a significant improvement for KI over previous IRAC-based AGN diagnostics, and that KIM is reliable even beyond $z \sim 2.5$.

1.6.3 The contribution of dust to the IR

Chapter 4 explores the extension of the current FIR/mm studies, on the cold ($T \lesssim 100\text{ K}$) dust re-emission dominating at those wavelengths, to the hot ($T \gtrsim 1000\text{ K}$) extremes of dust re-emission ($< 8\ \mu\text{m}$) using observations on the Cosmic Evolution Survey (COSMOS, Scoville et al., 2007). The study is mostly based on data from the IR array camera (IRAC) on board the *Spitzer Space Telescope (SST)*, facility which, in less than a decade, has contributed so much to the field of galaxy evolution (for a review, see Soifer et al., 2008). The goal is to estimate the dust contribution to the SED of the galaxy population at shorter IR wavelengths, regime which has never been explored for such purpose. The sample is divided into redshift ranges where specific polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons (PAHs) features (3.3 , 6.2 , and $7.7\ \mu\text{m}$) are expected to be observed by *SST*-IRAC filters, and to which hot dust is known to contribute significantly. Although PAHs are not actual dust particles, they comprise a significant fraction of the Carbon existing in the universe, they are believed to be closely related to star-formation activity, and to reprocess a substantial fraction of UV-light into the IR wave-bands, hence being a major source of obscuration (Tielens, 2011). The IR continuum comes from dust heated by energetic radiation fields. Vigorous obscured star-formation can account for such emission as well as AGN activity. However, the overall stellar population also emits at these wavelengths, even frequently dominating at $< 3\ \mu\text{m}$ and peaking at $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$, due to the H^- opacity minimum in stellar atmospheres. In this chapter, we describe how this is taken into account to derive the final dust luminosity density functions. Dependencies on both redshift and galaxy nature are estimated. We report a concerning AGN-induced source of significant bias to any mass estimate procedure relying on IR luminosities, specially at high redshifts. Valid counter arguments to other possible mechanisms giving origin to such effect are also discussed. Finally, evidences for the connection of the AGN population to the known bimodality of the IR LF (Drory et al., 2009, and references therein) are presented at both bright and

faint ends.

1.6.4 Future work

A thesis work is never complete and there is always room for improvement. The work presented here is no exception.

In Chapter 5 we detail the many galaxy properties left to be explored in the ERG population, the questions still left to be answered on K_s -selected galaxy samples, and we describe the work currently being pursued for the development of a stacking algorithm for the application of stacking analysis on ASKAP data (one of the precursors of SKA).

The IR AGN selection may still require some fine tuning, as, for instance, it has never been tested against the emission from TP-AGB stars. This is crucial to the high-redshift regime where a larger incidence of systems with enhanced TP-AGB stellar emission is known to reside (Maraston, 2005; Henriques et al., 2010). If such effect in the IR regime significantly affects IR AGN selection, than we are forced to use only the most restrictive AGN criteria (like the bright IR excess sources, e.g., Polletta et al., 2006; Dey et al., 2008) or to rely solely on the remainder spectral regimes, which sometimes is not the ideal scenario. On the other hand, if the criterion is confirmed to be efficient even when TP-AGB stellar emission is present, we will be able to track AGN activity from the earliest stages of cosmic time. This will provide AGN host populations with a enough number of sources to constrain any kind of model considering AGN activity, and in a large redshift range $0 < z < 7$. Also, as soon as *JWST* becomes online, the filter set proposed in this work for the IR selection of AGN up to $z < 7$, should be tested.

Taking advantage of the large source numbers we have studied in COSMOS field, we also describe in this chapter how we plan to use stacking analysis to directly compare the hot-dust regime (3–8 μm) with the cold one emitting at FIR/mm wavelengths.

Finally, we describe future prospects as a result from this thesis. Among them, an on

going project on passive disc galaxies at high redshifts ($1 < z < 3$). We propose an IR selection criterion, while providing evidences for its efficiency using the latest data from WFC3 on board *HST*. Possible explanations are given and the implications for such a population to exist at these redshifts are discussed. These galaxies are one of the ultimate goals of ALMA science, thus being one of the most significant outcomes of this thesis.

Throughout this thesis we use the AB magnitude system¹⁰, we consider a Λ CDM cosmology is assumed with $H_0 = 70 \text{ km s}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-1}$, $\Omega_M = 0.3$, $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.7$, and we adopt a Salpeter (Salpeter, 1955) initial mass function (IMF).

¹⁰When necessary the following relations are used:
 (K, H, J, I)_{AB} = (K, H, J, I)_{Vega} + (1.841, 1.373, 0.904, 0.403) from Roche et al. (2003);
 IRAC: ([3.6], [4.5], [5.8], [8.0])_{AB} = ([3.6], [4.5], [5.8], [8.0])_{Vega} + (2.79, 3.26, 3.73, 4.40) from <http://spider.ipac.caltech.edu/staff/gillian/cal.html>

Chapter 2

A multi-wavelength approach to Extremely Red Galaxies

2.1 Introduction

In an attempt to constrain hierarchical models of galaxy formation, the last few years have seen optical-to-infrared or infrared-to-infrared colour-colour diagrams being used to find high-redshift galaxies hosting evolved stellar populations. Extremely Red Objects (EROs, Roche et al., 2003), IRAC-selected Extremely Red Objects (IEROs, also known as IR Extremely Red Objects, Yan et al., 2004) and Distant Red Galaxies (DRGs, Franx et al., 2003) were thought to identify old passively evolving galaxies at increasing redshifts (from $z > 1$ for the EROs/IEROs to $z > 2$ for the DRGs), for which a prominent 4000 Å break would fall between the observed bands. These techniques, however, are also sensitive to active (star-forming, AGN or both) high-redshift dust-obscured galaxies, with intrinsically red spectral energy distributions (Smail et al., 2002; Alexander et al., 2002; Afonso et al., 2003; Papovich et al., 2006). These active members of the *Extremely Red Galaxy population* (ERGs, as we will collectively call EROs, IEROs, and DRGs) are also important targets

for further study given that they constitute a dusty population of galaxies easily missed at optical wavelengths (e.g. Afonso et al., 2003). A challenge in studying the nature of the red galaxy population is the difficulty in disentangling the effects due to redshift, dust-obscuration, and old stellar populations.

Identifying the so-called “Passively Evolving” and “Dusty” ERGs is a fundamental and particularly difficult task, where optical spectroscopic observations are of limited use. The identification and study of Active Galactic Nuclei (AGN) or star-formation (SF) activity in these galaxies, for example, requires multi-wavelength data from X-ray to radio wavelengths. Radio observations are of particular interest here, given the possibility to reveal the activity in these obscured systems and, for star-forming dominated galaxies, allowing for a dust-free estimate of their star-formation rates (SFR).

In this chapter we present a comparative study of the ERG population. Using the broad and deep wavelength coverage in the Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey South (GOODSs) / *Chandra* Deep Field South (CDFs), we select samples of EROs, IEROs, and DRGs and estimate their statistical properties. With the extensive photometric data available we explore the redshift distribution, SFRs, and AGN activity in these galaxies. Using radio stacking we estimate dust-free SFRs and the contribution of red galaxy populations with no detected AGN activity to the global star formation rate density ($\dot{\rho}_*$).

The structure of this chapter is as follows. Sample selection is described in Section 2.2. Section 2.3 addresses the AGN identification technique. In Section 2.4 the ERG sample is characterized, leading to the estimate of the dust-unbiased contribution to $\dot{\rho}_*$, dust content, mass functions (MFs) and mass densities (ρ_M), and morphology parameters. Finally, the conclusions are presented in Section 2.5.

2.2 Sample Selection

The GOODS was designed to assemble deep multi-wavelength data in two widely separated fields: the Hubble Deep Field North (HDFn) and the CDFs. Specifically the southern field includes X-ray observations with *Chandra* X-ray Observatory (*CXO*) and XMM-*Newton*; optical (*BVIz*) high resolution imaging with the ACS on-board the *HST*; NIR and mid-infrared (MIR) coverage with the *Very Large Telescope* (*VLT*) and the *Spitzer Space Telescope* (*SST*), respectively; and radio imaging with the *ATCA*, *VLA*, and *GMRT*. These data are among the deepest ever obtained. Large programs aiming at comprehensive spectroscopic coverage of this field are also being performed. The quality and depth of such data make these fields ideal to perform comprehensive studies of distant galaxies and, in particular, of the ERG population.

2.2.1 Methodology

ERGs are in general faint galaxies. Although we consider a data-set amongst the deepest available, many ERGs will be found at a low signal-to-noise level. This implies larger errors in the photometry (from X-rays to radio frequencies) and any other estimate based on it (such as photometric redshifts). As an example, when a photometric redshift is assigned to a galaxy, in reality, what is implied is a redshift probability distribution (PD) with a characteristic value z_{phot} (the value at which the integration of the PD reaches 0.5, i.e., 50%) and lower/upper limits (set by the values at which the integration from the edges of the PD reaches, for example, 0.317/2, i.e., $\sim 16\%$, equivalent to 1σ confidence limits Wuyts et al., 2008). As one can expect, a photometric redshift estimate is less precise than a spectroscopic one. This is evident from Figure 2.1. There, two light cones are presented, where the one seen at the bottom considers spectroscopic data from Galaxy and Mass Assembly (GAMA, Driver et al., 2009), while the light-cone at the top shows

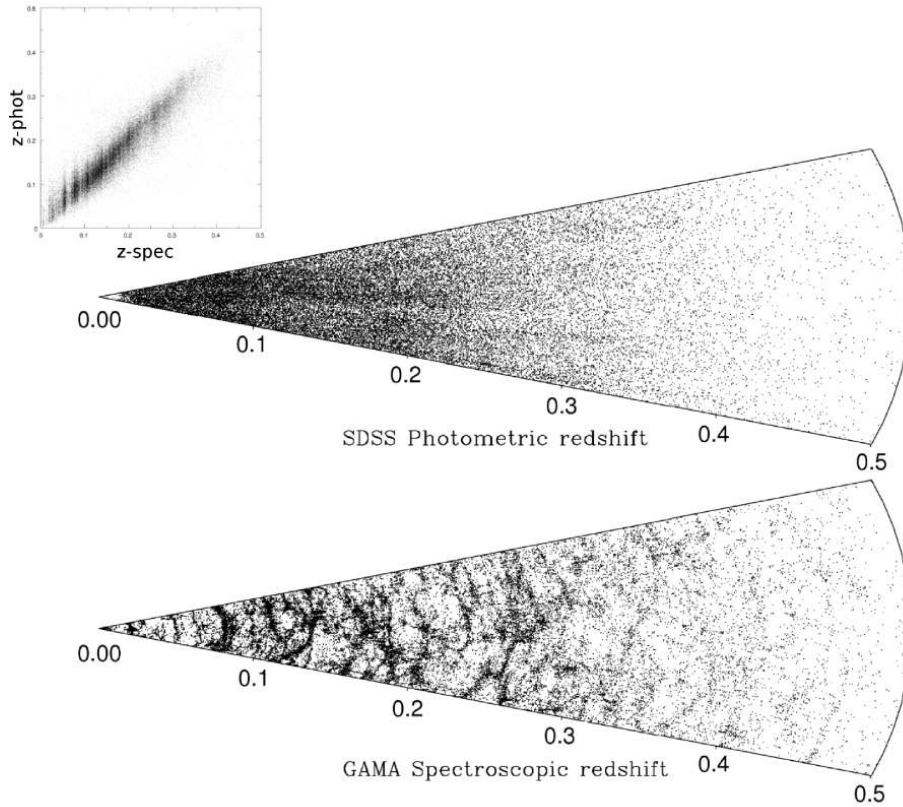


Figure 2.1: Two light cones show how spectroscopic redshift estimates recover well the large scale structure of the Universe, while photometric ones do not, even when achieving acceptable results (small inset on the top left showing a close to one-to-one relation). The spectroscopic redshifts come from the GAMA survey, while the photometric redshifts estimated for the same sources were computed by Hannah Parkinson using ANNz. Credit: Simon Driver and the GAMA team.

the estimated z_{phot} (computed by Hannah Parkinson using ANNz, Firth et al., 2003, and calibrated with the corresponding GAMA z_{spec}) for the same Sloan Digital Sky Survey (SDSS, York et al., 2000) sources. Although ANNz algorithm produces an acceptable redshift match (small inset on the top left in the figure), the photometric procedure does not recover the large scale structure clearly evident in the spectroscopic light-cone.

The precision of the redshift estimates is important for the study of galaxy evolution with redshift, specially for samples mostly relying on photometric redshifts. For instance,

if one wants to know how many galaxies there are at $2 < z < 3$ in a sample of three galaxies with $z_{phot} = 1.9, 2.5, 3.2$, normally, the answer would be one galaxy. However, if we would estimate the probabilities (\mathcal{P}) of each one of these galaxies to be at $2 < z < 3$ and get $\mathcal{P} = 45\%, 100\%, 45\%$, the answer would have to be (approximately) two effective galaxies. Not only that, but if in a subsequent step one wishes to estimate average properties of the sample (luminosities, masses, etc...), the final value would not be based in just one object, yet in three measurements weighted by their probability, implying a much more reliable statistical value.

In this work we adopt the following methodology: whenever applying constraints to the sample (those being magnitude or colour cuts, redshift ranges, etc...), we assign to each source its probability to fulfil the imposed constraints. From that moment on, whenever a given source is taken into account while estimating general properties of a sample (effective source counts, redshift distributions, luminosities, masses, etc...), its contribution is weighted by the probability to fulfil such constraints.

Obviously, every source will have a non-zero probability to conform any considered constraint in this work. Hence, we adopt a limit below which a source is not considered. A source is only taken into account if its probability to fulfil a given sample constraint is $\mathcal{P} > 0.317/2$ ($\sim 16\%$), meaning that every considered source in this work is at most 1σ away from the established constraint.

Henceforth, every number presented in this chapter refers, unless the nominal value is stated, to the effective (or expected) number — approximated to unit — estimated after considering all the weights of the sources in a sample.

2.2.2 The FIREWORKS catalogue

We use the FIREWORKS K_s -band selected catalogue from GOODSs (Wuyts et al., 2008). This provides reliable photometry from ultra-violet (UV) to IR wavelengths (0.2-24 μ m) for

each source detected in the K_s ISAAC/*VLT* maps (ISAAC GOODS/ADP v1.5 Release, Vandame, 2002), thus covering an area broadly overlapping the *HST* ACS observations. The widely different resolutions between optical and IR bands are properly handled to allow consistent colour measurements. This is performed by adjusting the optical *HST* and NIR *VLT* images to a common resolution, and performing photometry on optical, IRAC, and MIPS images, using the prior knowledge about position and extent of sources from the K_s -band images (for a detailed description of the procedure, see Wuyts et al., 2007, 2008).

Redshift estimates are also provided in the FIREWORKS catalogue. Recently, the VIMOS team (Popesso et al., 2009; Balestra et al., 2010) has also released a set of spectroscopy data which is also considered in this work, as well as those referred by Silverman et al. (2010) on *CXO* and VLA detected sources. Spectroscopic observations are used essentially for redshift information with which to derive the intrinsic luminosities of ERGs. Only good spectroscopic redshift determinations¹ were considered, comprising 22% of the ERGs (Table 2.1). For the remaining sources, photometric redshift estimates from the FIREWORKS catalogue and from Luo et al. (2010) were considered. The redshift distributions will be discussed in Section 2.4.1.

The FIREWORKS catalogue contains (nominally) 6308 K_s -selected sources. To allow for robust selection of our ERG populations the following requirements are considered: (i) a magnitude completeness limit of $K_{s,TOT} = 23.8$ AB, (ii) a flux error less than a third of the flux, (iii) no strong neighbouring sources affecting the flux estimates, and, (iv) following the prescription for robust photometric samples from Wuyts et al. (2008), adopt a pixel weight limit of $K_{s,w} > 0.3$, which takes into account local *rms* and relative integration time per pixel and allows the rejection for bad/hot pixels and pixels with other kind of

¹Quality flag equal or greater than 0.5 in Wuyts et al. (2008), flag ‘A’ in VIMOS catalogue, and flag ‘2’ in Silverman et al. (2010).

Table 2.1: ERG number statistics: sample overlap, counterparts, and classification.

POP	N _{TOT} ^a	E _{RO}	E _{IERO}	DRG	N _{spec}	X-Ray				KI ^d	MIPS	KIcr ^e	Radio	N _{AGN} ^f		
						XR ^b	A1 ^c	A2 ^c	Q1 ^c						Q2 ^c	nN _H ^c	24$\mu$m	1.4 GHz
ERG	628 (607)	553	259	289	140	72	14	26	3	17	7	111(27)	338	16	24	154 (25%)
ERO	553 (541)	553	249	212	130	67	13	25	3	15	7	85(24)	308	12	23	127 (23%)
IERO	259 (258)	249	259	163	30	39	9	11	2	9	5	64(17)	167	10	16	85 (33%)
DRG	289 (280)	212	163	289	33	40	10	11	2	10	4	94(19)	175	16	14	114 (39%)
cERG	156 (156)	156	156	156	14	29	8	9	1	6	4	51(13)	109	9	10	66 (42%)
pERO	234 (234)	234	0	0	90	21	2	12	0	4	2	8(4)	110	0	6	24 (10%)
pDRG	61 (61)	0	0	61	9	4	1	1	0	2	0	22(2)	24	2	0	23 (38%)

Note.—The numbers displayed are effective counting and approximated to unit.

^a Total number of sources in each (sub)sample and, in parenthesis, those which have good photometry in all bands involved in the ERG criteria: i_{775} , z_{850} , J , K_s , and $3.6\mu\text{m}$.

^b Total number of X-ray identifications.

^c Number of sources classified as type-1 or type-2 AGN (A1 or A2, respectively), type-1 or type-2 QSO (Q1 or Q2, respectively), and AGN with undetermined type (no N_H determination, column nN_H) according to the Szokoly et al. (2004) criterion.

^d Number of sources selected as AGN by the KI criterion (final corrected number).

^e Sources whose KI AGN probability has been corrected based on [8.0]-[24] colours.

^f Total number of sources classified as AGN, considering all AGN identification criteria, along with the equivalent fraction in the total (sub)population.

artefacts². This results in a K_s -selected sample of 4274 sources at $K_{s,TOT} < 23.8$.

2.2.3 Red Galaxy Samples

Three categories of ERGs are considered:

- EROs: $i_{775} - K_s > 2.5$ (Roche et al., 2003);
- IEROs: $z_{850} - [3.6] \mu m > 3.25$ (Yan et al., 2004);
- DRGs: $J - K_s > 1.35$ (Franx et al., 2003).

Whenever a source is not detected in one of the bands (i_{775} , z_{850} , J or $3.6 \mu m$), a limit to its magnitude is assumed (we adopt the 3σ flux level based on the local rms provided in the catalogue). In the case of unreliable photometry (e.g., $K_{sw} \leq 0.3$), the corresponding source is not considered further. Thus, only ERGs with robust photometry in both of the bands used for their identification are considered. The resulting ERG sample, with robust photometry, contains 628 objects: 553 EROs, 259 IEROs, and 289 DRGs, down to the adopted magnitude limit of $K_{s,TOT} = 23.8$ AB. These classifications are not exclusive, with individual objects potentially included in more than one classification, as illustrated in Figure 2.2.

It should be noted that FIREWORKS is a K_s -selected catalogue. As such, EROs and DRGs are selected according to the traditional definition, but IEROs selected from the FIREWORKS catalogue are in fact K_s -detected IEROs. This sample will only be representative of the true IERO population in the absence of a significant number of very red $K_s - [3.6]$ IEROs, which will be undetected in the K_s image. One should also note that the z_{850} detection limit (the current K_s selected sample includes sources with up to $z_{850} \sim 27$ mag) imposes a $[3.6]$ -band magnitude limit of ~ 23.75 mag for the IERO sample.

²See Section 3.4 of Wuyts et al. (2008) for a description of the concept of pixel weight.

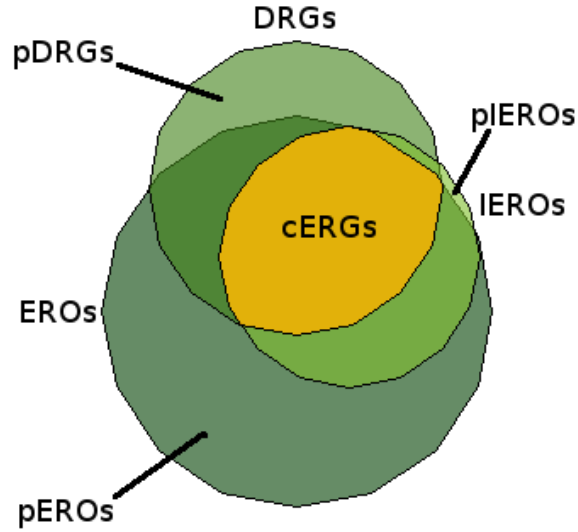


Figure 2.2: The adopted ERG sub-sample nomenclature is represented here through a Venn diagram. The overlap between the three ERG classes – EROs, IEROs, and DRGs – is significant (the common ERG population, labelled as cERGs). The outer non-overlapping regions represent the pure populations.

Figure 2.3 shows the colour-magnitude distribution for sources in the FIREWORKS catalogue and for the K_s -detected IERO sample, displaying our adopted K_s -band magnitude limit (diagonal line) and the practical [3.6]-band magnitude limit (vertical line). The sampled region at $K_{s,TOT} - [3.6] < -[3.6] + 23.8$ and $[3.6] < 23.26$ (below the diagonal line and to the left of the vertical one) does not indicate a significant incompleteness for the critical region (above the diagonal line and to the left of the vertical one). For example, allowing all FIREWORKS sources to be considered (up to a K_s -band magnitude of 24.3 mag), would only increase the IERO sample by 7% (18 more objects). Consequently, we consider our sample of (K_s -detected) IEROs representative of the true IERO population and find it unnecessary to assemble a separate sample of IEROs from a $3.6\ \mu\text{m}$ selected catalogue, thus maintaining the photometric homogeneity within the ERG sample.

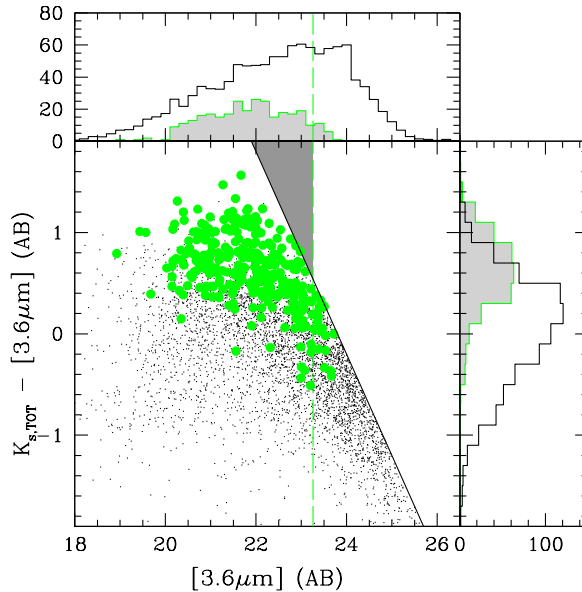


Figure 2.3: $K_s - [3.6]$ colour-magnitude plot for sources in the FIREWORKS catalogue. Points and open histograms (scaled down by a factor of 4) represent the general K_s population included in the catalogue, while filled circles and shaded histograms represent the selected IERO sample. The diagonal line corresponds to a K_s -band value of 23.8 mag, the adopted magnitude limit of our sample. The dashed vertical line represents the practical [3.6]-band IERO magnitude limit (as imposed by the z_{850} 3σ magnitude limit and the IERO definition). The current K_s -detected IERO sample would differ significantly from the general IERO population if a large number of sources exists above the diagonal and to the left of the vertical line (shaded region). The $K_s - [3.6]$ colours present in the well sampled region of the diagram (below the diagonal line and to the left of the vertical one) argue against this scenario, implying that the current sample of IEROs is representative of the overall IERO population.

2.2.4 Sub-classes of ERGs

We refer to those sources that appear exclusively in one of these classes (ERO, IERO or DRG) as “pure” populations, while those that are simultaneously included in three ERG categories are referred to as the “common” population. In this work, the latter will be referred to as “common” ERGs, or cERGs. When addressing both the “pure” and “common” populations we will restrict ourselves to those sources which have sufficient information for a classification in each of the three red galaxy criteria (either good photometry or robust

upper limits in *all bands* used for classification). With such requirements, we find 607 ERGs: 541 EROs, 258 IEROs, and 280 DRGs. Practically all IEROs (249 out of 259³) are also EROs and almost two-thirds (163 out of 258) are also classified as DRGs; there are 212 sources that comply with both the ERO and DRG criteria, and 156 ERGs that are simultaneously classified as ERO, IERO, and DRG (the cERGs). Identified as “pure” sources are 194 pure EROs (pEROs), 2 pure IEROs (pIEROs), and 48 pure DRGs (pDRGs).

Figure 2.2 shows the overlap between the different sub-populations. The initial columns of Table 2.1 summarize the numbers referred above.

2.3 Multi-wavelength AGN identification and classification

One of the major problems for the characterization of ERGs, or for any distant galaxy population, is to identify the presence of AGN activity. The many techniques that exist target different AGN types and redshift ranges, and no single technique can guarantee a highly discriminatory success rate. X-rays, radio or MIR, originating from different regions in the vicinity of the AGN, and differently affected by dust obscuration, provide independent ways to reveal such activity. Hence, we use the multi-wavelength data available in this field to carry out a thorough identification and classification of AGN activity in the ERG population.

2.3.1 Optical Spectroscopy

Optical line ratios will only reveal AGN activity if most of the galaxy’s line emission comes from the environment near the AGN and if the dust obscuration is not significant. In the case of obscured AGN activity, the emission from any disc star-formation may dominate the

³Number of IEROs with good photometry in the i_{775} , z_{850} , K_s and $3.6\mu\text{m}$ bands.

optical line emission. Also, since ERGs are intrinsically UV/optically faint, spectroscopy will be of limited use to reveal their nature. Overall, there are only 8 spectroscopic AGN identifications (Narrow Line AGN or QSO type-2 classifications), galaxies which are also identified as AGN by the criteria described in the following sections.

Spectroscopy also allows for the rejection of galactic stars selected as EROs. In this sample, two were found and discarded from further study. This tells that contamination by unidentified galactic stars is small in this study.

2.3.2 X-Rays

X-ray emission is arguably the most effective discriminator of AGN activity in a galaxy. Due to the sensitivity levels currently reached with the deepest observations (the 2 Ms CDF fields: Alexander et al., 2003; Luo et al., 2008, ; and recently increased to 4 Ms), the most powerful AGN ($L_{0.5-10\text{keV}} > 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) can be detected beyond the highest redshift currently observed, $z > 7$. On the other hand, both low luminosity AGN and vigorous star-forming galaxies ($L_{0.5-10\text{keV}} \sim 10^{41-42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) can only be detected out to $z \sim 1 - 2$. If enough signal is detected, detailed spectral analysis can be used to distinguish between AGN and SF activity as the origin of the X-ray emission.

In this work, the ERG sample was cross-matched with the catalogues from the 2 Ms *CXO* observations (Luo et al., 2008). For the region considered here – GOODSs ISAAC – the X-ray observations reach aim-point sensitivity limits of $\approx 1.9 \times 10^{-17}$ and $\approx 1.3 \times 10^{-16} \text{ erg cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ for the soft (0.5–2.0 keV) and hard (2–8 keV) bands, respectively.

X-ray detections were searched for within 1.5" of each ERG position. Counterparts were found for 67 of the 553 EROs (12%), 39 of the 259 IEROs (15%), and 40 of the 289 DRGs (14%) (see Table 2.1). These detection fractions are consistent with those found by Alexander et al. (2002), for EROs, and Papovich et al. (2006), for DRGs.

We adopt a similar X-ray classification criteria as Szokoly et al. (2004), who consider

both the X-ray Luminosity (L_X), estimated from the 0.5–10 keV flux, and the hardness ratio (HR). The HR is used as an indicator for obscuration and is calculated using the count rates in the hard band (HB, 2–8 keV) and in the soft band (SB, 0.5–2 keV): $HR = (HB-SB)/(HB+SB)$. Any source displaying an HR greater than -0.2 (equivalent to column densities of $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 20$ at $z \sim 0$) is considered to be an obscured system. However, the HR is quite degenerate at high redshifts (Figure 2.4, Eckart et al., 2006; Messias et al., 2010, but also Alexander et al. 2005 and Luo et al. 2010). In this work, a slightly different procedure is used, estimating directly N_H from the more robustly determined soft-band (or hard-band) to full-band ratio, as explained below.

In order to estimate N_H , we have used the Portable, Interactive Multi-Mission Simulator⁴ (PIMMS, version 3.9k). The soft-band/full-band (SB/FB) and hard-band/full-band (HB/FB) flux ratios⁵ were estimated for a range of column densities ($20 < \log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) < 25$, with steps of $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) = 0.01$), and redshifts ($0 < z < 7$, with steps of $z = 0.01$), considering a fixed photon index, $\Gamma = 1.8$ (Tozzi et al., 2006). The comparison with the observed values results in the estimate of N_H , which can then be used to derive an intrinsic X-ray luminosity referred in the criteria below (for simplicity throughout the text, L_X refers to an intrinsic luminosity).

The criteria used as equivalent to Szokoly et al. (2004) are listed as follows:

$$\text{Galaxy} : L_X < 10^{42} \text{erg s}^{-1} \ \& \ N_H \leq 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

$$\text{AGN} - 2 : 10^{41} \leq L_X < 10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1} \ \& \ N_H > 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

$$\text{AGN} - 1 : 10^{42} \leq L_X < 10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1} \ \& \ N_H \leq 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

$$\text{QSO} - 2 : L_X \geq 10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1} \ \& \ N_H > 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

$$\text{QSO} - 1 : L_X \geq 10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1} \ \& \ N_H \leq 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

⁴<http://heasarc.nasa.gov/docs/software/tools/pimms.html>

⁵As opposed to the commonly used SB/HB flux ratios, the use of ratios based on FB flux allows for an estimate of N_H when the source is detected in the FB but no detection is achieved in the SB nor in the HB.

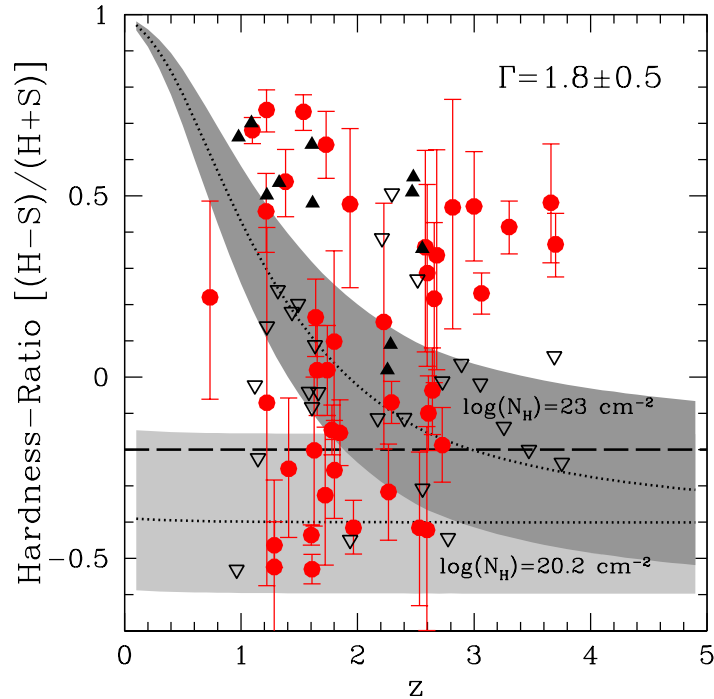


Figure 2.4: Figure 3 from Messias et al. (2010) showing X-ray HR evolution with redshift for obscured ($N_{\text{H}} = 10^{23}\text{cm}^{-2}$, grey shaded region) and unobscured ($N_{\text{H}} = 10^{20.2}\text{cm}^{-2}$, light grey shaded region) X-ray power-law emission models ($\Gamma = 1.8 \pm 0.5$), calculated using PIMMS (ver. 3.9k). Filled circles show the distribution of the X-ray detected AGN ERGs with a robust HR estimate. Upper limits (no hard-band detection) appear as empty triangles while filled triangles denote lower limits (no soft-band detection). The dashed horizontal line highlights the HR constraint (HR = -0.2) for type discrimination used by Szokoly et al. (2004). It is clear that for high-redshift sources ($z \gtrsim 2$) the simple HR criterion becomes degenerate as an obscuration measure.

The rest-frame X-ray luminosity is calculated as:

$$L_X = 4\pi d_L^2 f_X (1+z)^{\Gamma-2} \text{erg s}^{-1}$$

where f_X is the X-ray flux in the 0.5-10 band and the photon index is the observed Γ (when $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) \leq 20$) or $\Gamma = 1.8$ (when $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 20$). The luminosity distance, d_L is calculated using either the spectroscopic redshift or, if not available, the photometric

redshift. The 0.5–8 keV luminosities, derived using Luo et al. (2008) catalogued 0.5–8 keV fluxes, were converted to 0.5–10 keV considering the adopted Γ .

In total, these criteria enable the identification of 72 sources hosting an AGN with 20 X-ray sources powerful enough to be classified as QSOs. The majority of the AGN are classified as type-2 sources: 43 X-ray detections have $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 22$ (i.e., indicative of large obscuration) while only 17 show lower values (with the remaining 7 having uncertain N_{H} determinations, with no discrimination possible), indicating a possible 2–3:1 obscured to unobscured ratio. However, although in agreement with what is referred in the literature (see the discussion in Donley et al., 2008), this value should be taken with care. Although we correct for the redshift effect by considering the N_{H} value instead of HR, the former may still be slightly affected at high redshifts as its calculation relies on flux ratios. Ideally, such high-redshift populations would require observations extending to softer X-ray energies (<0.5 keV) below those reliably achieved by *CXO*.

As a final remark, the reader should note that at $\log L_{\text{X}}[\text{erg s}^{-1}] > 44$ the ratio is even higher, 6:1, close to that found for sub-millimetre galaxies (Alexander et al., 2005). This result is relevant for the discussion at the end of Section 2.4.7.

2.3.3 Mid-Infrared

Over the last few years with the sensitivity of IRAC and MIPS onboard *SST*, several MIR criteria have been developed for the identification of AGN at the centre of galaxies. A power-law MIR spectral energy distribution, for example, is characteristic of AGN emission (e.g. Donley et al., 2007). Somewhat more generic colour-colour diagrams have also been investigated, and AGN loci in such plots defined (e.g. Ivison et al., 2004; Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005; Hatziminaoglou et al., 2005). This wavelength range is of particular interest for the ERG population, given their red SEDs. Here, we have applied MIR diagnostics to our ERG sample, as described below.

Observational data at X-ray and IR wavelengths provide complementary views of AGN activity. The most obscured AGN may be missed by even the deepest X-ray surveys but can still be identified by their hot-dust emission at IR wavelengths. On the other hand, depending on the amount of dust and its distribution, and on the AGN strength, the MIR emission from X-ray classified AGN may not be dominated by the hot dust in the vicinity of the AGN itself. A detailed comparison of the relative merits of AGN selection by the X-rays and the MIR was performed by Eckart et al. (2010), showing that only a multi-wavelength combination of AGN criteria can help to overcome biases present in single-band selection. However, even the combination of MIR and X-rays will not result in complete AGN samples, as the identification of low power AGN will ultimately depend on the depth of the surveys. By performing this study in GOODSs, with some of the deepest data both at X-ray and MIR wavelengths, we maximise the identification rate of AGN. For a more in depth discussion on this subject, please consult Chapter 3.

IRAC counterparts were found for practically all (98%) ERG sources. The vast majority (89%) are detected simultaneously in all IRAC bands: 526 of the 553 EROs, 257 of the 259 IEROs, and 258 of the 289 DRGs. The MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ detection rate is understandably lower 337(55%), given the lower relative sensitivity: 306/167/171 of the 553/259/289 EROs/IEROs/DRGs are detected (Table 2.1).

2.3.3.1 Classification: MIR colours

In recent years, several AGN colour-selection criteria have been developed employing MIR IRAC observations (Ivison et al., 2004; Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005; Hatziminaoglou et al., 2005). Here we follow the KI criterion proposed in Chapter 3 of this thesis. An

AGN is considered to present the following colours:

$$K_s - [4.5] > 0$$

$$[4.5] - [8.0] > 0$$

Figure 2.5 shows the distribution of ERGs on the KI colour-colour space. It identifies as AGN 97 (18%) EROs, 24 of which are also classified as AGN from the X-rays; 78 (30%) IEROs, 17 of which also have an X-ray AGN classification; and 100 (35%) DRGs, 19 of which also appear as X-ray AGN. The relatively high number of potential AGN identified, over that revealed by the X-rays, is known and expected (Donley et al., 2007, 2008, and references therein). It is worth noting that these results are likely more reliable than those obtained by traditional MIR colour criteria (e.g., Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005), as shown in Chapter 3.

2.3.3.2 MIR degeneracy at $z > 2.5$

One problem in using MIR photometry to identify AGN (with both power-law and colour-colour criteria) arises at $z \gtrsim 2.5$, as both star-forming galaxies and AGN start to merge into the same MIR colour-colour space (see Chapter 3). The main reason for this is the increasing relative strength of stellar emission in the MIR, as compared to that of an AGN, as redshift increases. At higher redshifts, a prominent $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ stellar bump passes through the IRAC bands, allowing for the detection of a steep spectral index not from AGN emission, but from the stellar emission alone. At $z > 2.5$, the KI criterion classifies as AGN 57 EROs, 48 IEROs, and 71 DRGs, with 19, 16, and 21 (respectively) X-ray confirmed at these redshifts.

In the present work, this is not a serious problem, as most of the ERG sample (79%) lies at $z \leq 2.5$ (see Section 2.4.1). Nevertheless, it should be noted that at higher redshifts, this could result in a likely overestimate of the presence of AGN. One can attempt to

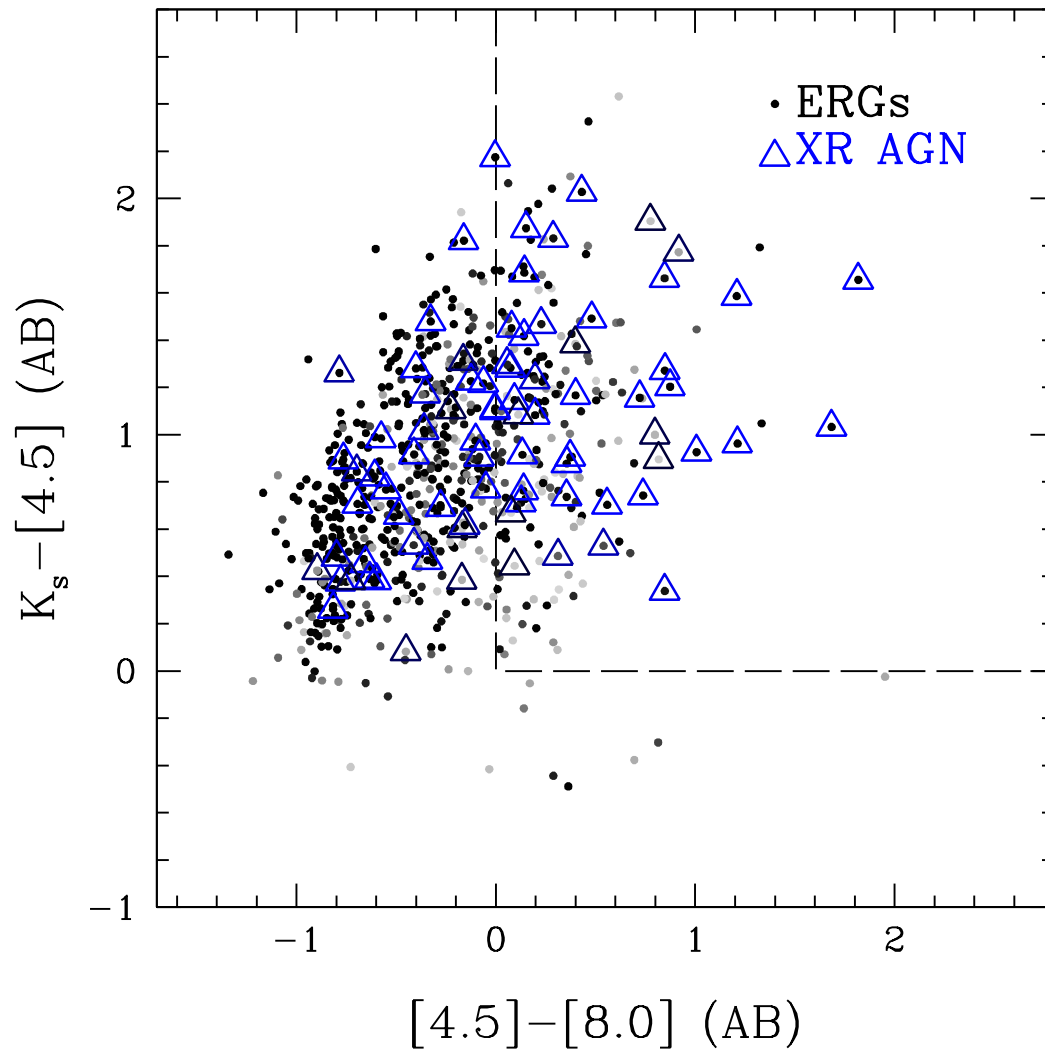


Figure 2.5: The distribution of ERGs in the KI colour-colour diagnostic plot proposed in Chapter 3. The AGN region is delimited by the dashed line. The ERGs (as dots) classified as AGN by the X-rays criterion are highlighted as triangles. The darker the circle the higher is its source probability. The bluer the triangle, the higher is the probability for an X-ray AGN classification.

correct for this effect, by using the MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ observations: at $z \sim 2.5 - 5$, the $1.6\mu\text{m}$ bump will be shifted to the $6-10\mu\text{m}$ range. Therefore, in the absence of significant AGN emission, one expects a blue $[8.0]-[24]$ colour. In Chapter 3 of this thesis, a proper study of this colour is pursued, indicating that sources showing $[8.0]-[24] < 1$ at these redshifts are dominated by non-AGN activity.

In Figure 2.6 we present the MIR $[4.5]-[8.0]$ vs $[8.0]-[24]$ colour-colour plot for $z > 2.5$ ERGs in the current sample (highlighting those classified as AGN by the KI criterion). The tracks represent the expected colours of template SEDs when redshifted between $z = 2.5$ and $z = 4$. Templates come from the SWIRE Template Library (Polletta et al., 2007), two hybrids⁶ from (Salvato et al., 2009), and the extreme ERO of Afonso et al. (2001), which is dominated by an obscured AGN in the MIR. The vertical line indicates the $[4.5]-[8.0]$ colour constraint of the KI criterion, while the horizontal line shows our adopted colour cut separating AGN and star-forming processes at these redshifts. The AGN template that crosses over this $[8.0]-[24]$ threshold at the highest redshifts is IRAS 22491-1808, a possible mixture of AGN and stellar MIR emission (Berta, 2005; Polletta et al., 2007), where the AGN component is progressively less sampled by the MIR bands as redshift increases. Concerning the current sample, there are 12/10/16 EROs/IEROs/DRGs at $z > 2.5$ classified as AGN by the KI criterion which *do not require* an AGN SED to explain their MIR emission and, consequently, their KI probability to be AGN is corrected.

We note the presence of two interesting sources in Figure 2.6. The one isolated in the upper right, is one of the seven optically unidentified radio sources found in Afonso et al. (2006, their source #42). Inspection of the K_s and $24\mu\text{m}$ images reveals no signs of blending, strengthening the accuracy of the $24\mu\text{m}$ flux. This source also has X-ray emission characteristic of a type-2 AGN ($L_X = 10^{43.3}\text{erg s}^{-1}$ and $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) = 23$). The colour-track closest to this source in Figure 2.6 is that of the highly obscured AGN ERO found by

⁶Hybrids are sources presenting a combination of non-AGN and AGN emission. See Chapter 3.

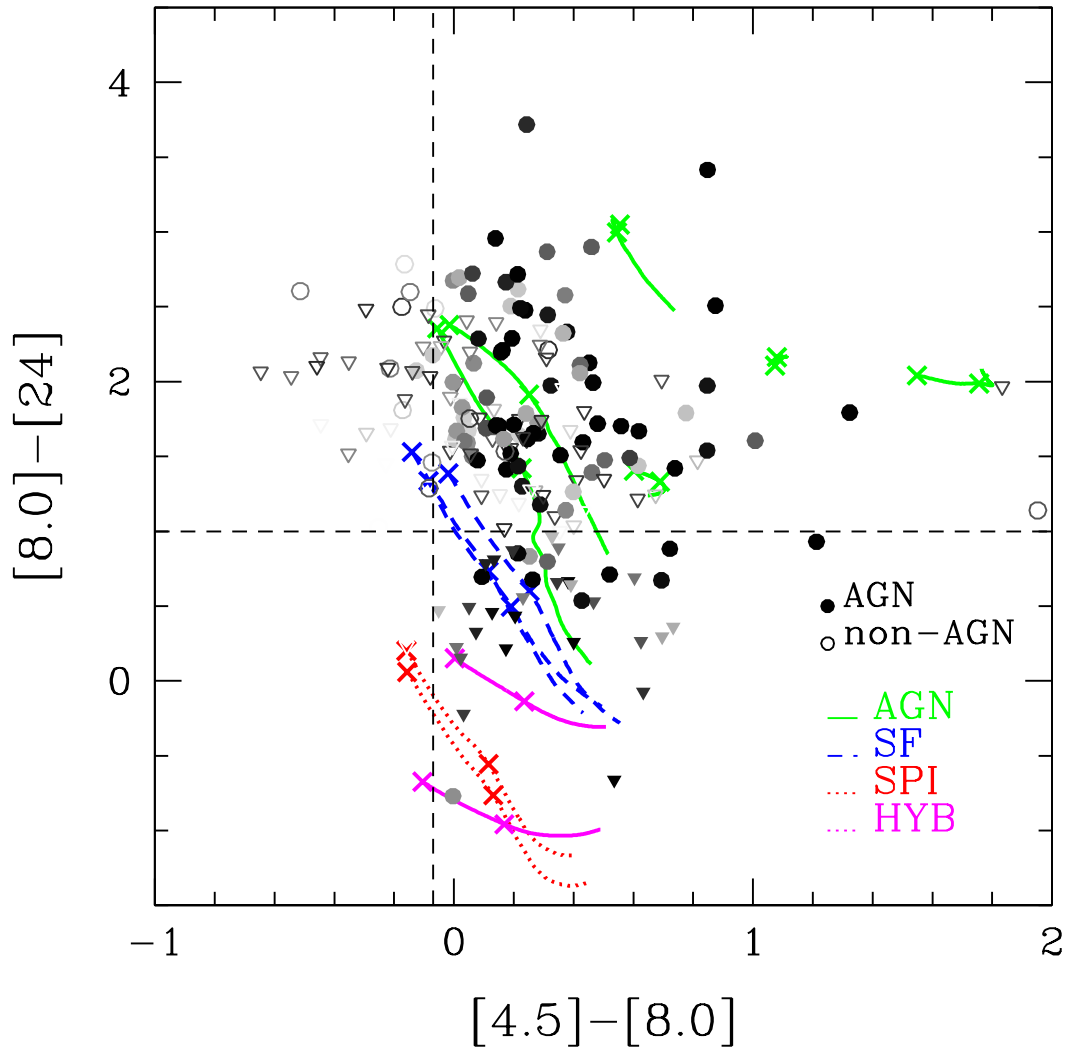


Figure 2.6: Mid-infrared $[4.5]-[8.0]$ vs $[8.0]-[24]$ colour-colour plot for $z > 2.5$ ERGs in the current sample. Filled symbols represent the AGN classification from the KI criterion (darker symbols mean higher AGN probability given by KI before correction) and open symbols otherwise (darker symbols mean higher probability not to be KI selected). Downward pointing triangles indicate $[8.0] - [24]$ upper limits. The tracks represent the expected colours of template SEDs where the IR is dominated by star-formation (dotted and dashed tracks, where the latter represent more intense SF activity) or AGN activity (solid tracks), redshifted between $z = 2.5$ and $z = 4$, with crosses at $z = 2.5$ and $z = 3$. The templates displayed are (from bottom to top): two Spirals (Sc and Sd, red) and two hybrids (S0+QSO2, magenta), three starbursts (M82, NGC 6240, and Arp220, blue), and six Hybrids and AGN (IRAS 22491-1808, IRAS 20551-4250, QSO-2, Afonso et al. (2001) ERO, Mrk 231, and IRAS 19254-7245 South, green).

Afonso et al. (2001). The assigned photometric redshift is $z = 3.1$ (Luo et al., 2010). The spectral index ($\mathcal{S}_\nu = \nu^{-\alpha}$) obtained from 1.4 GHz and 5 GHz observations is $\alpha = 1.3 \pm 0.3$ (Kellermann et al., 2008), implying an ultra steep spectrum source (e.g. Tielens et al., 1979; Chambers et al., 1996). The high- z obscured AGN scenario postulated in Afonso et al. (2006) for this source is thus strengthened.

The other interesting source is the bluest [8.0]-[24] $24\mu m$ detection, with MIR colours characteristic of spiral galaxies or an earlier type with a small AGN contribution. It is also X-ray detected, but has no radio emission. This is a candidate for a high- z evolved system, based on its optical non-detection and extremely blue [8.0]-[24] colours typical of late-type galaxies. The redshift assigned to this source, $z_{phot} = 2.54$ (Luo et al., 2010), is at the highest redshifts in which similar sources have ever been found (Stockton et al., 2008; van der Wel et al., 2011). A NICMOS image taken from the GOODS NICMOS Survey⁷ (Conselice et al., 2011), confirms the disc-like nature of this evolved source (Figure 2.7). A Sérsic index of $n = 1.2$ (Buitrago et al., 2008, and private communication) strengthens the visual disc classification. Its effective radius is equivalent to $r_e = 2 \text{ kpc}$, implying a compact disc. A few more galaxies fall close to the late-type galaxy colour-colour tracks (Figure 2.6), and are also interesting. A discussion on the implications for the existence of passive evolved discs at such high redshifts is presented in Section 5.3.

2.3.4 Radio

Radio emission is essentially unaffected by dust obscuration, thus being extremely useful for the estimate of SF activity in ERGs. However, since both star-formation and AGN activity can produce radio emission, it is often difficult or impossible to rely on radio properties alone to reveal the power source in a galaxy. Indications from radio spectral indices are of limited use, as both star-formation and AGN emission usually result from synchrotron

⁷<http://www.nottingham.ac.uk/astronomy/gns>

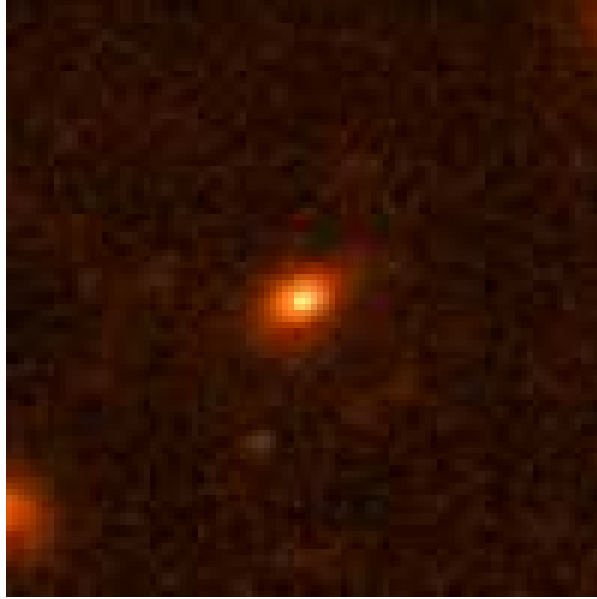


Figure 2.7: The GNS-*H160* image cut-out of the candidate for passively evolved system at high redshift confirms the disc profile expected from the template tracks in Figure 2.6.

radiation with $S_\nu \propto \nu^{-0.8}$, and only some AGN show signs of flat or even inverted radio spectra. Very high resolution *VLBI* radio imaging has also been used with limited success to impose limits on the size of the radio emitting region, identifying star-forming galaxies where the radio emission is resolved, and a possible AGN where not (Muxlow et al., 2005; Middelberg et al., 2008; Seymour et al., 2008). The only straightforward radio AGN criterion is the radio luminosity itself, as the highest luminosities can only be produced by the most powerful AGN.

Afonso et al. (2005) performed a detailed study of the sub-mJy radio population, and found starforming galaxies with radio luminosities up to $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \sim 10^{24.5} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$. We thus take this value as the upper limit for SF activity. We note that this value corresponds to a SFR of almost $2000 \text{ M}_\odot \text{ yr}^{-1}$ (Bell, 2003, see Section 2.4.4). The existence of galaxies with higher rates of SF activity is unlikely.

For the current work we have used the 1.4 GHz Australia Telescope Compact Array

observations of this field, which reach a uniform 14–17 μJy rms throughout the GOODSs field (see Afonso et al., 2006; Norris et al., 2006, for more details), and the Very Large Array data also in GOODSs (Kellermann et al., 2008; Miller et al., 2008), reaching deep rms levels (typically 8 μJy).

First, the two radio catalogues were matched. Then, with a search radius of 1.5" and considering the VLA sources coordinates, the radio catalogue was cross-matched with FIREWORKS catalogue, implying 73 (nominal value) sources with a radio counterpart. For ATCA-only radio sources, a larger matching radius of 3" was considered revealing five (nominal value) more sources with a radio counterpart. Overall, there are 24 (4%) ERGs detected at radio frequencies: 23 (4%) EROs, 16 (6%) IEROs, 14 (5%) DRGs. Six sources have radio luminosities in excess of $10^{24.5} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$. They are also classified as AGN by both X-ray and KI criteria. On the other hand, nine radio-detected ERGs are not classified as AGN by any of the adopted criteria. Only one nominal source with a non-negligible probability to be radio AGN (a 40% probability to have $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} > 10^{24.5} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) remains unclassified as AGN by the other two AGN criteria.

The small detection rate indicates that powerful AGN and the most intense starbursts are not common in the ERG population, as only sources with $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} > 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$ will be detected at $z > 1$ with the sensitivity available even in the current deepest radio surveys.

2.4 Properties of ERGs

2.4.1 Redshift Distributions

As noted above, robust spectroscopic redshifts are available for around 22% of the ERG sample. Photometric redshift estimates are also available from the FIREWORKS and Luo et al. (2010) catalogues, covering almost the complete ERG sample. In case only a photometric redshift is available, the redshift probability distribution is taken into account.

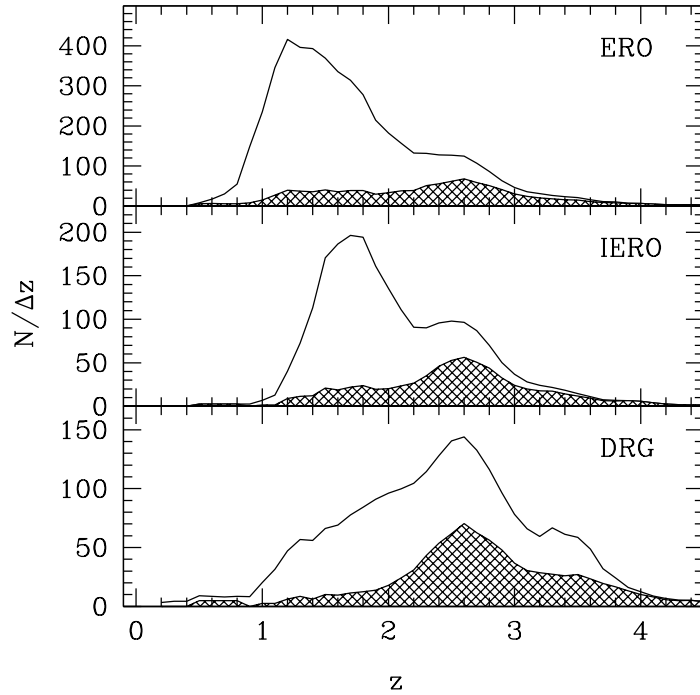


Figure 2.8: Redshift distributions of different ERG sub-populations: EROs, IEROs, and DRGs. The hatched histograms correspond to ERGs identified as AGN. Note the y-axis units are $N/\Delta z$ and different scales are adopted for the individual panels. The distributions were obtained with a moving bin of width $\Delta z = 0.4$ and adopting steps of $\Delta z = 0.1$.

When separating the sample into redshift bins, only sources with enough probability (Section 2.2.1) to fall inside a given bin are considered. These sources are weighted by their own probability.

The redshift distributions for the ERO, IERO, and DRGs are shown in Figure 2.8. Although the range of redshifts sampled in all ERG classes is similar ($1 < z < 3$), the average value increases from $z = 1.80$ for EROs, to $z = 2.11$ for IEROs, and to $z = 2.47$ for DRGs populations (the slightly higher values relative to previous works is likely due to the fainter flux cut adopted in this work, e.g. Conselice et al., 2008; Papovich et al., 2006). This is as expected given the source selection, designed to identify objects at such redshifts.

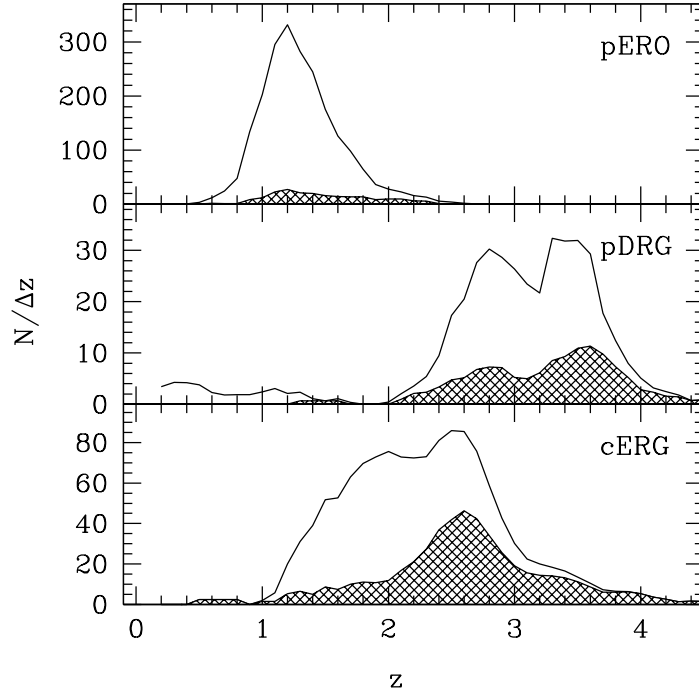


Figure 2.9: Redshift distributions for “pure” and “common” ERG sub-populations: pEROs, pDRGs and cERGs. The hatched histograms correspond to ERGs identified as AGN. Note the y-axis units are $N/\Delta z$ and different scales are adopted for the individual panels. The distributions were obtained with a moving bin of width $\Delta z = 0.4$ and adopting steps of $\Delta z = 0.1$.

The AGN in the ERG population follow a similar redshift distribution but the AGN fraction increases rapidly at higher redshifts. This will be addressed in the next section.

Figure 2.9 displays the redshift distributions for pEROs, pDRGs, and cERGs. The redshift distribution of pEROs is quite narrow, selecting sources essentially at $z = 1 - 2$ (peaking at $z \sim 1.3$), while the pDRG population is notably small, and at higher redshifts ($z=2-4$). The “pure” criteria thus appear to be good and easy techniques to select high- z sources in narrow distinct redshift bins. Sources classified as cERGs, appearing as red in all three ERG selection criteria, cover a broad redshift range, from $z = 1$ to $z = 4$. There are practically no cERGs at $z < 1$ in this particular sample due to the IERO criterion.

2.4.2 AGN content of ERGs

As described in the previous section, several multi-wavelength indicators were used to identify AGN in the ERG population. The indicators have different sensitivities to AGN characteristics, such as distance, dust obscuration, or AGN strength. Their combination will, thus, allow for a more complete census of AGN content in these sources.

We do not find a numerous population of very powerful AGN among the ERGs, as given by the X-rays (only 20 ERGs with $L_X \geq 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and radio (only six ERGs with $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \geq 10^{24.5} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) luminosities. These represent, respectively, only 3% and 1% of the ERG sample. Such ratio is comparable to that observed in the complete K -selected FIREWORKS sample, where 31 (0.7%) QSOs and 9 (0.2%) radio-powerful sources are found. However, it is worth noting that a high fraction of these powerful sources are classified as ERG, and at a similar level, around 65% (20 out of 31 QSOs, and 6 out of 9 radio powerful sources). This apparent contradiction is probably related to the short duty-cycle expected for such kind of sources (e.g., Hopkins et al., 2006), where an AGN will not pass much time as a radio-loud source nor as an X-ray QSO. but will always present an ERG colour before and after the strong on-set of AGN activity.

Overall, we select 154 (25%) AGN-dominated systems in the ERG sample (23% for EROs, 33% for IEROs, and 39% for DRGs). This fraction increases from low to high redshift, from 10% at $1 \leq z < 2$ to 45% at $2 \leq z \leq 3$. Among the X-ray identified AGN, 40% are also classified as such by the KI criterion. Conversely, 25% of the KI identified AGN are X-ray detected.

The high AGN fraction and its increase with redshift, might lead one to think that the KI criterion is overestimating the number of AGN at high redshifts, even though a tentative correction was applied (see Section 2.3.3.2). We have investigated the AGN fraction evolution from $1 \leq z < 2$ to $2 \leq z \leq 3$ based, independently, on the X-ray and KI indicator. In both wavebands, the AGN fraction increases significantly from low to

high redshifts, rising from 8 to 17% when the X-ray is considered and from 3 to 37% when the MIR is considered. Although it seems possible that star-forming galaxies may still be affecting the KI criterion at high redshift (see Section 2.3.3.2), it is shown in Chapter 3 of this thesis that KI is still very reliable up to the highest redshifts. This may also partly be an effect of Malmquist bias, with lower luminosity systems, more likely to be dominated by star formation, being progressively lost at higher redshift. In any case, this increase is consistent with the known history of AGN activity in the Universe (Shaver et al., 1996; Hopkins et al., 2007). Section 2.4.6 also helps understanding this rise in AGN host fraction.

The ERG populations do tend to include a higher fraction of AGN hosts than the non-ERG population. This is clear from Figure 2.10, where ERG AGN fractions (found in the positive side of the x-axis) have AGN fractions of 15–50%. Note the AGN fraction is not a simple function of colour, as shown in Figure 2.10. All three colours ($i - K_s$, $z_{850} - [3.6]$, and $J - K_s$) imply similar AGN fractions around the colour threshold ($\sim 20\%$), but show different behaviour with increasing colours. The more extreme colours among the ERGs do not necessarily correspond to a significantly higher fraction of AGN identifications, and in fact, that appears to be true for EROs, always around or below $\sim 20\%$, and maybe IEROs, which the respective trend drops at the most extreme colours (although already being affected by small number statistics). This has implications for some of the works selecting compton-thick AGN at IR wave-bands down to the faintest limits. For instance, Fiore et al. (2008) considers a fainter MIPS_{24 μ m} flux cut providing that an extreme $R - K > 5$ (Vega) colour – quite similar to $i - K$ – selects a higher fraction of AGN. However, Figure 2.10 indicates that probably the $J - K_s$ colour will be much more efficient for such task. The difference between the ERO and DRG trends result from each criterion itself and the fact that AGN fraction rises toward higher redshifts (Figure 2.11). Redder $i_{775} - K_s$ colours will always select a population mostly at low- z ($1 \leq z < 2$, Figure 2.12), where the AGN fraction is shown to be smaller. On the other hand, redder $J - K_s$ constraints imply a

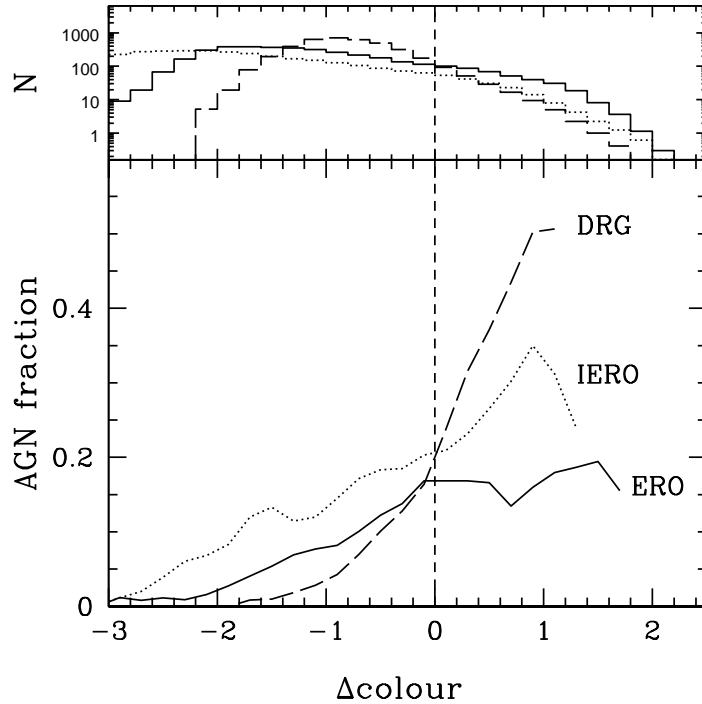


Figure 2.10: AGN fraction as a function of colour for EROs (solid line), IEROs (dotted line), and DRGs (dashed line). The trends are computed with a moving bin of 0.4 mag and steps of 0.2 mag. The x-axis represents the difference in magnitude to the colour threshold adequate for each population: $i_{775} - K_s = 2.5$ for EROs, $z_{850} - [3.6] = 3.25$ for IEROs and $J - K_s = 1.35$ for DRGs. IEROs appear to have an intermediate behaviour relative to EROs and DRGs, as one goes to more extreme colours. The upper panel shows the K_s -selected population trend in the considered colours.

higher fraction of high- z ($2 \leq z \leq 3$) sources, where the AGN fraction is higher. For example, essentially no low- z source has $J - K_s \gtrsim 1.8$ (Figure 2.13). The AGN fraction versus colour trend of the IEROs (Figure 2.10) lies between that of the EROs and DRGs, which could be driven by the redshift distribution of the IERO population, which also lies between that of the EROs and DRGs.

As a final remark, two features should be highlighted in Figure 2.11. Note how at $z < 1$ the ERG AGN fraction (solid line) increases dramatically up to the 30% level. The reader should recall that $i - K_s$, $z_{850} - [3.6]$ or $J - K_s$ colours are sensitive to a prominent 4000\AA

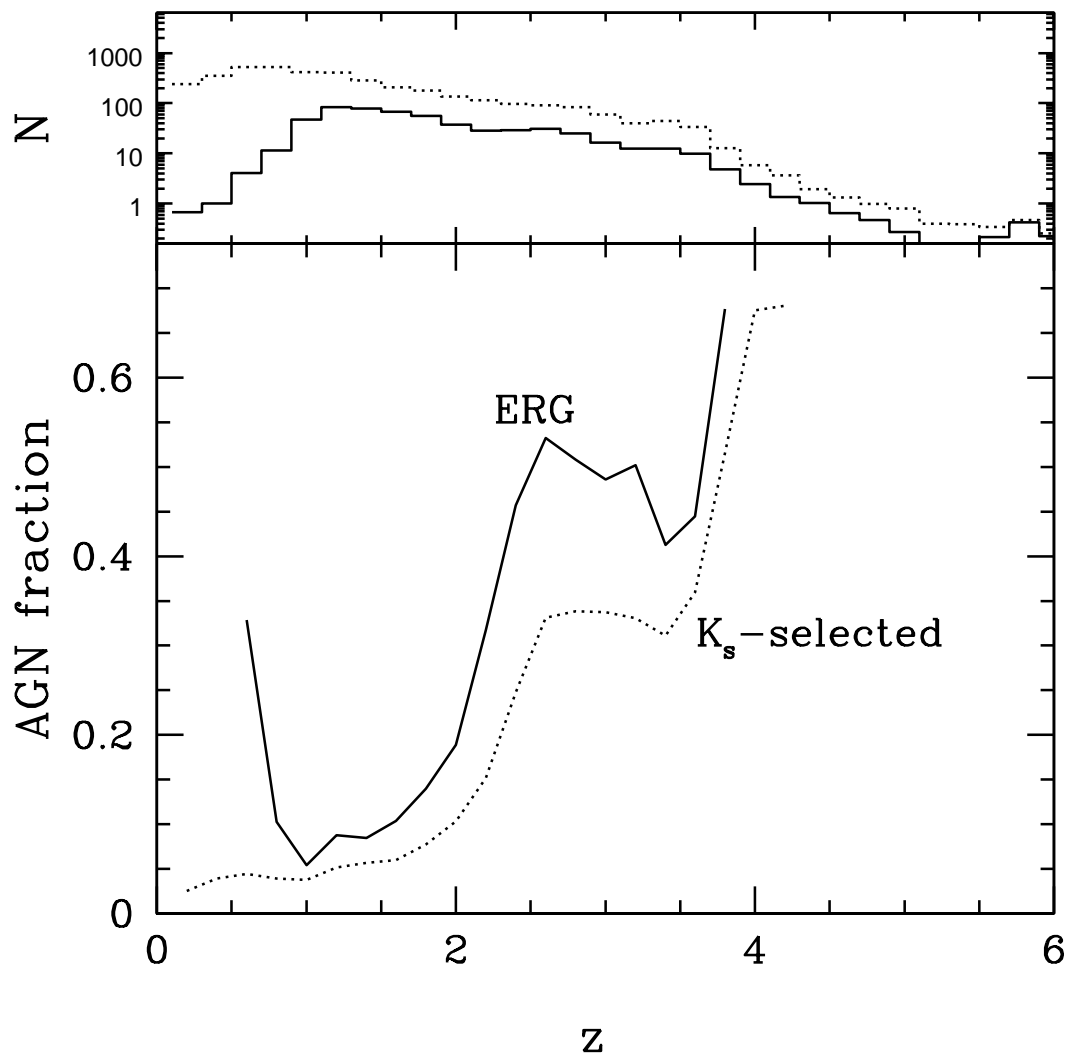


Figure 2.11: AGN fraction with redshift. The trend for the total K_s -selected population is represented by the dotted line, while the solid line refers to the overall ERG population. The same line patterns are used in the redshift distributions in the upper panel. The trends are computed with a moving bin of 0.4 mag and steps of 0.2 mag.

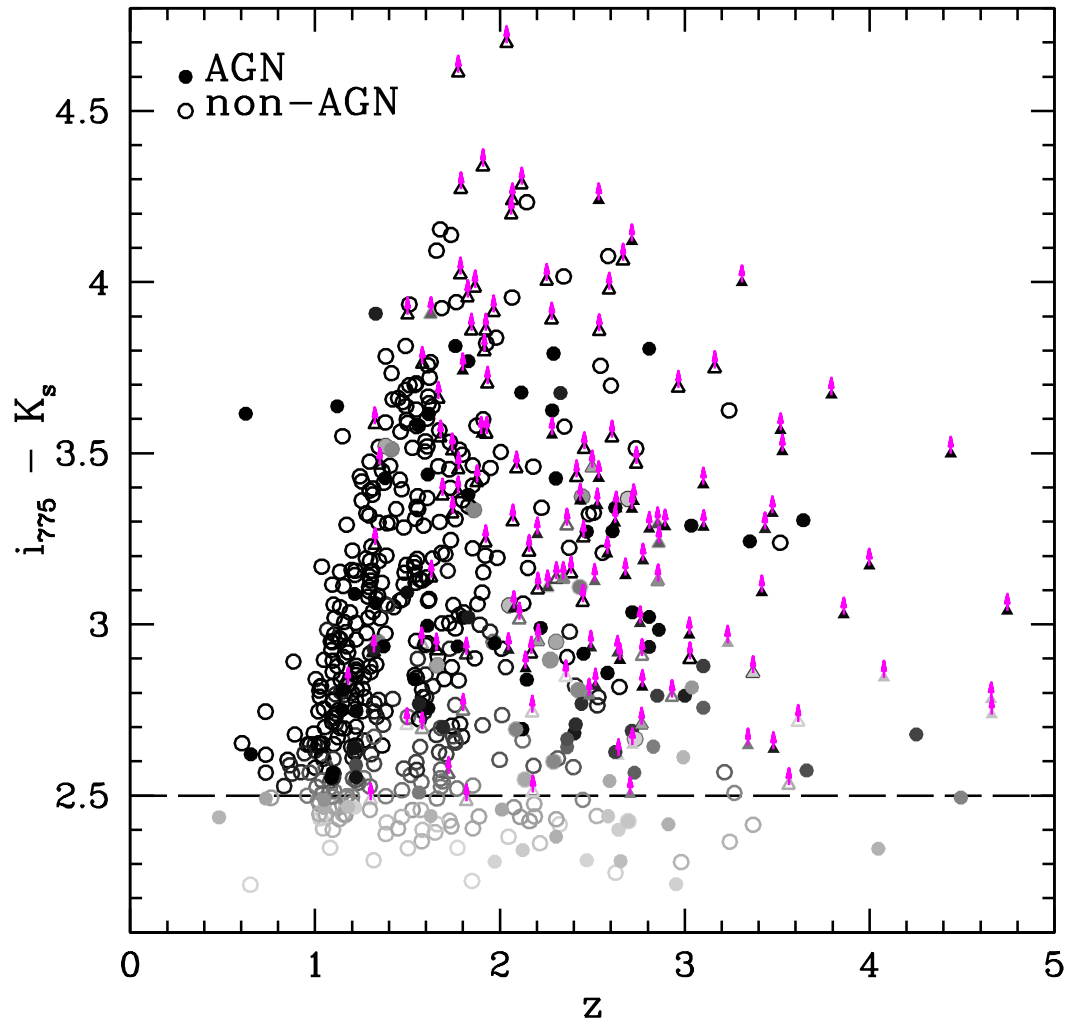


Figure 2.12: Variation of $i_{775} - K_s$ colour with redshift. The ERO criterion colour cut is shown as a dashed line. The dot intensity refers to the source probability. AGN appear as filled symbols, while non-AGN as open symbols. Sources undetected in the i_{775} -band appear as triangles.

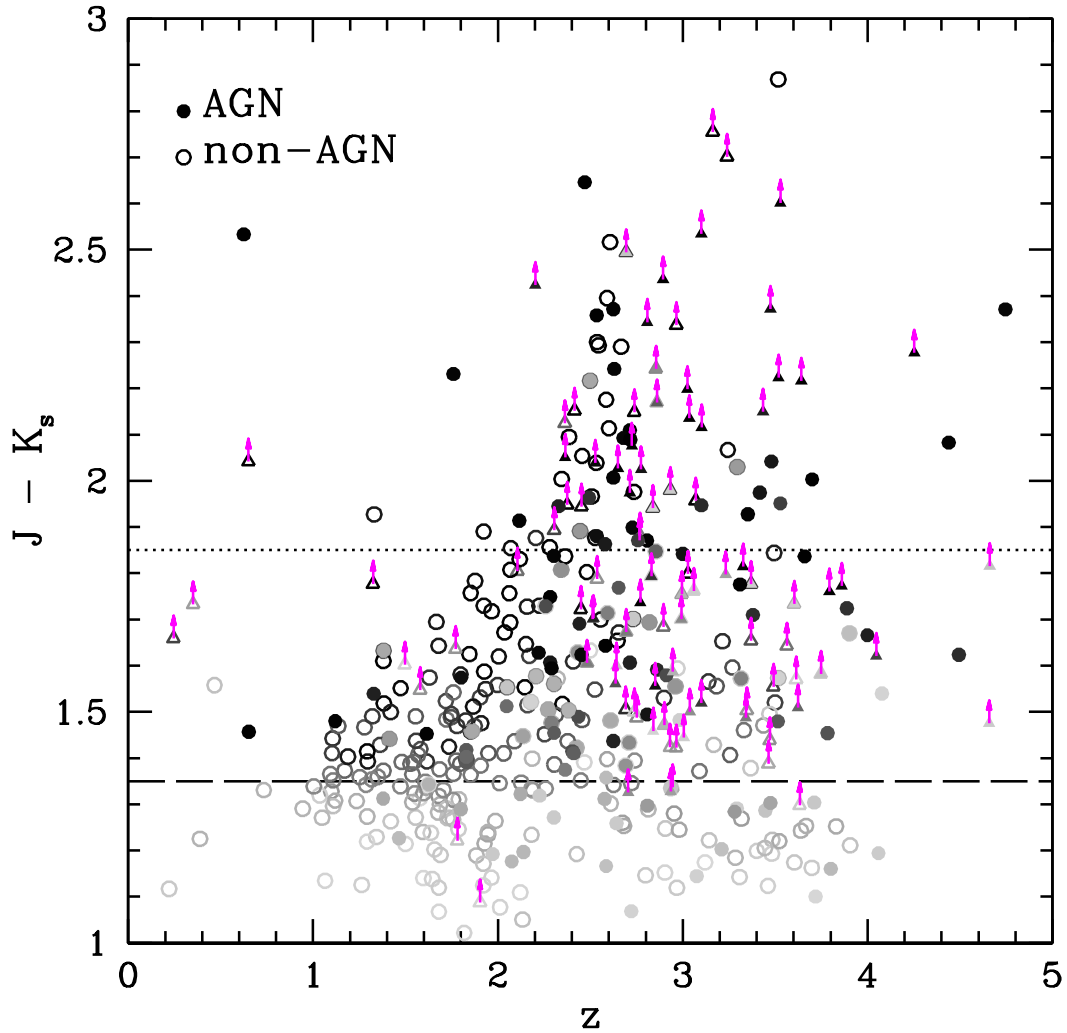


Figure 2.13: Variation of $J - K_s$ colour with redshift. The DRG criterion colour cut is shown as a dashed line. A 0.5 mag redder $J - K_s$ cut (dotted line) selects almost no $z < 2$ DRGs. Given the data cloud trend, objects at $z < 2$ with $J - K_s > 1.8$ are believed to have catastrophic z_{phot} estimates. The dot intensity refers to the source probability. AGN appear as filled symbols, while non-AGN as open symbols. J -undetected sources appear as triangles.

break in a galaxy SED only beyond $z \sim 1$. Any source having ERO-, IERO- or DRG-like colours at $z < 1$, has to be quite an obscured source. One of the most impressive examples for such type of object is that found by Afonso et al. (2001): a $z_{spec} = 0.67$ obscured dusty starburst dominated in the IR by the AGN in its core. At higher redshifts, at $z \sim 3$ both ERG and total trends present a noticeable rise in the AGN fraction. This is expected to be linked to the known peak of AGN activity at these redshifts (see for instance Osmer, 2004; Hopkins et al., 2007).

2.4.3 Radio Stacking

Another important aspect necessary to understanding the properties of ERGs is their SFR and the contribution of these populations to the overall $\dot{\rho}_*$ of the Universe. Dust obscuration is a serious source of uncertainty in estimating SFRs in ERGs from rest-frame ultraviolet luminosities. Radio emission is not affected by dust obscuration and can be used as a SF diagnostic. However, these galaxies are distant enough that even the deepest radio surveys are only sensitive to the brightest star forming systems (detection limits corresponding to several hundred $M_{\odot} \text{yr}^{-1}$ at $z \gtrsim 1$). Instead, stacking methods can be used to evaluate the statistical star-forming properties of ERGs. Stacking, as used here, is simply an “image stacking” procedure, where image sections (called stamps) centred at each desired source position are combined. The aim is to reach much lower noise levels, possibly providing a statistical detection of samples whose elements are individually undetected in the original image.

For the radio stacking analysis we have used the 1.4 GHz Australia Telescope Compact Array observations of this field⁸, reaching a uniform 14–17 μJy rms throughout the GOODSs field (see Afonso et al., 2006; Norris et al., 2006, for more details). Our adopted

⁸The VLA data was not preferred due to its high resolution. Although it may seem an advantage, it is more likely to be affected by bad source registration, producing flux loss in the stacking procedure.

stacking methodology can be summarized in the following steps.

First, using the radio image of the field, stamps of 60 by 60 pixels (equivalent to 120" by 120") were considered, allowing for a good sampling of the vicinity of each source, necessary to identify strong neighbouring sources that can bias the stacking.

Every stamp containing a radio source within an 18" radius from the central (ERG) position, was rejected, as the wings of a neighbouring radio detection can extend to the central part of the stamp. This rejects actual radio counterparts. However, the stacking is only used to estimate the average flux of the unidentified ERGs in the radio image, as the inclusion of radio detections would likely bias the final result. In this context the term "detection" does not only apply to the robust detections (roughly at a $> 4.5\sigma$ level), but also to "possible" detections (all remaining candidate radio sources at a $> 3\sigma$ level).

The remaining stamps for each sample of ERGs can then be stacked. Previous work often uses median stacking (e.g.: White et al., 2007), in an attempt to be robust to radio detections and high/low pixels. The penalty for this is the loss of sensitivity. Having removed all detections and possible detections from the list of stamps, a weighted average ($weight = rms^{-2}$) stacking procedure is followed. At each pixel position a rejection for outliers is implemented, rejecting high (low) pixels above (below) the 3σ (-3σ) value *for that pixel position*. The number of rejected pixels in the central region is always zero confirming that previous rejection steps work efficiently.

The final flux and the noise level are measured in the resulting stacked image. To evaluate the reliability of detections in the stacked images we performed Monte Carlo (MC) simulations. Random positions in the radio image were selected and stacked, following the procedure described above. Each of these positions were required to be farther than 6" from the known K_s sources, as we are interested in evaluating systematics of the radio image alone. Appropriate numbers of stacked stamps were used, to compare to the actual numbers of the ERG (sub-)samples. The procedure was repeated 10000 times for a given

number of stamps⁹. A stacked sample will be considered to have produced a reliable detection only if no MC simulation (among 10000) has resulted in a higher S/N value.

2.4.4 Star formation activity in ERGs

Following the procedure outlined above, we have performed a radio stacking analysis for different sub-groups within the ERG population. The radio data was stacked for each of the populations of EROs, IEROs, DRGs, pEROs, pDRGs, and cERGs. Within these samples, stacking of the radio images was also performed separately for AGN and non-AGN sub-populations. Since redshift estimates exist for the vast majority of the ERGs, stacking is performed separately for both low and high redshifts ($1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively). Besides minimizing biases in the stacking signal, due to different populations and different (radio) luminosities being sampled at different redshifts, this also allows us to search for a hint of any evolutionary trend. Given the incompleteness of the sample at the highest redshifts no attempt was made to perform a specific radio stacking analysis for $z > 3$ ERGs. Table 2.2 lists the number of sources considered in each of the sub-populations and those in each of the stacking steps referred in the previous section.

While the stacking procedure enables the average flux to be estimated from the radio-undetected sample ($< 3\sigma$ signal), the entire population should be considered when measuring the ERG contribution to the global $\dot{\rho}_*$ of the Universe. The approach adopted here was to consider all radio-undetected ERGs as having a radio flux given by the average signal from the stacking analysis, and all radio-detected ERGs¹⁰ to contribute with their measured flux density. The conversion from radio flux to radio luminosity is performed by using the assumed redshift (spectroscopic or photometric) and a radio spectral index of

⁹The number of stamps chosen for each set of 10'000 tries are: 10, 20, 30, 40, 50, 75, 100, 125, 150, 175, 200, 300, 400, 500, and 1000.

¹⁰For this purpose, radio-detections refer to signals above 3σ in the radio map; see Section 2.4.3.

Table 2.2: Robust Radio stacking of ERG populations

POP	N_{NOM}^a	N_{TOT}^a	$N_{<18''}^b$	$N_{3\sigma}^c$	N_{fin}^d
K_s					
$z12$	1803	1429	170	14	1230
$z12;nAGN$	1646	1307	147	11	1134
$z23$	781	512	63	7	435
$z23;nAGN$	518	318	32	4	276
EROs					
$z12$	451	357	51	7	294
$z12;nAGN$	396	316	42	6	264
$z23$	197	124	20	3	101
$z23;nAGN$	94	56	6	2	48
IEROs					
$z12$	188	133	20	4	106
$z12;nAGN$	160	114	15	4	92
$z23$	147	93	16	2	75
$z23;nAGN$	71	42	5	1	36
DRGs					
$z12$	148	73	9	2	61
$z12;nAGN$	126	61	6	2	52
$z23$	227	130	18	1	111
$z23;nAGN$	103	57	5	1	50

Table 2.2: (continued)

POP	N_{NOM}^a	N_{TOT}^a	$N_{<18''}^b$	$N_{3\sigma}^c$	N_{fin}^d
cERGs					
$z12$	97	49	6	2	40
$z12;nAGN$	81	40	3	2	34
$z23$	120	77	12	1	64
$z23;nAGN$	58	35	3	1	31
pEROs					
$z12$	287	199	29	2	166
$z12;nAGN$	258	179	24	1	152
$z23$	25	8	2	0	6
$z23;nAGN$	12	4	1	0	3
pDRGs					
$z12$	6	2	0	0	2
$z12;nAGN$	5	1	0	0	1
$z23$	64	21	1	0	19
$z23;nAGN$	23	8	0	0	7

Note.—The $z12$ and $z23$ abbreviations stand for $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively.

^a N_{NOM} and N_{TOT} are, respectively, the nominal counts and the effective total sources found in the sample. All the other columns take the source probability into account as does N_{TOT} .

^b Number of stamps with a radio detection within $18''$ of the ERG position, consequently rejected from the final stacking.

^c Number of stamps with a possible radio detection at the ERG position (signal between 3σ and $\sim 4.5\sigma$), also removed from the final stacking.

^d Final number of stamps included in the stacking.

$\alpha = 0.8$ ($S_\nu \propto \nu^{-\alpha}$, characteristic of a synchrotron dominated radio spectrum):

$$L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 4\pi d_L^2 S_{1.4\text{GHz}} 10^{-33} (1+z)^{\alpha-1} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$$

where d_L is the luminosity distance (cm) and $S_{1.4\text{GHz}}$ is the 1.4 GHz flux density (mJy).

The corresponding SFR is obtained using the calibration from Bell (2003):

$$SFR (M_\odot \text{ yr}^{-1}) = \begin{cases} 5.52 \times 10^{-22} L_{1.4\text{GHz}} & , \quad L > L_c \\ \frac{5.52 \times 10^{-22}}{0.1+0.9(\frac{L}{L_c})^{0.3}} L_{1.4\text{GHz}} & , \quad L \leq L_c \end{cases}$$

where $L_c = 6.4 \times 10^{21} \text{ W Hz}^{-1} = 10^{21.81} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$. The contribution to $\dot{\rho}_*$ was estimated for individual galaxies using the $1/V_{\text{max}}$ method (Schmidt, 1968):

$$\dot{\rho}_* = \sum \frac{\text{SFR}^i}{V_{\text{max}}^i}$$

where V_{max} is the volume in which a given source i would be possible to detect:

$$V_{\text{max}} = \Omega \frac{c}{H_0} \int_{z_1}^{z_2} \frac{d_L^2 \prod_i \eta_i}{(1+z)^2 \sqrt{\Omega_M (1+z)^3 + \Omega_\Lambda}} dz$$

The solid angle is given by Ω , while c stands for the speed of light, and H_0 for the Hubble constant. The luminosity distance again appears as d_L^2 , and $\prod_i \eta_i$ is the product of every incompleteness factors affecting the sample (e.g., sources rejected due to bright neighbours affecting their flux estimates). The value of z_1 is the lowest redshift probed (set to 1 in the lower redshift bin and 2 in the upper redshift bin). The value of z_2 is the minimum between the maximum redshift probed (z_{max} , set to 2 in the lower redshift bin and 3 in the upper redshift bin) and the redshift at which a given source would be detected, in the survey selection band, with the minimum source flux observed in the sample in which that same source is considered: $z_2 = \min\{z_{\text{max}}, z(f_{\text{min}})\}$. Hence, the final value of V_{max}

gives the volume in which a given type of galaxy would be detected, this is, $1/V_{\max}$ is the contribution to the density of sources by a given galaxy in a given redshift bin. It is expected a certain bias if strong clustering is observed between the sources in a sample, when compared to other galaxy samples. Even if z_{\min} and z_{\max} are set to be far apart, if the sample is physically restricted to a small volume, their fluxes will be comparable, implying a small difference between z_1 and z_2 , hence small volumes (large $1/V$ values). However, as seen in Figure 2.8, ERGs are well spread over the full $1 \leq z \leq 3$ redshift range, and they spread for almost four and three magnitudes (in observed K_s) at $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively.

The V_{\max} for each galaxy is estimated by using a k-correction derived from the galaxy's own SED (as given by the observed multi-wavelength photometry). Again, radio detected ERGs, contributed with their estimated intrinsic luminosity and SFR, derived with the assigned redshift estimate and its detected flux. In Figure 2.14 the SFR distribution of these sources is presented. Those classified as star-forming (16 in total), range from ~ 100 to $\sim 2000 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ (in reasonable agreement with those presented in Georgakakis et al., 2006). On the other hand, the luminosity and SFR estimates of radio-undetected ERGs were based on the resulting stacking signal of the sample and, likewise, the individual ERG redshift value.

The results are given in Table 2.3. For each ERG sub-population we list: (1) the ERG sub-population; (2) the total number of sources in the sample; (3) the final number of stamps included in the stacking; (4) the rms of the final stacked image; (5) the measured flux in the central region of the stacked image; (6) the respective S/N; (7) number of Monte-Carlo simulations (out of 10000) that resulted in higher S/N values, a measure of the reliability of the ERG detection (conservatively, whenever $N_{MC} > 0$ the stacking signal is considered spurious); (8) the average redshift for the sub-population; (9) the average radio luminosity for the radio non-detected sources – taking into account the stacking

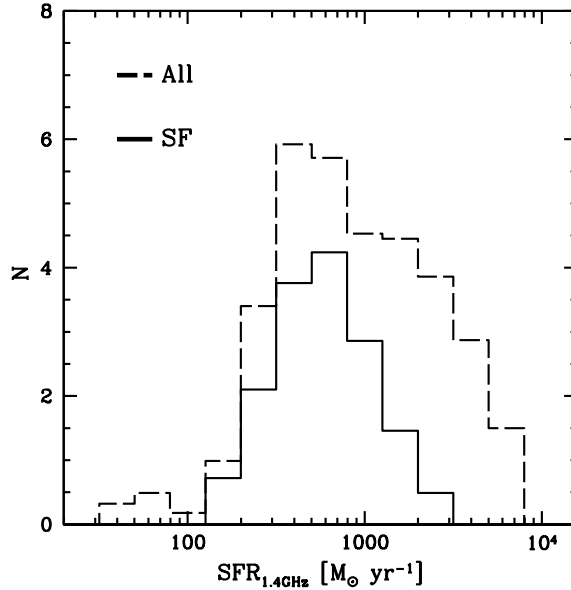


Figure 2.14: SFR distribution of the radio detected ERGs (considering any signal in the radio map with $> 3\sigma$). Dashed histograms show the overall distribution, while solid histograms refer to the sources considered as star-forming systems.

signal only – and, in parenthesis, the median for the entire sub-population (including radio detected sources); (10) the average SFR, for non-AGN samples, corresponding to the radio luminosities in column (9); (11) the resulting radio luminosity density ($\mathcal{L}_{1.4\text{GHz}}$); (12) the corresponding $\dot{\rho}_*$. For columns (9) to (12), the upper limits, corresponding to non-detections of the stacked signal ($N_{MC} > 0$), are estimated using the maximum S/N found on the corresponding MC simulations. No stacking is attempted for populations with less than 10 stamps.

In the table, two rows appear for each sub-population. The reason for this is the controversial inclusion of AGN sources when estimating the SFRs and $\dot{\rho}_*$. As referred above, AGN are potentially non-star-forming emitters at radio frequencies, thus being a strong source of bias. Yet, studies at the sub-mJy level point to a probable dominance of star-forming systems (Muxlow et al., 2005; Simpson et al., 2006; Kellermann et al., 2008; Smolčić et al., 2008; Seymour et al., 2008; Ibar et al., 2009; Padovani et al., 2009). Adding

Table 2.3: Properties of Extremely Red Galaxy populations from radio stacking analysis

POP	N_{TOT}	N_{fin}^a	r_{rms} [μJy]	$S_{1.4GHz}$ [μJy]	S/N	N_{MC}^b	\bar{z}	$\overline{\log(L_{1.4GHz})^c}$ [W Hz $^{-1}$]	\overline{SFR}^c [$M_{\odot} yr^{-1}$]	$\log(\mathcal{L}_{1.4GHz})^c$ [W Hz $^{-1}$ Mpc $^{-3}$]	$\dot{\rho}_*^d$ [$M_{\odot} yr^{-1}$ Mpc $^{-3}$]
K_s											
z12	1429	1230	0.501	1.102	2.200	0	1.39	22.0(22.1)	6(3)	19.8(20.2)	3.4e-02(8.0e-02)
z12;nAGN	1307	1134	0.533	1.118	2.096	0	1.38	22.0(22.0)	6(4)	19.8(20.1)	3.1e-02(6.1e-02)
z23	512	435	0.790	2.746	3.477	0	2.46	23.0(23.0)	57(49)	20.2(20.4)	8.7e-02(1.3e-01)
z23;nAGN	318	276	0.932	1.646	1.766	0	2.40	22.8(22.8)	32(27)	19.8(20.0)	3.2e-02(5.0e-02)
EROS											
z12	357	294	0.984	1.327	1.349	0	1.44	22.1(23.8)	8(5)	19.2(19.9)	9.5e-03(3.9e-02)
z12;nAGN	316	264	1.081	0.926	0.856	0	1.44	22.0(24.4)	6(3)	19.0(19.7)	5.9e-03(2.6e-02)
z23	124	101	1.705	6.610	3.877	0	2.44	23.4(23.4)	136(121)	20.0(20.2)	5.0e-02(8.3e-02)
z23;nAGN	56	48	2.186	5.029	2.301	1	2.36	<23.2(23.2)	<82(70)	<19.4(19.7)	<1.4e-02(2.6e-02)
IFROS											
z12	133	106	1.648	6.346	3.851	0	1.64	23.0(23.0)	52(42)	19.6(19.9)	2.1e-02(4.3e-02)
z12;nAGN	114	92	1.716	5.193	3.026	0	1.64	22.9(23.0)	42(36)	19.4(19.8)	1.5e-02(3.2e-02)
z23	93	75	1.900	6.726	3.540	0	2.45	23.4(23.4)	139(124)	19.9(20.0)	3.9e-02(6.1e-02)
z23;nAGN	42	36	2.503	4.116	1.644	21	2.37	<23.2(23.3)	<92(76)	<19.3(19.5)	<1.2e-02(1.8e-02)
DRGs											
z12	73	61	1.893	7.701	4.068	0	1.57	23.0(23.1)	59(37)	19.4(19.5)	1.3e-02(1.9e-02)
z12;nAGN	61	52	2.034	7.018	3.450	0	1.57	23.0(23.0)	53(32)	19.2(19.4)	9.7e-03(1.4e-02)
z23	130	111	1.555	5.295	3.405	0	2.50	23.31(23.33)	115(105)	19.9(20.0)	4.2e-02(6.0e-02)
z23;nAGN	57	50	2.225	4.964	2.231	7	2.43	<23.2(23.2)	<89(81)	<19.4(19.6)	<1.4e-02(2.0e-02)

Table 2.3: (continued)

POP	N_{TOT}	N_{fin}^a	rms	$S_{1.4GHz}$	S/N	N_{MC}^b	\bar{z}	$\log(\bar{L}_{1.4GHz})^c$	\overline{SFR}^c	$\log(\mathcal{L}_{1.4GHz})^c$	$\dot{\rho}_*^d$
			[μJy]	[μJy]				[$W Hz^{-1}$]	[$M_{\odot} yr^{-1}$]	[$W Hz^{-1} Mpc^{-3}$]	[$M_{\odot} yr^{-1} Mpc^{-3}$]
cERGs											
$z12$	49	40	2.420	8.203	3.390	0	1.64	23.1(23.2)	69(52)	19.3(19.5)	1.0e-02(1.7e-02)
$z12;nAGN$	40	34	2.626	7.095	2.702	0	1.66	23.0(23.1)	59(48)	19.1(19.3)	7.4e-03(1.2e-02)
$z23$	77	64	2.073	6.685	3.225	0	2.46	23.4(23.4)	140(125)	19.8(19.9)	3.2e-02(4.5e-02)
$z23;nAGN$	35	31	2.714	4.939	1.820	22	2.39	<23.3(23.3)	<104(90)	<19.3(19.4)	<1.1e-02(1.5e-02)
pEROs											
$z12$	199	166	1.311	-1.139	-0.869	2532	1.32	<22.2(22.3)	<10(7)	<19.1(19.4)	<6.4e-03(1.3e-02)
$z12;nAGN$	179	152	1.403	-1.366	-0.974	1924	1.32	<22.2(22.2)	<10(7)	<19.1(19.2)	<6.2e-03(8.5e-03)
$z23$	8	6	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
$z23;nAGN$	4	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
pDRGs											
$z12$	2	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
$z12;nAGN$	1	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
$z23$	21	19	2.957	2.231	0.754	1666	2.65	<23.5(23.5)	<176(174)	<19.3(19.3)	<1.1e-02(1.1e-02)
$z23;nAGN$	8	7	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...

Note. — The $z12$ and $z23$ abbreviations stand for $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively. The upper limits for Luminosity and SFR estimates, whenever $N_{MC} > 0$, are calculated considering the maximum S/N obtained in the respective set of MC simulations.

^a Final number of stamps included in the stacking, after the various rejection steps described in Section 2.4.3.

^b Number of MC simulations (out of 10000) that resulted in higher S/N values.

^c In parenthesis, the median value also taking into account radio detections ($> 3\sigma$) excluded from the stacking procedure (see Section 2.4.3).

^d In parenthesis, the estimated value of $\dot{\rho}_*$ taking into account radio detections ($> 3\sigma$) excluded from the stacking procedure (see Section 2.4.3).

to that, radio-selected AGN tend to appear in a whole different population from that of X-ray and IR-selected AGN (considered in this work), probably meaning a different accretion mode in radio-selected AGN (Griffith & Stern, 2010, and references therein), implying that the AGN selection in this work is actually too strict. Also, in this ERG sample, there is not a major presence of strong AGN (although the strongest do tend to show ERG colours) and Dunne et al. (2009) believe, based both in radio spectral indexes and comparison with submm-derived SFRs, there may be no significant bias when including AGN sources in the stacking of a sub-mJy radio population. However, in Section 2.4.2 it is shown that AGN are common in this sample, hence, even if not dominant, there might exist a significant bias when computing the contribution $\dot{\rho}_*$ of ERGs to the overall star-formation history of the universe. The two extreme scenarios for this are: (i) the non-AGN population presents the best estimate possible, or (ii) the combined non-AGN/AGN provides an upper limit for the contribution of ERGs, while the non-AGN indicates the lower limit of $\dot{\rho}_*$. Option (ii) also provides an upper limit for the star-formation happening in AGN hosts, which has been proven to occur at significant levels (e.g., Silverman et al., 2009) and even at rates up to thousands of $M_\odot \text{yr}^{-1}$ (e.g., Dunlop et al. 1994; Ivison 1995; Hughes et al. 1997 and Shao et al. 2010). It should be stressed, nevertheless, that no sources with $\log(L_{1.4\text{GHz}}[\text{W Hz}^{-1}]) > 24.5$ were included in the calculations of the values presented in Table 2.3.

The analysis suggests that the bulk of the ERO population have modest SF activity. At $1 \leq z < 2$, where most EROs are found, the average SFR is below a few¹¹ $M_\odot \text{yr}^{-1}$. Only at $2 \leq z \leq 3$, EROs – many (81%) being simultaneously classified as DRGs – reveal intense average SFRs, up to $140 M_\odot \text{yr}^{-1}$, entering the Luminous IR Galaxies (LIRG) regime. This suggests that at low- z the passive/evolved systems represent a significant

¹¹The significantly greater value of the population median SFR is a result of the adopted weighted median, applied to both stacked and radio detected samples. The values resulting from the stacking will have much greater relative errors, resulting in significantly smaller weights when compared to the radio detected sources at $> 300 M_\odot \text{yr}^{-1}$.

fraction of the ERO population (56%, see pEROs discussion ahead), as opposed to the high- z regime where the dusty systems dominate. DRGs and IEROs at $1 \leq z < 2$ show starburst-like SFRs, $\sim 50 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. It should be noted that practically all IEROs and DRGs at these redshifts are also classified as EROs, explaining the similar results for the cERGs. This also supports previous claims of a dusty starburst nature for these sources (Smail et al., 2002; Papovich et al., 2006; Wuyts et al., 2009c). At $2 \leq z \leq 3$, none of the non-AGN ERG populations is successful to achieve a stacking signal, being indicative of $\lesssim 80 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ SFRs.

The overall SFR for the DRG population is comparable to what is found in the literature (Rubin et al., 2004; Förster Schreiber et al., 2004; Knudsen et al., 2005; Reddy et al., 2005). Papovich et al. (2006) studied 153 DRGs selected also in the GOODSs to a limiting magnitude of $K_{s,TOT} < 23AB$. They find an average SFR for the DRG population at $1 \lesssim z \lesssim 3$ of $200 - 400 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$, which is higher than our result. However, the SFR estimate is based in the $24 \mu\text{m}$ flux alone, method which has recently been shown, using *HerschelSpaceObservatory* data, to overestimate the actual SFR values (Nordon et al., 2010; Rodighiero et al., 2010, but see also Papovich et al. 2007).

The low average SFR for EROs at $1 \leq z < 2$ is due to the numerous pEROs (199, 56% of the $1 \leq z < 2$ EROs): the stacking analysis of pEROs found in this redshift range fails to produce any signal. This population likely corresponds to the passively evolving component of EROs. On the other hand, pDRGs at $2 \leq z \leq 3$ must also be characterized by relatively low SFRs: although the stacking analysis is unable to give such indication (only limiting the average SFR to $\lesssim 170 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$), pDRGs are the sources responsible for the observed difference of the average SFR of cERGs and that of DRGs in this redshift range. Having this, although the SFR upper limit for pDRGs is rather high, one can adopt $\sim 100 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ based on the DRG stacking. This is more likely to be close to the real SFR value.

The $\dot{\rho}_*$ behaviour for ERGs roughly follows the general trend for star-forming galaxies, increasing from $1 \leq z < 2$ to $2 \leq z < 3$ (Figure 2.15¹²). Overall, the ERG contribution to the total $\dot{\rho}_*$ jumps from $\sim 10\%$ in the low redshift bin (IEROs contribution), up to $\sim 40\%$ at $2 \leq z \leq 3$, where EROs are the highest contributors (up to $\dot{\rho}_* \sim 0.09 \text{ M}_\odot \text{ yr}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$). The range in $\dot{\rho}_*$ values for the ERO population clearly makes the point on whether one should include the AGN population or not, as the overall $\dot{\rho}_*$ is ~ 3 times higher than the upper limit for the non-AGN population. IEROs are the population on which it is impossible to draw any conclusion on evolution, yet they are clearly the biggest contributors at low redshift. DRGs tend to be the ERG population to contribute the least in the full $1 \leq z \leq 3$ range.

2.4.5 Dust content

Knowing that radio is unaffected by dust obscuration and UV is, both regimes are compared to give an estimate of the amount of dust present in these sources. Adopting the radio SFR estimates as the true values, we estimate how much obscuration is affecting the UV based results. The time gap between the emission at these two spectrum regimes is considered negligible (a few Myr at most). The hot stars strongly emitting in the UV will quickly reach the SNe stage, at which synchrotron emission is produced.

The calibration used to calculate UV SFRs was that given by Dahlen et al. (2007) based on the rest-frame 2800 Å Luminosity. This was obtained through interpolation of the photometry bands available in the FIREWORKS catalogue. The ratio of the observed UV luminosity (L_{OBS}) and that necessary to justify the radio luminosity (L_{INT} , intrinsic

¹²The error bars in the figure take into account cosmic variance as calculated in: <http://casa.colorado.edu/~trenti/CosmicVariance.html>

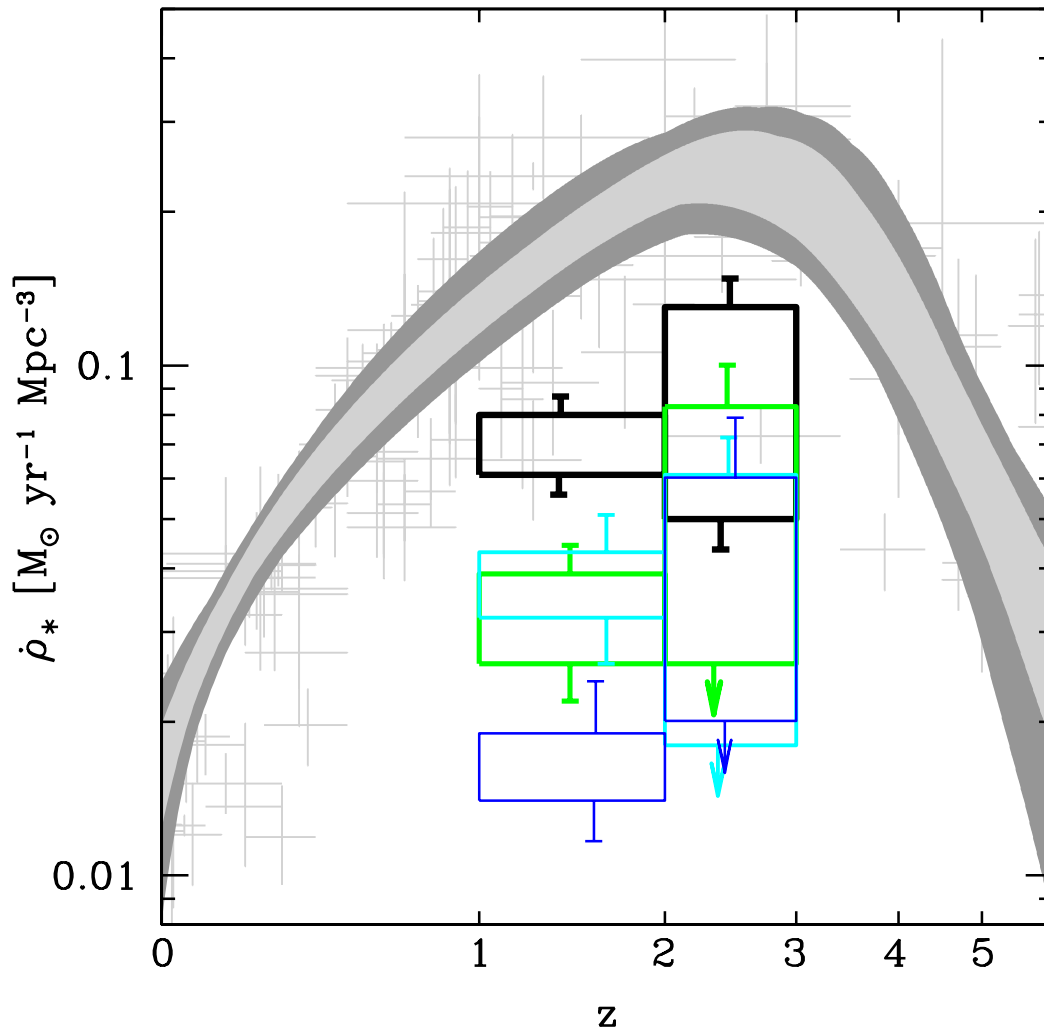


Figure 2.15: Contribution of ERG populations to the total $\dot{\rho}_*$ at $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$. K_s -selected sources are denoted by black boxes, EROs by green boxes, IEROs by cyan boxes, and DRGs by blue boxes. The compilation of Hopkins & Beacom (2006) is displayed for reference (grey crosses and shaded region, correspond to the $\dot{\rho}_*$ 1σ and 3σ confidence regions). Down pointing arrows indicate upper limits.

luminosity) provides the obscuration affecting the UV:

$$A_{2800} = -2.5 \times \log(L_{OBS}/L_{INT})$$

Having this, we can now obtain $E(B-V)$ knowing that:

$$A_{2800} = E(B - V)_{stellar} \times k_{2800}$$

where $E(B-V)_{stellar} = 0.44 \times E(B-V)_{gas}$ and k_{2800} is the extinction coefficient at 2800 Å. This can be obtained from an equation like that provided in Calzetti et al. (2000):

$$k_{\lambda} = 2.659 \times \left(-2.156 + \frac{1.509}{\lambda} - \frac{0.198}{\lambda^2} + \frac{0.011}{\lambda^3} \right) + R_V$$

with $\lambda = 0.28 \mu\text{m}$ and $R_V = 4.05$, as the Absolute to Relative Attenuation Ratio. The extinction coefficient is estimated to be $k_{2800} = 7.26$.

The results are presented in columns 2–4 of Table 2.4. Average values of $E(B-V) \sim 0.5$ – 0.6 are in agreement with the literature (e.g., Cimatti et al., 2002a; Bergström & Wiklind, 2004; Papovich et al., 2006; Georgakakis et al., 2006), although slightly lower. This owes to the fact that we are using rest-frame UV detected, thus biasing toward less obscured sources. Nonetheless, they already show significant dust content. In this sample (as what happens in Georgakakis et al., 2006), the highest level of obscuration is observed for a radio detected source: $E(B-V) \sim 1$.

2.4.6 Mass Functions

ERGs are known to be among the most massive objects at high redshifts ($> 5 \times 10^{10} M_{\odot}$, Georgakakis et al., 2006). However, not only mass estimates are very model dependent (models which improve with time), but previous work was based in shallower and/or less

Table 2.4: The dust content of ERG populations

POP	$\overline{\text{SFR}}_{\text{UV}}^a$	$\overline{\text{SFR}}_{1.4\text{GHz}}$	\overline{A}_{2800}^b	$\overline{E(B-V)}^c$
	$[\text{M}_{\odot} \text{yr}^{-1}]$	$[\text{M}_{\odot} \text{yr}^{-1}]$	$[\text{AB}]$	$[\text{AB}]$
\mathbf{K}_s				
$z12$	4(2)	6(3)	0.9(1.3)	0.1(0.2)
$z12; nAGN$	4(2)	6(4)	0.9(1.3)	0.1(0.2)
$z23$	9(4)	57(49)	2.2(2.1)	0.3(0.3)
$z23; nAGN$	10(5)	32(27)	1.5(1.7)	0.2(0.2)
\mathbf{EROs}				
$z12$	2(1)	8(5)	1.7(4.8)	0.2(0.7)
$z12; nAGN$	2(2)	6(3)	1.3(5.3)	0.2(0.7)
$z23$	6(5)	136(121)	3.7(3.6)	0.5(0.5)
$z23; nAGN$	5(3)	<82(70)	<3.2(3.4)	<0.4(0.5)
\mathbf{IEROs}				
$z12$	2(1)	52(42)	3.7(4.0)	0.5(0.6)
$z12; nAGN$	2(1)	42(36)	3.5(3.7)	0.5(0.5)
$z23$	5(6)	139(124)	3.8(3.6)	0.5(0.5)
$z23; nAGN$	5(4)	<92(76)	<3.2(3.4)	<0.4(0.5)
\mathbf{DRGs}				
$z12$	2(1)	59(37)	3.9(3.9)	0.5(0.5)
$z12; nAGN$	2(1)	53(32)	3.8(3.6)	0.5(0.5)
$z23$	6(5)	115(105)	3.5(3.5)	0.5(0.5)
$z23; nAGN$	5(4)	<89(81)	<3.2(3.4)	<0.4(0.5)

Table 2.4: (continued)

POP	$\overline{\text{SFR}}_{\text{UV}}^a$	$\overline{\text{SFR}}_{1.4\text{GHz}}$	\overline{A}_{2800}^b	$\overline{E(B-V)}^c$
	[$M_{\odot}\text{yr}^{-1}$]	[$M_{\odot}\text{yr}^{-1}$]	[AB]	[AB]
cERGs				
$z12$	2(1)	69(52)	4.1(4.4)	0.6(0.6)
$z12;nAGN$	2(1)	59(48)	3.9(4.2)	0.5(0.6)
$z23$	5(6)	140(125)	3.7(3.6)	0.5(0.5)
$z23;nAGN$	6(4)	<104(90)	<3.3(3.3)	<0.5(0.5)
pEROs				
$z12$	2(2)	<10(7)	<1.9(2.7)	<0.3(0.4)
$z12;nAGN$	2(2)	<10(7)	<2.0(1.9)	<0.3(0.3)
$z23$	...	...	...	...
$z23;nAGN$	...	...	...	...
pDRGs				
$z12$	...	...	...	...
$z12;nAGN$	...	...	...	...
$z23$	6(2)	<176(174)	<4.0(3.8)	<0.5(0.5)
$z23;nAGN$	...	...	...	...

Note. — The $z12$ and $z23$ abbreviations stand for $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively.

^a Using the conversion from Dahlen et al. (2007).

^b Estimated directly from the comparison between UV and radio SFR estimates.

^c Using the conversion from Calzetti et al. (2000).

numerous samples and/or different redshift ranges (van Dokkum et al., 2006; Georgakakis et al., 2006; Marchesini et al., 2007; Grazian et al., 2007). Here, recent estimates for the FIREWORKS sample are considered in order to assess the mass distributions of these ERG populations and their contribution to the total galaxy ρ_M at high redshift. The mass estimates are those referred in Marchesini et al. (2009), and follow the prescription described in Wuyts et al. (2007). Briefly, (Bruzual & Charlot, 2003, BC03) models were fitted to the observed optical-to-8 μm SED with the HYPERZ¹³ stellar population fitting code, version 1.1 (Bolzonella et al., 2000). Different star formation histories (SFHs) were considered (single stellar population without dust, a constant star formation history with dust, and an exponentially declining SFH with an e-folding time-scale of 300 Myr with dust). A_V values ranged from 0 to 4 in step of 0.2 mag, and the attenuation law of Calzetti et al. (2000) is considered. In this work a Salpeter initial mass function¹⁴ (IMF) is adopted for consistency with the work done in the previous sections. The values of the galaxy stellar mass consider the masses of living stars plus stellar remnants instead of the total mass of stars formed, thus discarding the mass returned to the ISM by evolved stars via stellar winds and supernova explosions. For a detailed study on the systematic uncertainties obtained by adopting different set of parameters and models see Muzzin et al. (2009) and Marchesini et al. (2009). For example, using Charlot & Bruzual (in preparation) models instead of BC03, differing on the treatment of TP-AGB stellar phase, gives a factor of 0.75 lower galaxy stellar mass values. Mass estimates were considered only when obtained with reliable photometry (a pixel weight of $w > 0.3$ from UV to 8 μm) and if the source has less than 50% probability to be associated with an unobscured AGN, as higher probabilities may imply a high contribution from non-stellar emission to the galaxy SED, thus resulting in misleading mass estimates.

¹³<http://webast.ast.obs-mip.fr/hyperz/>

¹⁴Marchesini et al. (2009) adopt a pseudo-Kroupa IMF by scaling down the stellar masses by a factor of 1.6.

Again, the ERGs are separated into sub-populations and redshift intervals, and AGN and non-AGN populations. The AGN/non-AGN separation is important. Although Marchesini et al. (2009) stress that AGN IR emission does not significantly alter the mass estimates, their conclusion is based on a comparison with re-computed mass estimates without considering the 5.8 and 8.0 μm IRAC channels. However, in an error-weighted SED fitting procedure, these channels will unavoidably count less due to their tendentially higher photometric errors. Also, the higher number of optical filters, and their tendentially smaller photometric errors, imply that the nIR and IR filters will tend to be less considered when compared to optical ones (see Rodighiero et al., 2010, for a tentative correction). In Chapter 4, we show as well that, depending on the source redshift, H to 4.5 μm bands may also be affected by AGN emission. Although it may not produce a scatter in the stellar mass estimate, a dangerous upward scaling bias may happen. Finally, it is known that the fraction of AGN increases both with redshift and stellar mass (Papovich et al., 2006; Kriek et al., 2007; Daddi et al., 2007). This is seen in Figures 2.11 and 2.16, where in the latter X-ray identified AGN tend to be hosted by $\gtrsim 10^{10} M_{\odot}$ massive galaxies. As one considers higher redshifts, the sample is restricted to higher mass galaxies, hence producing an apparent rise in the AGN fraction of the sample (again supporting the high AGN hosts fractions of 25–40% found for ERG populations).

Mass densities are obtained considering the $1/V_{\text{max}}$ method as previously described. The results are presented in Table 2.5, and compared to the overall tendency observed in the universe in Figure 2.17. The ρ_{M} for the total K_s -selected sample are also estimated in the considered redshift intervals and are in agreement with those presented by Marchesini et al. (2009). ERGs may constitute up to 60–70% of the total mass of the $1 < z < 3$ universe, although they represent only 25% of the $1 < z < 3$ K_s selected sample. The average and median mass estimates are roughly equal among all three ERG populations in the full $1 \leq z \leq 3$ range. At $1 \leq z < 2$, one can consider the ERO population to

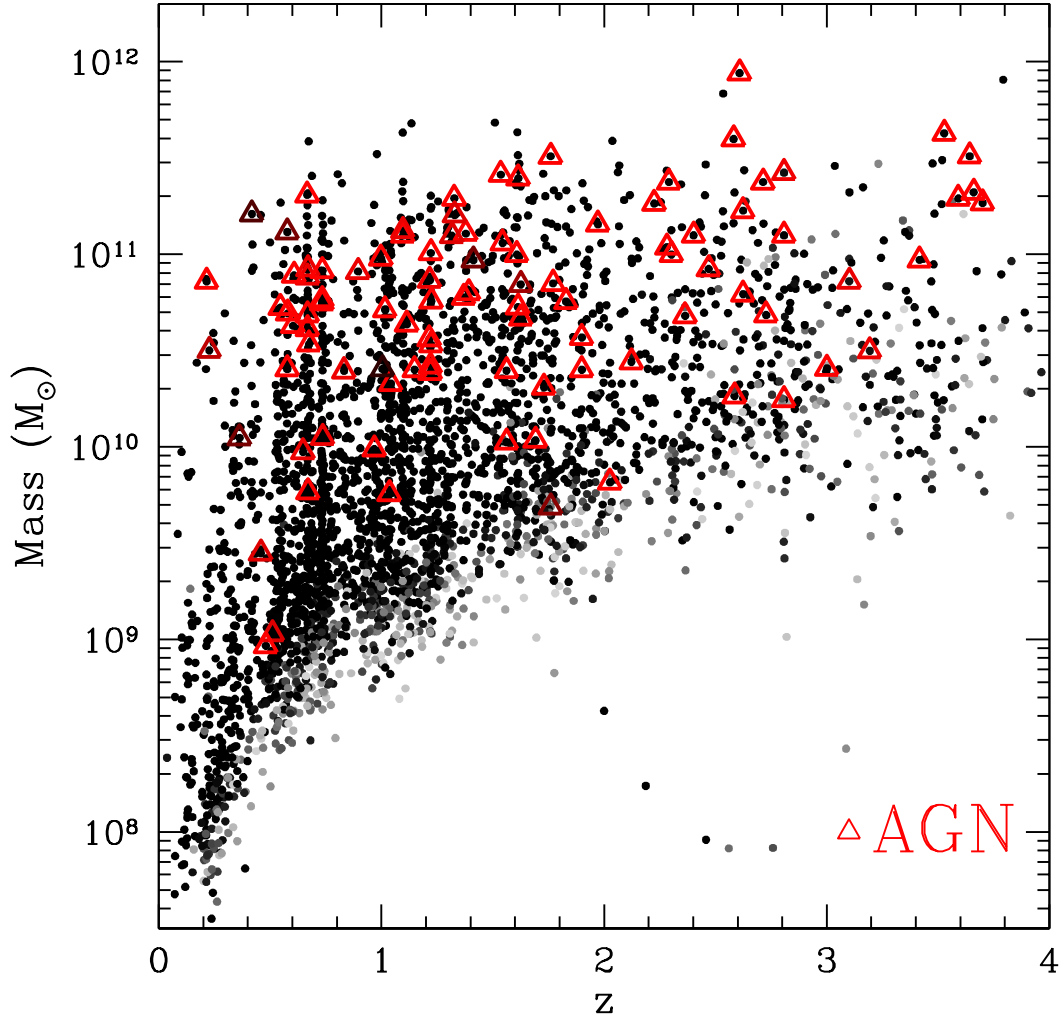


Figure 2.16: Distribution of sources in the z -mass space. X-ray identified AGN (as red triangles) are overlaid for reference, showing that they are mostly hosted by $2 \times 10^{10} M_{\odot}$ galaxies. The darker the points, the higher is the probability to have $K_s < 23.8$. The redder the triangle, the higher is the probability to be a source with an X-ray AGN with $K_s < 23.8$.

be complementary composed mainly by IEROs and pEROs. Figure 2.17 shows that both populations comprise comparable ρ_M values, representing together $\sim 60\%$ of the Universe mass at $1 \leq z < 2$. These mass densities estimates are in agreement with what is seen for $1 < z < 2$ EROs (Georgakakis et al., 2006) and $2 < z < 3$ DRGs (van Dokkum et al., 2006; Rudnick et al., 2006; Grazian et al., 2006a).

Figure 2.18 shows the mass functions (MFs) of the overall K_s -selected galaxy population and for the different ERG populations. On the overall K_s -selected MF, one can distinguish a dip at $\log(M/M_\odot) \sim 10^{10.4}$ referred in the literature at $z < 1$ (e.g., Drory et al., 2009; Pozzetti et al., 2010). This confirms that the feature is present even to higher redshifts. Also, there seems to exist another dip at even higher masses ($\log(M/M_\odot) \sim 10^{11}$), resulting from the different contributions of early and late type galaxies (see Chapter 4), which seems to be stronger for IEROs and DRGs.

It is remarkable to see that at the highest mass bins ($M > 10^{11} M_\odot$), the contribution of ERGs to the overall mass densities reaches 100%. There are evidences for an evolutionary trend. Note that, while at high- z , all three populations equally dominate the high mass bins (due to the overlap between them), at low- z , only the EROs maintain their strong contribution to the total mass function of K_s selected sources. However, all three present comparable stellar masses (Table 2.5). The reader should recall that low- z DRGs and low- z IEROs are also mostly classified as EROs. What is likely to be happening is that part of the star-forming population seen at high redshifts and selected by all three criteria, have at low- z extinguished their fuel and are gradually missed by the IERO and DRG criteria¹⁵, turning into passive evolved systems (becoming pEROs). The remainder still have some obscured star-formation happening, producing the characteristic red colours in all three ERG criteria, enabling the selection as IEROs and/or DRGs. This effect was first explored at $z < 2$ by Pozzetti & Mannucci (2000) using an $i - K$ versus $J - K$ colour-

¹⁵The DRG criterion is even more affected because, at $z > 2$, it relies on the 4000 Å break being redshifted into the spectral range between J and K_s bands, which, of course, does not happen at $z < 2$.

Table 2.5: Mass and Specific SFRs of the Extremely Red Galaxy

POP	$\log(\overline{M})^a$ [M_{\odot}]	$\log(\rho_M)^b$ [$M_{\odot} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$]	$\log(\overline{\text{sSFR}})^c$ [yr^{-1}]
K_s			
<i>z</i> 12	10.1(10.6)	8.1(8.2)	-9.3(-9.3)
<i>z</i> 12; <i>nAGN</i>	10.1(10.6)	8.1(8.1)	-9.3(-9.3)
<i>z</i> 23	10.4(10.4)	7.8(7.9)	-8.6(-8.5)
<i>z</i> 23; <i>nAGN</i>	10.3(10.4)	7.5(7.5)	-8.8(-8.7)
EROs			
<i>z</i> 12	10.7(11.1)	7.9(8.0)	-9.9(-8.9)
<i>z</i> 12; <i>nAGN</i>	10.7(11.1)	7.9(7.9)	-10.0(-8.4)
<i>z</i> 23	11.0(11.1)	7.6(7.7)	-8.8(-8.9)
<i>z</i> 23; <i>nAGN</i>	11.0(11.1)	7.3(7.3)	<-9.1(-9.0)
IEROs			
<i>z</i> 12	10.8(11.3)	7.6(7.6)	-9.1(-9.0)
<i>z</i> 12; <i>nAGN</i>	10.8(11.5)	7.5(7.5)	-9.2(-9.0)
<i>z</i> 23	11.0(11.4)	7.6(7.6)	-8.9(-8.9)
<i>z</i> 23; <i>nAGN</i>	11.1(11.1)	7.3(7.3)	<-9.1(-9.1)
DRGs			
<i>z</i> 12	10.7(11.1)	7.2(7.3)	-9.0(-9.1)
<i>z</i> 12; <i>nAGN</i>	10.7(11.1)	7.1(7.1)	-9.0(-9.1)
<i>z</i> 23	10.9(11.0)	7.6(7.6)	-8.9(-8.9)
<i>z</i> 23; <i>nAGN</i>	11.0(11.1)	7.3(7.3)	<-9.0(-9.0)

Table 2.5: (continued)

POP	$\log(\overline{M})^a$ [M_\odot]	$\log(\rho_M)^b$ [$M_\odot \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$]	$\log(\overline{\text{sSFR}})^c$ [yr^{-1}]
cERGs			
$z12$	10.9(11.2)	7.1(7.2)	-9.0(-9.0)
$z12; nAGN$	10.8(11.1)	7.0(7.1)	-9.0(-9.1)
$z23$	11.1(11.1)	7.5(7.5)	-8.9(-9.0)
$z23; nAGN$	11.1(11.2)	7.2(7.2)	<-9.1(-9.1)
pEROs			
$z12$	10.7(11.1)	7.7(7.7)	<-9.8(-9.6)
$z12; nAGN$	10.7(11.1)	7.6(7.6)	<-9.75(-9.8)
$z23$	10.7(11.0)	6.2(6.2)	...
$z23; nAGN$	10.6(10.7)	5.8(5.9)	...
pDRGs			
$z12$	9.7(9.6)	5.1(5.1)	...
$z12; nAGN$	9.5(9.6)	4.5(4.5)	...
$z23$	10.6(10.8)	6.5(6.5)	<-8.4(-8.4)
$z23; nAGN$	10.5(10.7)	6.0(6.0)	...

Note. — The $z12$ and $z23$ abbreviations stand for $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$, respectively. The upper limits for Luminosity and SFR estimates, whenever $N_{MC} > 0$ (Table 2.3), are calculated considering the maximum S/N obtained in the respective set of MC simulations.

^a The number in parenthesis indicates the median value. Errors at the 1σ level reach 0.2–0.4.

^b The number in parenthesis indicate the estimates when accounting for the radio detected sources. Errors are at the 0.1–0.2 level and account for cosmic variation).

^c In parenthesis, the median value also taking into account radio detections ($> 3\sigma$) excluded from the stacking procedure (see Section 2.4.3).

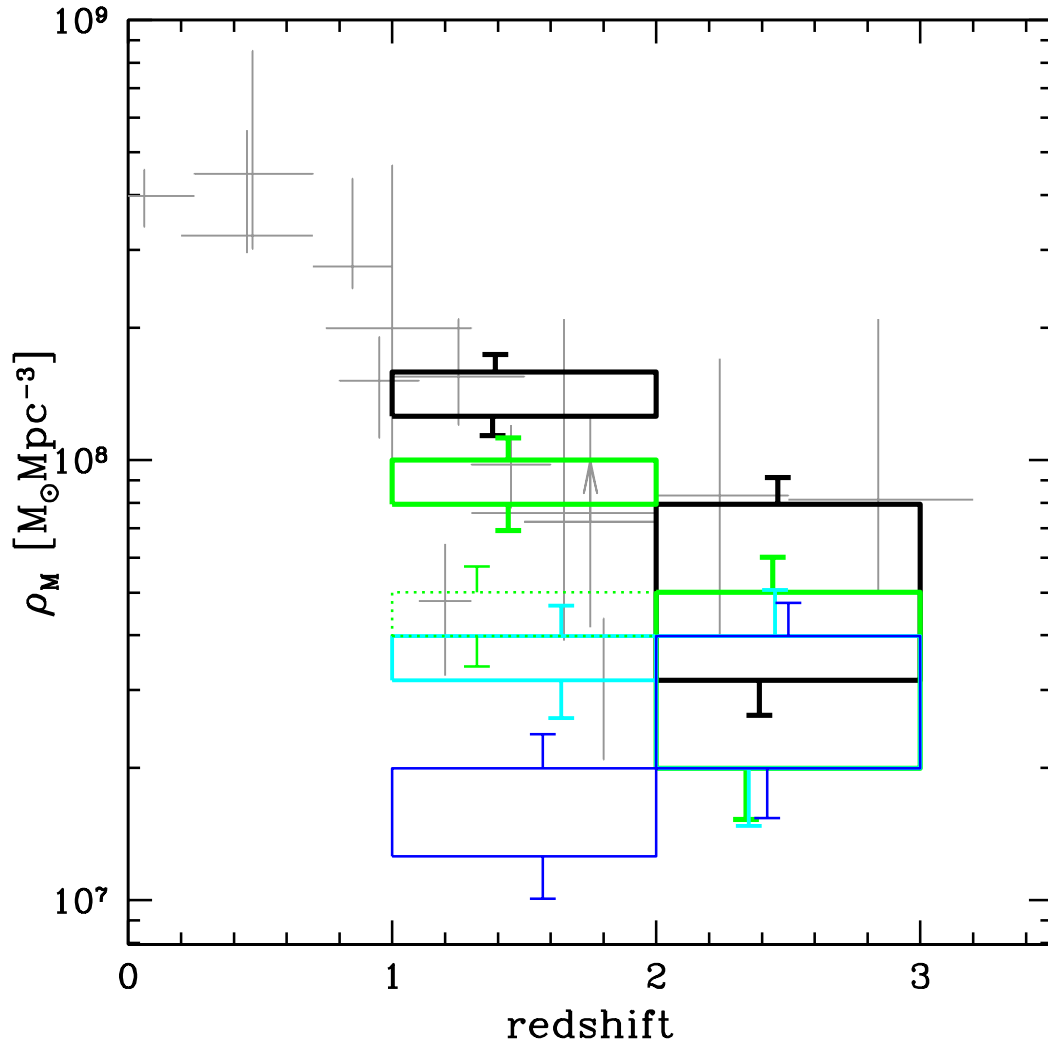


Figure 2.17: Contribution of ERG populations to the total ρ_M at $1 \leq z < 2$ and $2 \leq z \leq 3$. EROs are denoted by green boxes, IEROs by cyan boxes, and DRGs by blue boxes. Also, pEROs are denoted by the dotted green box at $1 \leq z < 2$. The compilation from the literature (Cole et al., 2000; Fontana et al., 2003, 2004; Glazebrook et al., 2004) is displayed for reference (grey crosses).

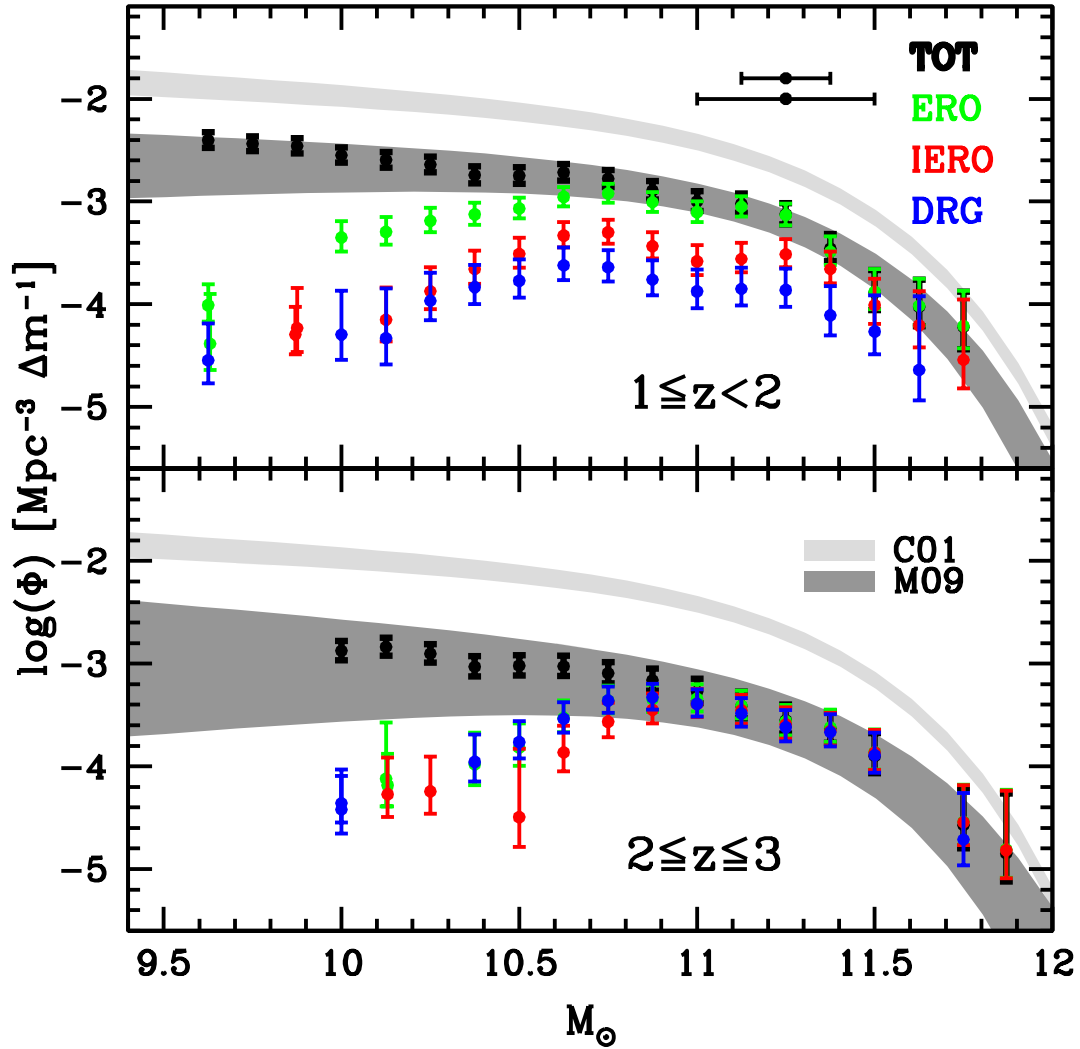


Figure 2.18: Mass functions for the K_s population (in black), EROs (green), IEROs (red), and DRGs (blue), at $1 \leq z < 2$ (upper panel) and $2 \leq z \leq 3$ (lower panel). A moving bin of width $0.25 \log(M_{\odot})$ was used with steps of $0.125 \log(M_{\odot})$. Whenever the number of sources in each bin was small, a large bin was used ($0.5 \log(M_{\odot})$). The bin widths are shown at the top. The shaded regions are mass functions derived from Cole et al. (2001, at $z \sim 0.1$) and Marchesini et al. (2009, at $1.3 < z < 2$ and $2 < z < 3$), respectively, light-grey and dark-grey regions.

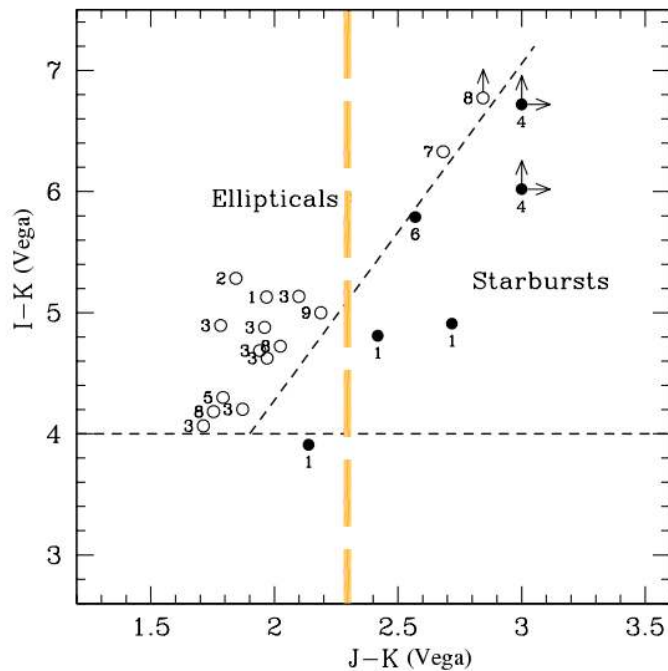


Figure 2.19: The original Figure 4 from Pozzetti & Mannucci (2000) with a vertical dashed line over-plotted representing the adopted DRG cut in this thesis. Note the colour axis are in Vega system. The region referred in the text is the triangle to the left of the long dashed line.

colour space to separate early-type galaxies from dusty starbursts. However, they found necessary to have a diagonal cut extending the selection of dusty starbursts to bluer $J - K$ colours (Figure 2.19), which Georgakakis et al. (2006) confirmed (and also Mannucci et al., 2002; Cimatti et al., 2003, through a similar $R - K$ versus $J - K$ diagram, but see Pierini et al. 2004). Hence, some star-forming systems are expected to be included in the pERO population, yet, from the radio estimates, they are not dominant in the pERO population. The next section will reveal more details on this subject.

2.4.7 Morphology

Galaxy morphology can be an efficient way to break the photometric degeneracy between the passively evolved and dusty starburst populations. This field of research has improved enormously, specially with the observations provided by the 20-year old *HST*. Its high resolution and sensitivity enabled the scientific community to improve the study on the “morphology evolution versus galaxy evolution” relation up to high redshifts. Still, it is a field where a lot is still left to be discovered. In a time where the number of galaxies per survey reaches millions, the community turned its efforts to develop morphological (non-)parametric criteria, avoiding the time-consuming and subjective visual inspection. A set of morphological criteria, frequently used by the astronomy community, rely on the Concentration, Asymmetry, and Smoothness (CAS, Conselice, 2003), Gini and M_{20} (Lotz et al., 2006) coefficients (see Lotz et al., 2004; Conselice et al., 2008, for a comparison between these parameters).

Many are the combinations between the five coefficients which are believed to separate different types of galaxy systems, from early-type galaxies to highly disturbed systems. However, for this high- z ERG sample, the simple criterion applied to $z \sim 1.5$ and $z \sim 4$ galaxy samples by Lotz et al. (2006) will be the one adopted: $M_{20} > -1.1$ for merger candidates, and $M_{20} < -1.8$ and $G > 5.7$ for bulge dominated galaxies. The second-order moment values of the 20% brightest galaxy pixels, M_{20} , owes its name to the way it is computed: it is the product between the flux and the squared distance (to galaxy centre) of the 20% brightest pixels in a galaxy light profile (normalised by the second-order moment for the entire, 100%, galaxy pixels Lotz et al., 2004). Hence, M_{20} traces any off-centre bright distributions in a galaxy profile (either bright star-formation clumps, bars, spiral arms, or star clusters). In the high redshift universe, high M_{20} values are thus expected to be related to star-formation clumps, features taken as a hint of merger activity. The Gini index, G , has its origins in demographic studies to provide the degree of wealth distribution within a

population. Smaller Gini values indicate a more uneven distribution of pixels (Lotz et al., 2004).

The morphology code used in this work was that developed by Lotz et al. (2004, 2006) (the reader is referred to these works to fully understand the concepts adopted ahead). The images considered for the study are those from the latest Great Observatories Origin Deep Survey South (GOODSs) ACS-*HST* release (v1.9). The total drizzled image was divided into overlapping cells to avoid the loss of galaxies at the boundaries. The value adopted for those galaxies with more than one measurement were the estimates with the best signal-to-noise ratio (S/N). SExtractor was used to provide the segmentation files and the input catalogues to the code. Only sources with a signal to noise (S/N) detection of $S/N > 2.5$ and effective radius (R_{eff}) of $R_{eff} > 2 \times \text{FWHM}$ (Full Width at Half Maximum) are considered for the morphology study, as done by Lotz et al. (2004, 2006).

In order for a fair comparison between the lower and upper redshift intervals, two bands are considered to constraint the same observed rest-frame wavelength: the V_{606} band for the $1 \leq z < 2$ redshift bin and z_{850} band for the $2 \leq z \leq 3$ redshift bin¹⁶. Figures 2.20 and 2.21 show the Gini- M_{20} space and the difference between low and high redshift sources in each of the ERG populations. One of the main features to point out is the ERO distribution, clearly showing a wide range of values in both redshift ranges. Note that, at low redshift, there is a significant part of the ERO population close to or in the upper left region (reserved for bulge dominated sources Lotz et al., 2006), whereas IEROs and DRGs fall at higher M_{20} with fractions of almost 50% inside the region where merger candidates are expected ($M_{20} > -1.1$, Lotz et al., 2006). Again, the strong similarity between all samples is observed at the highest redshifts. This figure strongly supports the scenario proposed in the previous section, where part of the high redshift population (seen here with smaller M_{20} and higher Gini values) becomes less active, thus becoming pEROs

¹⁶This redshift-band combination is based on the rest-frame $\sim 2800 \text{ \AA}$ wavelength being redshifted into these specific bands at these redshift intervals.

at low redshifts. The fact that the Gini- M_{20} values of pEROs are comparable to those for the high- z ERG population also agrees with recent studies defending the presence of already settled early-type galaxies at $z \sim 2$ or higher (e.g., Pozzetti et al., 2003; Papovich et al., 2006; van Dokkum et al., 2006; Wuyts et al., 2009a; Marchesini et al., 2009). Note, however, from Figure 2.21 that not all the pERO population is strongly bulge dominated, as expected from the discussion at the end of the previous section. Yet the presence of pEROs is stronger close to the upper left region (and the radio data reveals a SFR upper limit of the order of unity). Furthermore, Figure 2.22 shows there is a gradual increase in $J - K$ colours for sources with increasing M_{20} value, probably meaning higher obscuration and star-formation. Again, this points to an evolutionary scenario: extremely red systems at high redshifts present significant SFRs and already spheroidal type morphologies, but as they evolve to $z \sim 1$ fuel is exhausted and they become more passive, thus being gradually missed by the IERO and DRG criteria.

In an attempt to link the results inferred from radio SFRs, mass estimates, and morphology in this section, we propose that practically all ERGs comprise the same population, but seen in different evolution stages. This has been proposed before. In the review by McCarthy (2004), for instance, evidences are presented for a link between high redshift DRGs to low redshift EROs, and refer sub-millimetre galaxies (SMGs) as the probable extreme star forming ancestors of evolved ERGs at $z \sim 1$ (see also McCarthy et al., 2004). ERGs in general are known to be found in dense environments (e.g., Georgakakis et al., 2005; Kim et al., 2011), with a higher degree of clustering for the passive-evolved component (e.g., Daddi et al., 2002; Roche et al., 2002; Foucaud et al., 2007). The reader should recall that, the more massive the host dark matter halo is, the sooner baryonic mass is expected to assemble (Baugh et al., 1999; Tanaka et al., 2005; De Lucia et al., 2006; Neistein et al., 2006). Hence, as one probes lower density fields more likely it is to find younger and bursty galaxies, as the baryonic mass assembly started later than

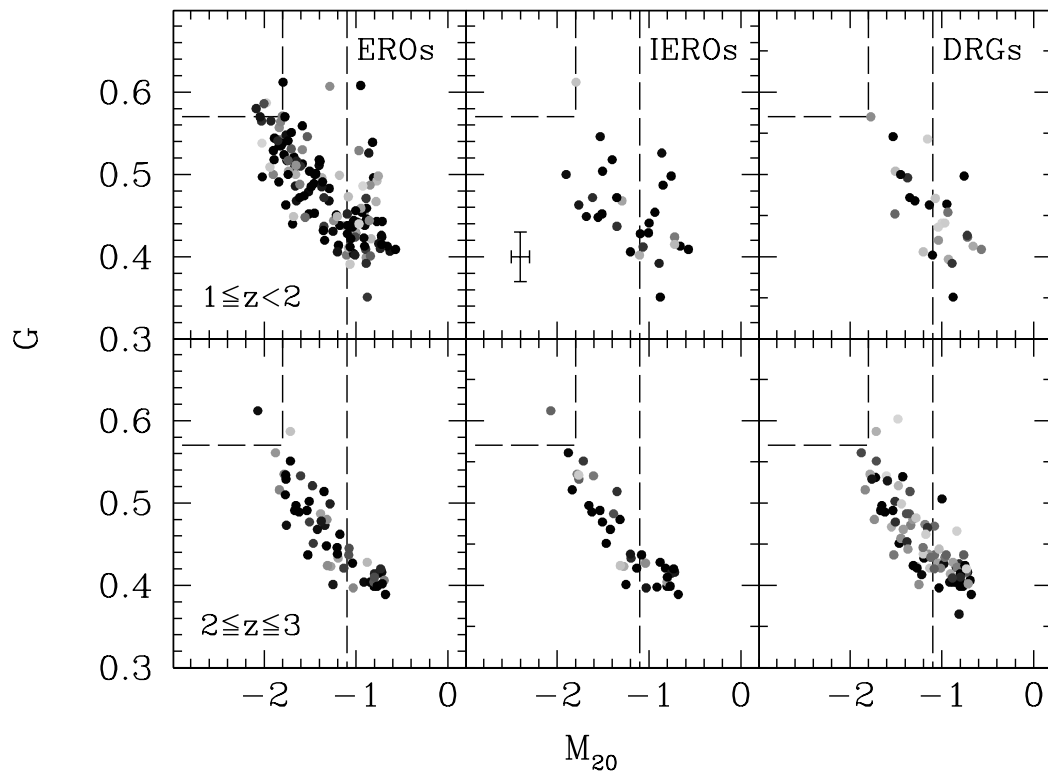


Figure 2.20: Distribution of sources in the Gini- M_{20} space. The panels refer to different redshift ranges (upper panels for $1 \leq z < 2$ and lower panels for $2 \leq z \leq 3$), and different populations (EROs on the left-hand side, IEROs in the middle, and DRGs on the right-hand side). The error-bars in the top middle panel show typical errors for a source with $S/N=2.5$. The darker the point, higher is the source probability.

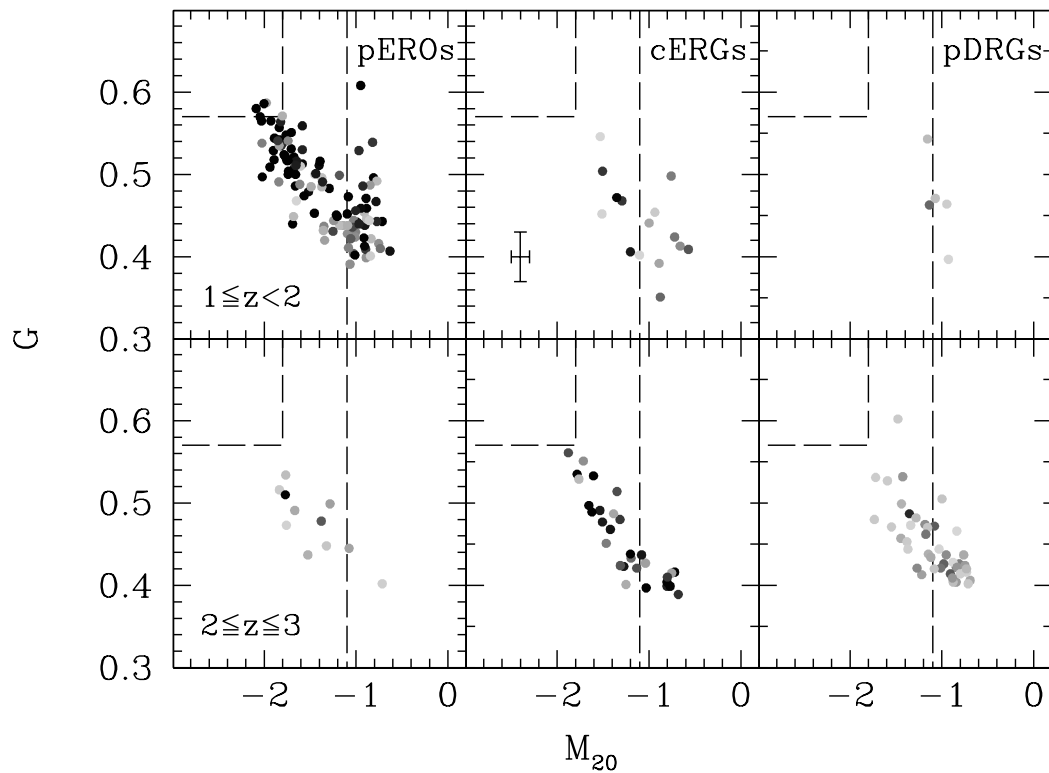


Figure 2.21: Distribution of sources in the Gini- M_{20} space. The panels refer to different redshift ranges (upper panels for $1 \leq z < 2$ and lower panels for $2 \leq z \leq 3$), and different populations (pEROs on the left-hand side, cERGs in the middle, and pDRGs on the right-hand side). The error-bars in the top middle panel show typical errors for a source with $S/N=2.5$. The darker the point, higher is the source probability.

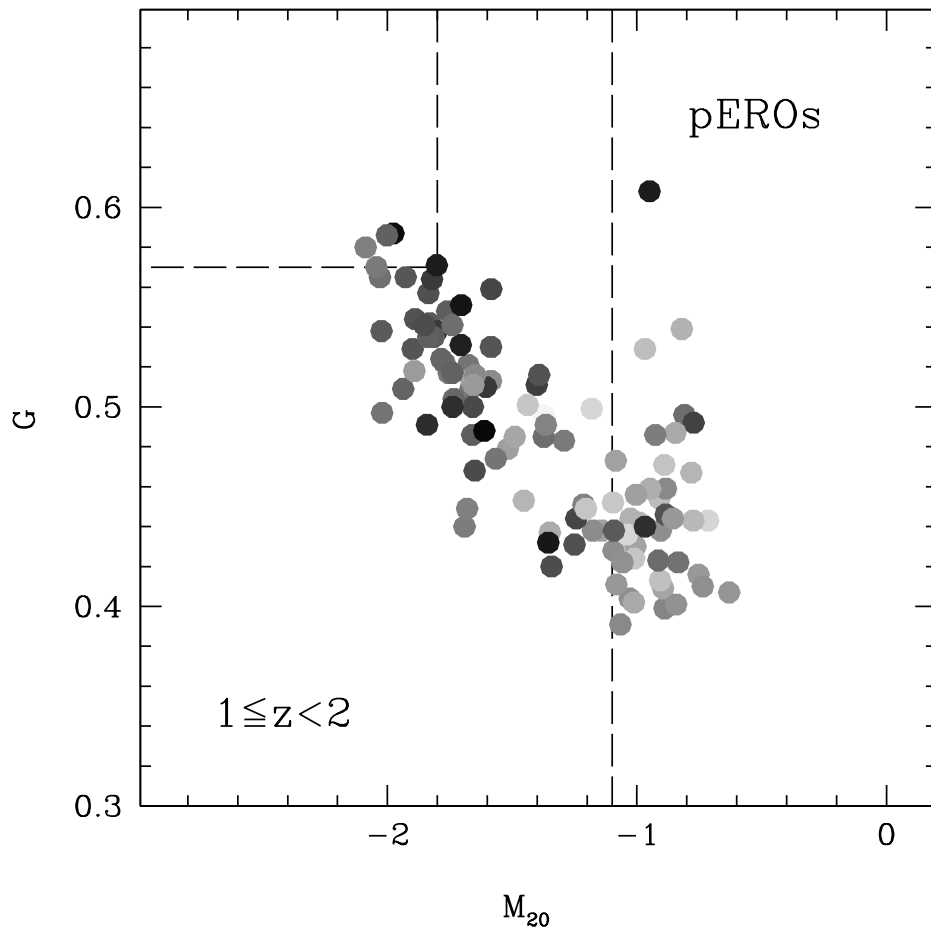


Figure 2.22: Pure-EROs in the Gini- M_{20} space. Point intensity indicates how red in $J - K$ a given source is, where lighter dots mean $J - K$ colours close to verify the DRG criterion. It is visible the gradual change toward less red colours from the lower right to the upper left.

in galaxies found in denser regions. For instance, Roche et al. (2002) believe that both passive-evolved and dusty starburst ERG components end as old ellipticals in the local Universe, and Fontanot & Monaco (2010) find no passively evolved versus dusty starburst population bimodality in EROs. Also, Bussmann et al. (2009) and Narayanan et al. (2010) propose that dusty obscured galaxies (DOGs), in case a merger scenario is considered, are candidates for galaxies in an evolution phase between SMGs and quiescent DRGs (but see Shapley et al., 2005; Stark et al., 2009, for an alternative Lyman break galaxy origins scenario). Adding to that, an X-ray analysis reveals comparable obscured AGN fractions for SMGs and DRGs when considering the most X-ray luminous sources (Section 2.3.2). Knowing that the QSO duty-cycle is expected to be short (e.g., Hopkins et al., 2006, and Section 2.4.2 in this work), in order for such property to hold, the transition between the SMG and DRG phases may actually be quite fast. There are evidences that support this scenario, where SMGs are believed to be rapid, highly dissipative, gas-rich major mergers (Narayanan et al., 2009) with short-lived (~ 1 Gyr) starbursts (Tacconi et al., 2006, 2008).

2.4.7.1 The case of pDRGs

Most pure-DRGs (85%) are found in a very interesting epoch of the universe, when both star-formation and AGN activity peak (Osmer, 2004; Hopkins & Beacom, 2006; Hopkins et al., 2007), $2 < z < 4$. In the literature, one can find scarce indirect references to this population (Förster Schreiber et al., 2004; Wuyts et al., 2007, who also study those DRGs with bluer rest-frame $U - V$ colours), sometimes even regarded as a result of photometric errors (Papovich et al., 2006). Wuyts et al. (2007) refer these galaxies as the least massive among the DRGs.

The colours and redshift distribution of pDRGs imply an evolved stellar population (bands J and K straddle the 4000\AA break) and an excess of flux at rest-frame ultra-violet (based on the less extreme red $i - K_s$ or $z - [3.6]$ colours). Such colours can be produced

either by exponentially decaying or constant star-formation histories. While the former applies to passively evolving galaxies, the latter scenario is considered for merging systems (Förster Schreiber et al., 2004; Wuyts et al., 2009b,a). This calls for a morphological inspection in order to break such degeneracy.

To maximise the statistics in this section, the requirement for a pDRG to be non-IERO is discarded¹⁷, the magnitude cut is extended to fainter fluxes, down to the catalogue limiting magnitude of $K_s = 24.3$, and the $2 < z < 4$ redshift range is considered. There are 237 DRGs found in this way, 88 of which are pDRGs. The total K_s population amounts to 894 sources under these constraints. All 88 pDRGs were visually inspected. Figure 2.23 shows a few examples of the selected pDRGs with disturbed light profiles. The example on the lower right corner is a $z_{\text{spec}} = 0.5$ galaxy that clearly shows why the pDRG selection can identify galaxies at such low redshifts. Due to its disturbed morphology, some star-forming regions of the galaxy are not obscured by dust (producing the UV excess), while the rest of the galaxy is strongly obscured by a dust lane originating red $J - K$ colours. The source to its left is at $z_{\text{spec}} = 2.2$, showing an extended low surface brightness feature to the right (West). This is the source seen in Figure 2.21 with the highest Gini coefficient (and $M_{20} < -1.1$) in the upper redshift bin of pDRGs. Interestingly, a proper flux contrast scale reveals two nuclei separated by $0.1''$. This reveals that automated algorithms will not always select merger candidates, and visual inspection should be pursued whenever possible.

However, are pDRGs more disturbed than the remainder galaxy population at $2 < z < 4$? To allow for a fair comparison, three complementary samples are considered: pDRGs, DRGs not pDRGs, and K_s -selected non-DRG sources. Considering the above mentioned $M_{20} > -1.1$ cut to select merging system candidates (estimated in the i_{775} band when at $2 < z < 3$ and in the z_{850} band when at $3 < z < 4$), one obtains fractions of 31%, 32%,

¹⁷The reader should recall that most IEROs are also EROs, so this is a plausible assumption.

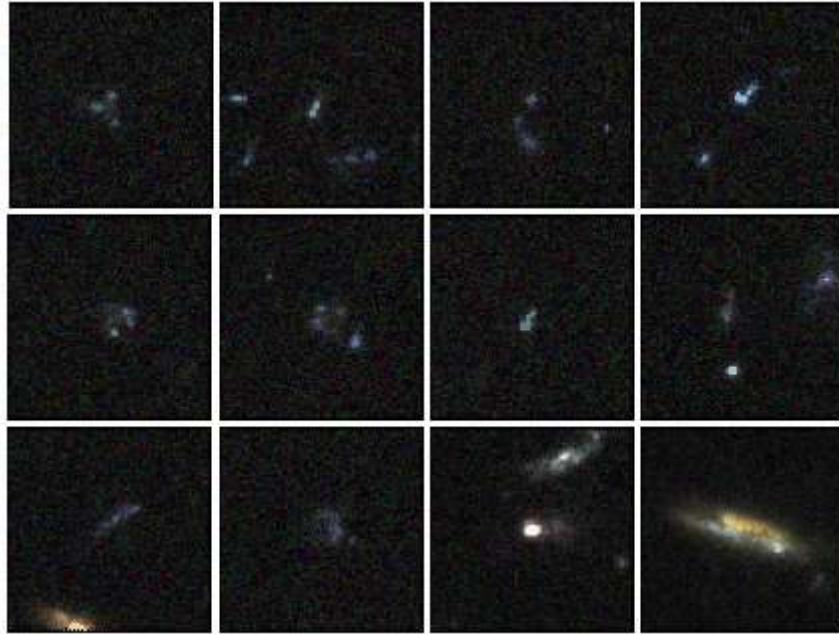


Figure 2.23: Twelve examples of pDRGs found in GOODSs. The cut-outs are taken from the MAST cut-out service and are $5''$ wide ACS-*Viz* band combinations. The galaxy seen in the bottom right corner is at $z_{spec} = 0.5$, while all the remainder are at $2 < z < 4$.

and 33% for non-DRG, DRGs not pDRGs, and pDRG samples, respectively. Although the conclusion is that pDRGs are as disturbed as the remainder galaxy population, the M_{20} parameter shows a consistent value in agreement in recent estimates using other morphology criteria. In Figure 10 by Conselice & Arnold (2009), the general trend for the expected evolution of galaxy merger fraction with redshift shows that the peak at $z \sim 3$ and at the 30% level.

One last procedure is used to confirm the active nature of the pDRG population. In Figure 2.24, the best χ^2 fit to the photometric data of pDRGs wavelengths is presented. Two type of fits are shown: Fit-1 considers the optical-nIR-IR data and Fit-2 the nIR-IR-MIPS $_{24\mu m}$ data. Among an extremely rich template library (the same used in Chapter 3), the two best fits are hybrids based in the SED of IRAS 22491-1808. The overlaid image stamp (Scoville et al., 2000) shows the morphology of this local ULIRG to be characteristic

of a merger system. It should be pointed out that the AGN contribution in each template is of the order of 20% (Fit-1) to 30% (Fit-2). This is in agreement with the literature, which hints to a strong co-existence of star-forming and AGN activity at such high redshifts (e.g., Hopkins et al., 2007; Lotz et al., 2008). In fact, five X-ray detections are observed, with an average X-ray luminosity of $\log(L_X [\text{erg s}^{-1}]) \sim 43.8$ and column density $\log(N_H [\text{cm}^{-2}]) \sim 23^{18}$. Also, from the available spectroscopy (seven sources), two narrow line AGN are found. Nominally, one is the type-2 QSO announced by Norman et al. (2002) as the farthest object of such type found at the time, another shows P-cygni profile emission lines (characteristic of expanding shells of material). A third object (not confirmed as AGN) is a candidate for a Fe Low-ionization broad absorption line system (FeLoBAL, Gregg et al., 2002; Hall et al., 2002; Farrah et al., 2007, 2010). This population of galaxies, is expected to be transiting between AGN and star-burst dominated phases. The three spectra are displayed in Figure 2.25, together with the respective optical image cut-out, showing that compact systems do appear in the pDRG population. The obscured nature of these AGN hosts reinforces the idea that the UV flux comes mostly from star-formation processes.

These results thus support that pDRGs are an appropriate population for the study of the co-existence of star-forming regions with AGN activity in the epoch of greatest activity in the universe. We aim to assess questions such as “Which came first? The starburst or the AGN phase?”, “What is the mechanism behind such transition?”, and “What is the time range for the transition from a starburst to AGN dominated phase or vice-versa?”. In order to do so, the spectral coverage of the pDRGs must be improved (currently $\sim 10\%$ of the population is found to have a measured spectrum). For this purpose, an observational proposal has been recently submitted to FORS2 at the VLT-UT1 telescope.

¹⁸However, the two sources with the highest source \mathcal{P} are distinct. One (that referred by Norman et al., 2002), with 100% \mathcal{P} , has estimated intrinsic $\log(L_X [\text{erg s}^{-1}]) \sim 44.8$ and $\log(N_H [\text{cm}^{-2}]) \sim 24$ (in agreement with Norman et al., 2002). The other, with 96% \mathcal{P} , has $\log(L_X [\text{erg s}^{-1}]) \sim 43.4$ and $\log(N_H [\text{cm}^{-2}]) < 20$.

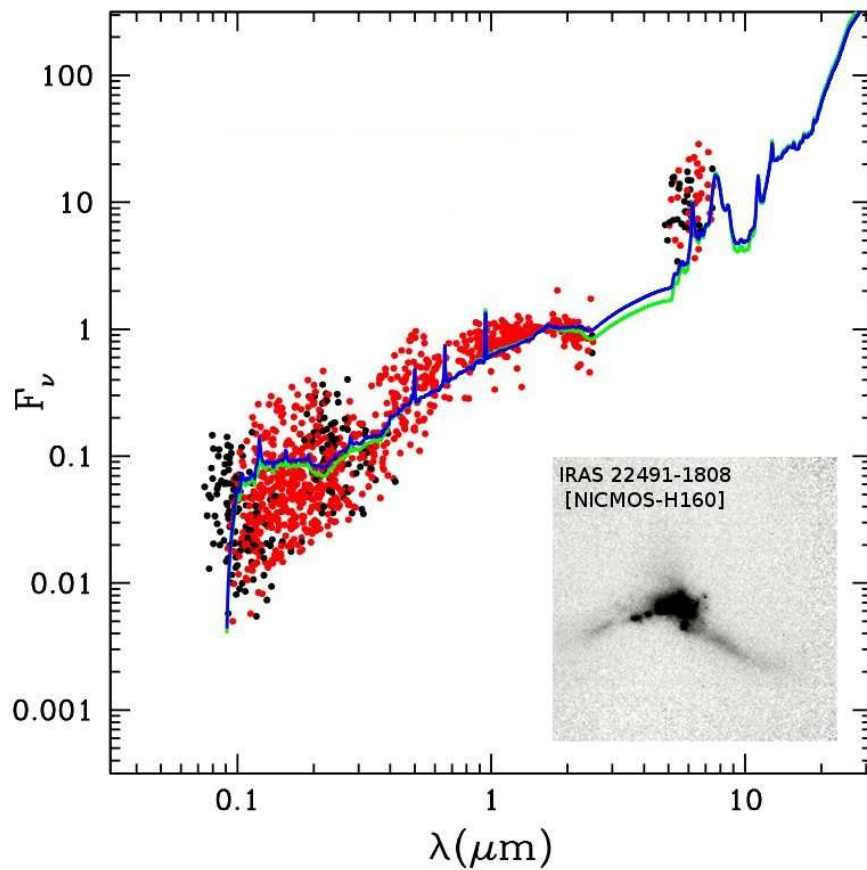


Figure 2.24: The data points are rest-frame photometry normalized at $1.6\mu\text{m}$ (black dots indicate upper-limits). The two resulting best χ^2 fits are based in a template of IRAS 22491-1808 with a contribution of 20% (green) and 30% (blue) from AGN emission. A NICMOS-*H160* image of IRAS 22491-1808 (Scoville et al., 2000) is displayed in the lower right corner.

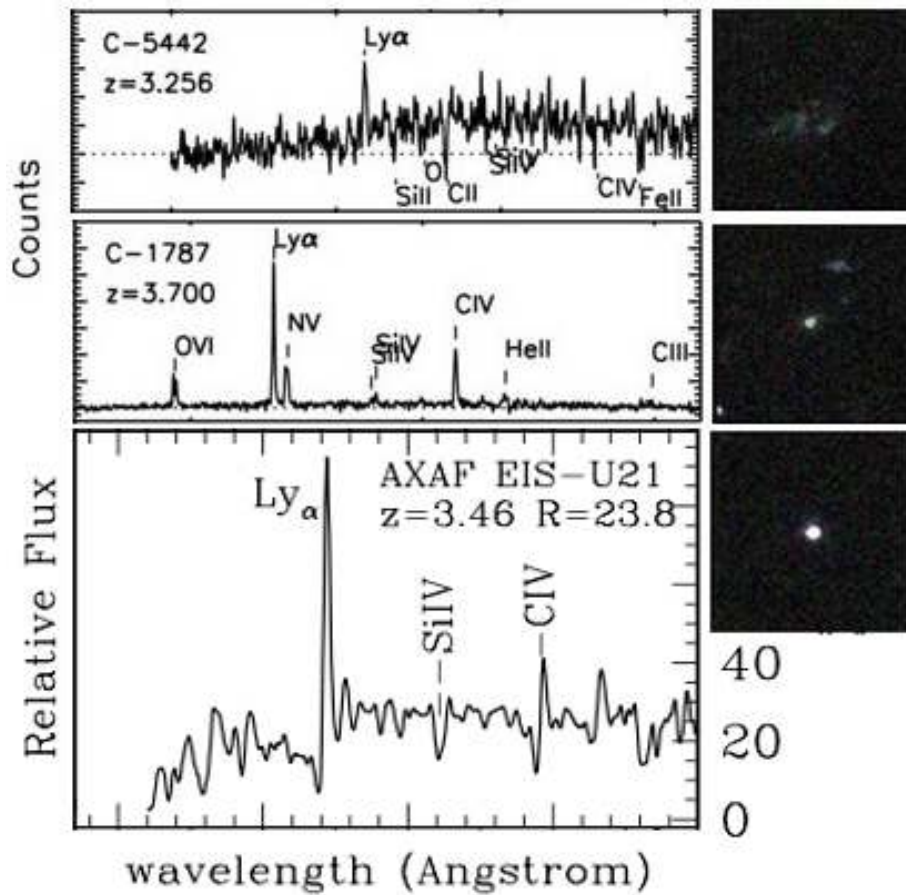


Figure 2.25: Three examples of candidate AGN spectra found in the pDRG sample. The top one is the FeLoBAL candidate, the middle panel shows the type-2 QSO from Norman et al. (2002), while the bottom panel shows the evident P-cygni profiled emission lines of AXAF EIS-U21 (Cristiani et al., 2000). To the right of each spectrum, are the respective ACS-*Viz* stacked imaging ($5''$ wide) from MAST cut-out service.

2.5 Conclusions

We have presented a multi-wavelength analysis of the properties of the ERG population in the GOODSs field. EROs, IEROs, DRGs – and various combinations between these groups – are considered, their AGN content identified and their contribution to the global $\dot{\rho}_*$ and ρ_M estimated. A new approach is adopted where each source contribution is weighted upon the uncertainties of the estimated parameters (e.g., photometric redshifts, fluxes). All this, together with the estimated masses and rest-frame UV morphologies, leads to the following conclusions:

- the different criteria for the selection of red galaxies select, as previously known, sources at different redshift ranges: while the bulk of EROs and IEROs can be found at $1 < z < 2$, DRGs are mostly found at $2 < z < 3$. Different combinations of the three criteria result in samples with distinct redshift properties: while cERGs are observed in a wide redshift range, $1 < z < 3$, and have no low- z ($z < 1$) interlopers, pEROs and pDRGs appear in distinct redshift intervals, at $1 < z < 2$ and $2 < z < 4$, respectively. The “pure” criteria appear, thus, to result suitable and simple techniques to select high- z sources in well constrained redshift intervals. See Section 2.4.1.
- the ERG population does not include a large number of *powerful* AGN, as indicated by the X-rays and radio observations. One fourth of the ERG sample hosts potential AGN activity, with the fraction of AGN increasing from EROs to IEROs to DRGs (resp., 23%, 33%, and 39%). Among ERGs, and according to the X-ray properties, Type-2 sources dominate (a 2–3:1 ratio, up to 6:1 for $\log(L_X[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) > 44$ sources). An X-ray estimate of the Type-2 to Type-1 AGN ratio among the ERG population is, however, indeterminate, requiring observations extending to lower X-ray energies (higher wavelengths). See Section 2.3.2 and Section 2.4.2.
- The multi-wavelength AGN identification confirms that AGN tend to be found in

more massive galaxies, and the AGN fraction increases with redshift, presenting a peak at $z \sim 3$, in agreement with the literature. We also note the rise of the AGN fraction at $z < 1$, supporting the findings that sources presenting ERG colours at low- z , tend to be dusty systems hosting an AGN. Also, the AGN fraction evolves differently with colour, showing that the $J - K$ colour is more efficient to select a higher fraction of AGN with the advantage that the observed population will mostly be at $z > 2$. This is important for the selection of faint IR-excess sources as AGN candidates (as in Fiore et al., 2008). See Section 2.4.2.

- EROs at $z < 2$ are often pEROs ($\sim 60\%$), which are mostly passively evolved systems without strong SFR activity, on average below $\sim 10 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. On the other hand, essentially all EROs at $2 < z < 3$ are classified as DRGs and may show up to $\sim 140 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. See Section 2.4.4.
- The overlapping population, the cERGs, displays an intense average SFR at $1 \leq z < 2$ ($\sim 60 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$), supporting previous claims of a dusty starburst nature for these sources (Smail et al., 2002; Papovich et al., 2006). See Section 2.4.4.
- The contribution of ERGs to the $\dot{\rho}_*$ increases with redshift: from up to $\sim 25\%$ at $1 < z < 2$ to up to $\sim 40\%$ at $2 < z < 3$. IEROs show the highest contribution to the global star formation history among the three ERG population at low- z . See Section 2.4.4.
- SFR densities from ERG populations were estimated for SF-dominated and total populations separately after a thorough AGN multi-wavelength identification. Although the inclusion of AGN ERGs in the stacking would only slightly increase the average radio luminosities shown by the non-AGN samples, that inclusion for the $\dot{\rho}_*$ estimate may lead to significant (and, at this point, undetermined) biases. See Section 2.4.4.

- The use of a [8.0]-[24] colour diagnostic allows for a tentative separation between AGN and star-forming galaxies at $z > 2.5$, where mid-IR (2 to 8 μm) diagnostics become degenerate. In particular, the use of this diagnostic enables the identification of a $z \sim 2.5$ massive ($5 \times 10^{11} M_{\odot}$) evolved system with MIR colours and morphology typical of a disc galaxy. See Section 2.3.3.2, Chapters 3 and 5.
- A direct comparing between rest-frame UV light and radio emission from ERGs, points to a higher dust obscuration in the common population (cERG), up to $E(B - V) \sim 0.6$. The lowest obscuration level is found for pEROs, which are believed to be mostly passively evolved systems. See Section 2.4.5.
- ERGs comprise high fraction of the Universe stellar at $1 < z < 3$, $\sim 60\%$, although they represent only 25% (at $1 \leq z < 2$) and 30% (at $2 \leq z \leq 3$) of the total galaxy population. Mass functions show that at the highest masses, ERGs may comprise practically 100% of the Universe stellar mass. The use of a moving bin allows the tentative discovery of a dip in the mass function at $\sim 10^{11} M_{\odot}$ (probably the result of different contributions of early and late type galaxies), and confirms the existence at $z > 1$ of the low-mass dip referred in the literature at $z < 1$. See Section 2.4.6 and Chapter 4.
- The morphology analysis reveals bulge dominated galaxies at $2 \leq z \leq 3$ and shows an heterogeneous ERG population. The separation into pure and common populations does not point to any bimodality. This evidence, together with the remainder results and work in the literature, supports the scenario that EROs, IEROs, and DRGs are a sequence of galaxy evolution phases (showing a significant overlap). Also, one of the possibilities for the high- z progenitor Population of ERGs may be indeed sub-millimetre galaxies after a fast transition into a DRG phase (based in literature evidences and X-ray information).

- The peculiar population of pDRGs at $2 < z < 4$ is also studied, showing that they are indeed a mix between old and young stellar populations. Peculiar cases are found, including a the type-2 QSO found by (Norman et al., 2002) and a galaxy revealing P-cygni-shaped emission-lines. Although the spectral coverage is small and X-ray detections are not numerous, there are tentative evidences for a transition scenario between AGN and star-forming phases for pDRGs, as similarly defended for FeLoBALs.

Chapter 3

Selecting $0 < z < 7$ AGN

3.1 Introduction

Following the steps of its space-based predecessors (Infra-red Astronomical Satellite and Infra-red Space Observatory), the successful mission of the *Spitzer Space Telescope (SST)* has opened a new window to the scientific community, by unveiling a deeper infra-red (IR) universe. Examples include mass estimates of high- z galaxies (Wuyts et al., 2007; Ilbert et al., 2010), star formation history of galaxies (Le Flocc'h et al., 2005; Pérez-González et al., 2005) and black hole growth and demographics throughout the age of the universe (Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005; Donley et al., 2007; Fiore et al., 2008, 2009). A major accomplishment has been the development of purely photometric techniques, in the 3–8 μm range, for the efficient selection of sources with enhanced IR emission redward of the 1.6 μm stellar peak, characteristic of an active galactic nucleus (AGN) (e.g., Lacy et al., 2004, 2007; Stern et al., 2005, hereafter L07 and S05, respectively). Long known since the 70's (with ground-based telescopes, Kleinmann & Low, 1970; Rieke, 1978, and references therein) and 80's (with the start of IR space-based observations, de Grijp et al., 1985; Miley et al., 1985; Neugebauer et al., 1986; Sanders et al., 1989), active galaxies are

prone to show intense emission at IR wavelengths. This is a powerful tool as it allows the selection of AGN sources not revealed at other wavelengths. This is mostly due to dust obscuration hiding AGN signatures at optical and even X-ray wavelengths. The absorbed energy is subsequently reprocessed by the enshrouding dust and emitted at IR wavelengths, producing an IR emission excess beyond $1.6 \mu\text{m}^1$.

These MIR criteria have been repeatedly compared with those in the X-rays, arguably more reliable despite missing a high fraction of the obscured AGN population (Barmby et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2008; Eckart et al., 2010). But *reliability* and *completeness* are highly dependent on the characteristics of the sample, and often difficult, if not impossible, to quantify. The combined effect of the survey depth, the wavelength coverage and, as a result, sensitivity to different physical processes as a function of redshift affect the AGN selection process. For example, MIR *wedge* type criteria (S05, L07) become increasingly affected by stellar dominated systems beyond $z \sim 2.5$. If, however, one applies these criteria to shallow MIR samples, where high- z star-forming (SF) galaxies are unlikely to be detected, then one finds these criteria reasonably reliable.

But if one's purpose is to obtain a truly complete and reliable AGN sample, then relying on MIR criteria alone is of course inappropriate. As put by Barmby et al. (2006), “*no proposed MIR colour AGN selection will identify them all*”. The same can obviously be said about the other wavelength regimes: *no individual AGN criterion – in any spectral regime! – will identify all AGN*. Furthermore, no single waveband criteria will be 100% reliable. For example, high-mass X-ray binaries, if abundant in a galaxy, may mimic obscured AGN properties due to their hard X-ray spectra and high X-ray luminosities ($\Gamma=0.5-1$, $L_X = 10^{42-43} \text{erg s}^{-1}$; Colbert et al., 2004; Alexander et al., 2005); Wolf-Rayet galaxies having compact optical profiles, extremely blue colours (Kewley et al., 2001), high ionization emission lines (NV, SiIV, and CIV stellar wind features) and broad emission

¹Blueward of this wavelength, the contribution of AGN emission through this reprocessed light mechanism diminishes significantly due to dust sublimation.

features ($\sim 2000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; Beals, 1929; Schulte-Ladbeck et al., 1995; Herald et al., 2000; Crowther, 2007) may be misclassified as having an AGN dominated optical spectral energy distribution (SED); and, finally, extremely obscured starbursts at high- z can mimic AGN characteristic IR red colours (Donley et al., 2008; Narayanan et al., 2010).

A high completeness (the fraction of the true AGN host population selected by a given criterion) and reliability (fraction of correct AGN classifications within the selected sample) can only be attained by combining different wavelength criteria, thus sampling different physical conditions and processes indicative of the existence of an AGN. Following this reasoning, Richards et al. (2009) investigated a 6 to 8 dimensional criterion based in the optical and MIR regimes to present a sample of > 5000 AGN candidates using wide, deep fields. While this method (gradually improved as one adds X-rays, radio or even morphological information) and that of SED fitting (Walcher et al., 2011) will likely provide the best results, the intrinsic degree of complexity and the difficulty to apply in anything but the most intensively observed fields on the sky make the simpler IR colour-colour criteria stand out. Considering the high redshift Universe, for example, where sources will be difficult to detect at most wavelengths, one would aim to develop the most reliable and complete criterion *possible* that solely requires the use of a single observational facility and the minimum number of observations.

With the approaching launch of the *James Webb Space Telescope (JWST)*, optimized to near and MIR wavelengths ($1 - 25 \mu\text{m}$) and with a particular emphasis on the high-redshift Universe, it is fundamental to investigate AGN selection criteria that can be directly applied to the resulting deep surveys. In this work we will present several near-to-mid-infrared *JWST*-suited colour criteria aiming to select a variety of AGN populations. Resulting from the use of a large set of observed and theoretical SEDs, these colour criteria are defined and tested against several control samples (selected from X-rays to radio frequencies) existing in deep galaxy surveys covered by *SST*. Reliability and completeness are estimated for

the proposed criteria and compared to those of existing MIR AGN diagnostics.

In Section 3.2 the different possibilities for the mechanisms behind the IR emission are discussed and the new criteria are presented. A test bench will be explored in Section 3.3 using the above-referenced broad set of control samples. We discuss the sensitivity of IR colour-colour criteria toward specific types of AGN and the conceptual improvements of the new proposed IR AGN diagnostics in Section 3.4. The implications to *JWST* surveys will be highlighted in Section 3.5, followed by the final conclusions of this work in Section 3.6.

3.2 Distinguishing AGN from Stellar/SF IR contributions

The SEDs of stellar/SF dominated systems have some distinctive characteristics, allowing the separation of this population from AGN host galaxies through IR colours alone. Figure 3.1 illustrates a few examples using galaxy templates taken from the SWIRE Template Library (Polletta et al., 2007). In stellar and/or SF dominated SEDs, henceforth referred to as normal galaxy SEDs, the overall blackbody emission from the stellar population, caused by the minimum in the opacity of the H^- ion, produces an emission peak at $1.6 \mu\text{m}$, which clearly stands out, as does the CO absorption at $2.35\text{--}2.5 \mu\text{m}$ from red supergiants. Furthermore, the strength of the PAH features, seen mostly beyond $6 \mu\text{m}$, increases with star formation activity. It is in this spectral region ($1\text{--}6 \mu\text{m}$) that the difference between normal galaxies and AGN dominated SEDs is the greatest. The existence of an AGN is frequently accompanied by a rising power-law continuum ($f_\nu \propto \nu^\alpha$) redward of $\sim 1 \mu\text{m}$, as a result of reprocessed X-ray, UV, and optical light emitted in the MIR by the hot dust surrounding the central region of an active galaxy (Sanders et al., 1989; Sanders, 1999; Pier & Krolik, 1992).

This feature is unique for AGN hosts and is revealed in IRAC colour-colour spaces

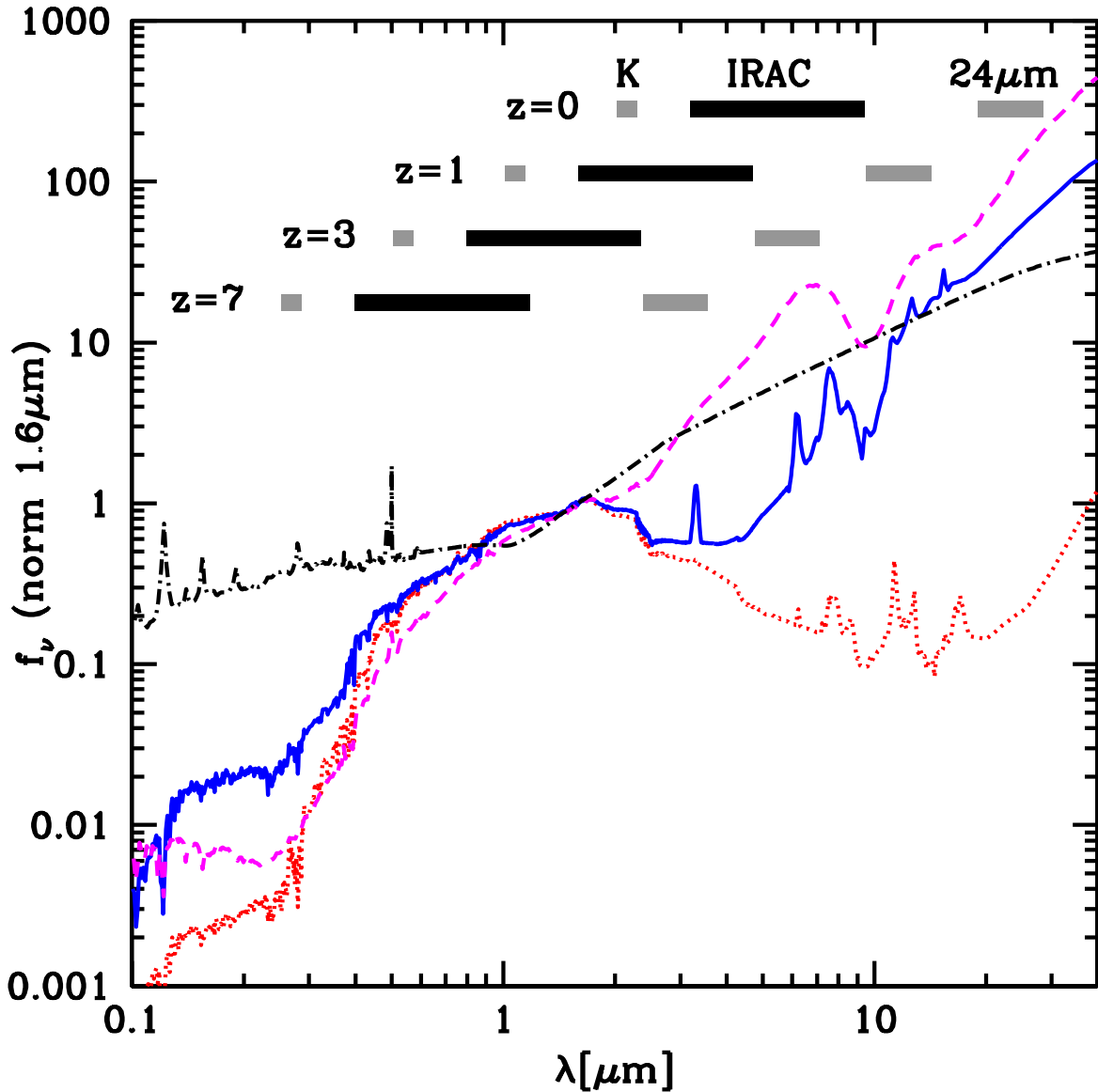


Figure 3.1: Four examples of galaxy templates taken from the SWIRE Template Library (Polletta et al., 2007) and flux normalized to $1.6\mu\text{m}$: S0 (early type galaxy, red dotted line), M82 (starburst galaxy, blue line), IRAS 19254-7245 (a hybrid source, magenta dashed line), and type-1 QSO (AGN, black dot-dashed line). The shaded regions show what rest-frame wavelength the K, IRAC, and MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ filters will be observing depending on the redshift.

(Lacy et al., 2004; Stern et al., 2005; Hatziminaoglou et al., 2005), by power-law techniques (Alonso-Herrero et al., 2006; Polletta et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2007) or by IR emission excess diagnostics (Daddi et al., 2007; Dey et al., 2008; Fiore et al., 2008; Polletta et al., 2008). The latter are particularly sensitive to the reddest, most obscured types. In these cases, the AGN MIR emission is even more obvious when compared to a severely obscured UV-Optical emission. Each of these criteria has its own advantages and problems. While colour-colour *wedges* tend to select more complete AGN samples, the power-law and IR-excess (IRxs) techniques have a higher reliability in the selection of specific AGN types (Donley et al., 2008). However, as one probes more distant galaxy samples, the identification becomes more complicated (Barmby et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2008).

In the following sections, having the wide near-to-mid IR range of *JWST* in mind, *K*-band-to-IRAC (KI) and *K*-band-to-IRAC/MIPS (KIM) colour-colour spaces will be explored as diagnostics for AGN identification at low and high redshifts. These are further tested against other AGN diagnostics, making use of a wide set of galaxy model SEDs, and a broad variety of control samples.

3.2.1 Template predictions

3.2.1.1 The template set

The templates used throughout this paper come from published work as follows: 10 templates covering early to late galaxy types, three starbursts, six hybrids², and seven AGN, all from Polletta et al. (2007); nine starburst ULIRGs from Rieke et al. (2009); one blue starburst and 18 hybrid SEDs from Salvato et al. (2009); and one extremely obscured hybrid from Afonso et al. (2001). Except for early type and blue starburst model templates, all SEDs are derived from mixed model and observational information. The latter either

²By *hybrids* we refer to SEDs simultaneously showing stellar/SF and AGN emission features.

comes from broad band photometry, SDSS optical spectra, Infrared Space Observatory (ISO) 5–12 μm or *SST*-IRS 5–36 μm spectra. The hybrid SEDs from Salvato et al. (2009) were obtained by the combination of stellar/SF dominated SEDs with AGN dominated SEDs: IRAS 22491-1808 SED with that characteristic of a QSO type-1 object, and an S0 template with one characteristic of a QSO type-2 object (all four SEDs from Polletta et al., 2007).

With such a varied template library, the galaxy colour- z space is expected to be adequately sampled. High redshift extreme examples are considered (such as the Torus template used to fit the heavily obscured type-2 QSO at $z = 2.54$, SWIRE_J104409.95+585224.8, Polletta et al., 2006) and hybrid templates, shown to be efficient at high redshift and at faint fluxes (Salvato et al., 2009), are also taken into account. It is worth noting nevertheless that even local templates are successful in fitting some of the most extreme high redshift sources (for instance, the case of Arp220 as a local analogue of HR10, an extremely red galaxy at $z = 1.44$, Hu & Ridgway, 1994; Elbaz et al., 2002).

The SED templates are organized in four groups: (a) Early to Late-type galaxies, (b) Starbursts, (c) Hybrids, and (d) AGN. The following investigation will focus on how these groups populate near-to-mid IR colour-colour diagnostic plots, aiming to separate the AGN/Hybrid population, (c) and (d) above, from that for normal galaxies, i.e., (a) and (b).

3.2.1.2 An enhanced wedge diagram

In Figures 3.2 and 3.3 the colour tracks (spanning the range $0 < z < 7$) for the template SEDs considered are presented on the L07 and S05 criteria colour-colour spaces, respectively. In both, the nominal AGN regions encompass most of the AGN and hybrid tracks for a large range of redshifts, as they were built to do. We note, however, that the use of a very diverse SED template set already shows some shortcomings of these diagnostic plots.

In both Figures, the two upper panels (early/late and starburst galaxies) show a significant contamination of the nominal AGN region by normal galaxies (i.e., non-AGN) not only at high redshifts ($z \gtrsim 2 - 3$) but also much closer ($z \lesssim 1$), as already noted by previous studies (Barmby et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2008). The fact that some hybrid templates fall, at some point, out of the selection regions is expected as the SF or AGN emission contribute differently to the observed bands at different redshifts. Again we point out that colour-colour criteria will only successfully identify AGN whose emission dominates in at least some of the observed bands, which won't be the case for many AGN (Rigopoulou et al., 1999; Maiolino et al., 2003; Treister et al., 2006). Cool dwarf stars may fall close to the boundaries or inside the selecting regions, thus being also potential (point-like) contaminants.

In order to enhance these wedge diagrams, one can extend the wavelength coverage to shorter wavebands, out of IRAC range. This is obviously outside the IRAC framework behind the original definition of such wedge diagrams, but suits the larger JWST wavelength coverage. By considering shorter wavelengths, one is of course probing a spectral region mostly dominated by stellar emission (see Figure 3.1). Such a scenario is an advantage as we now compare a stellar dominated wave-band with one that has contribution either from stellar or AGN light. Such a comparison will yield a useful colour dispersion ideal for the separation of the two types of system.

A particularly relevant combination of colours is $K - [4.5]$ versus $[4.5] - [8.0]$ (Figure 3.4). This, henceforth called the KI (K+IRAC) criterion, is defined by the following simple conditions (\wedge denotes the “AND” condition):

$$\begin{aligned} K - [4.5] &> 0 \wedge \\ [4.5] - [8.0] &> 0 \end{aligned}$$

Comparing with the L07 and S05 criteria, the contamination by normal galaxies at

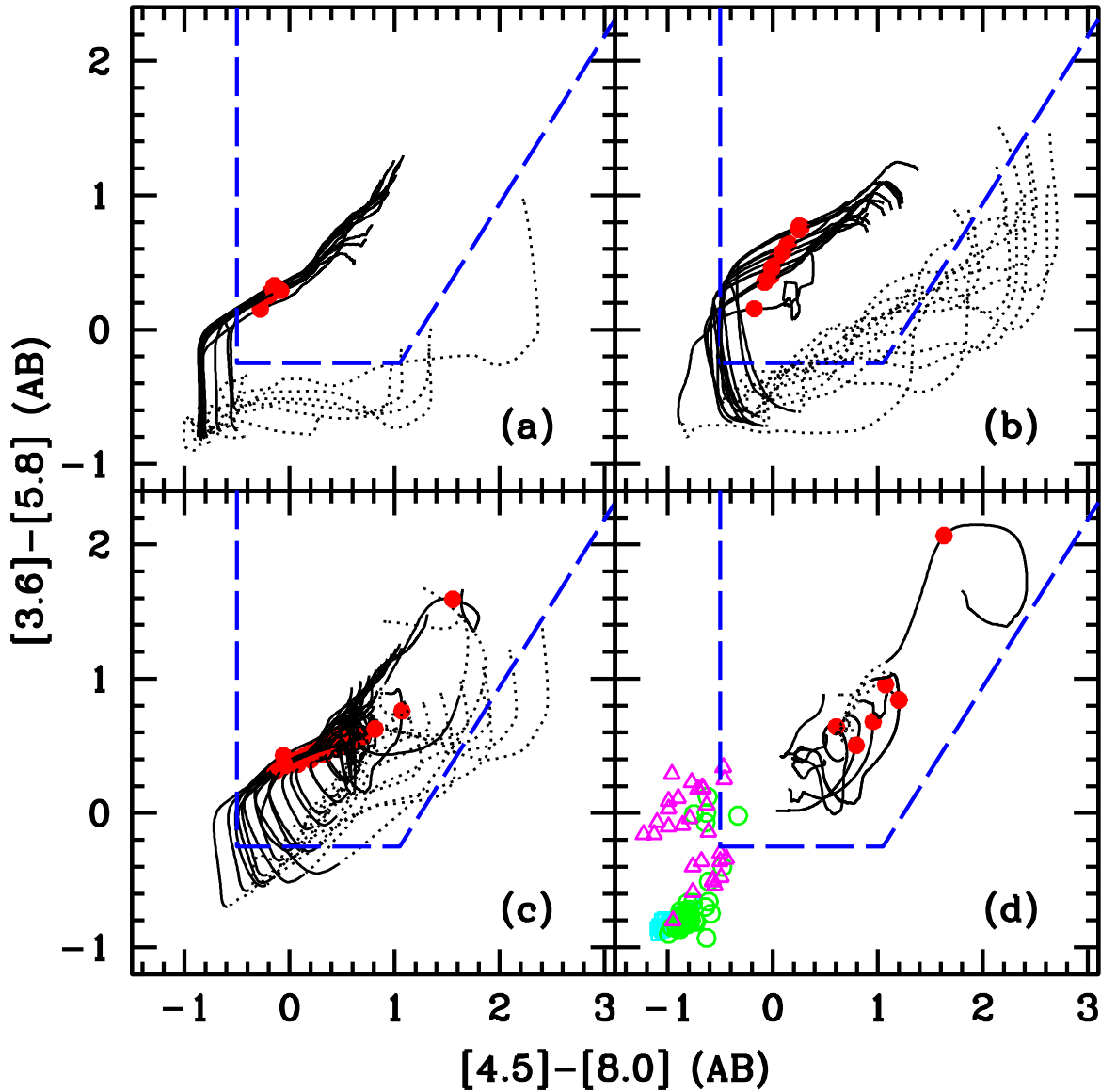


Figure 3.2: Model colour tracks displayed in the L07 criterion colour-colour space. Dashed blue line refers to the boundaries proposed in that work for the selection of AGN. Each panel presents a specific group: (a) Early/Late, (b) starburst, (c) Hybrid and (d) AGN. The dotted lines refer to the $0 < z < 1$ redshift range, and continuous line to $1 \leq z \leq 7$. Red circles along the lines mark $z = 2.5$. Dwarf stars (Patten et al., 2006) are shown for reference. M-dwarfs appear as open cyan squares, L-dwarfs as open green circles, and T-dwarfs as open magenta triangles to show where these red point-like cool stars appear.

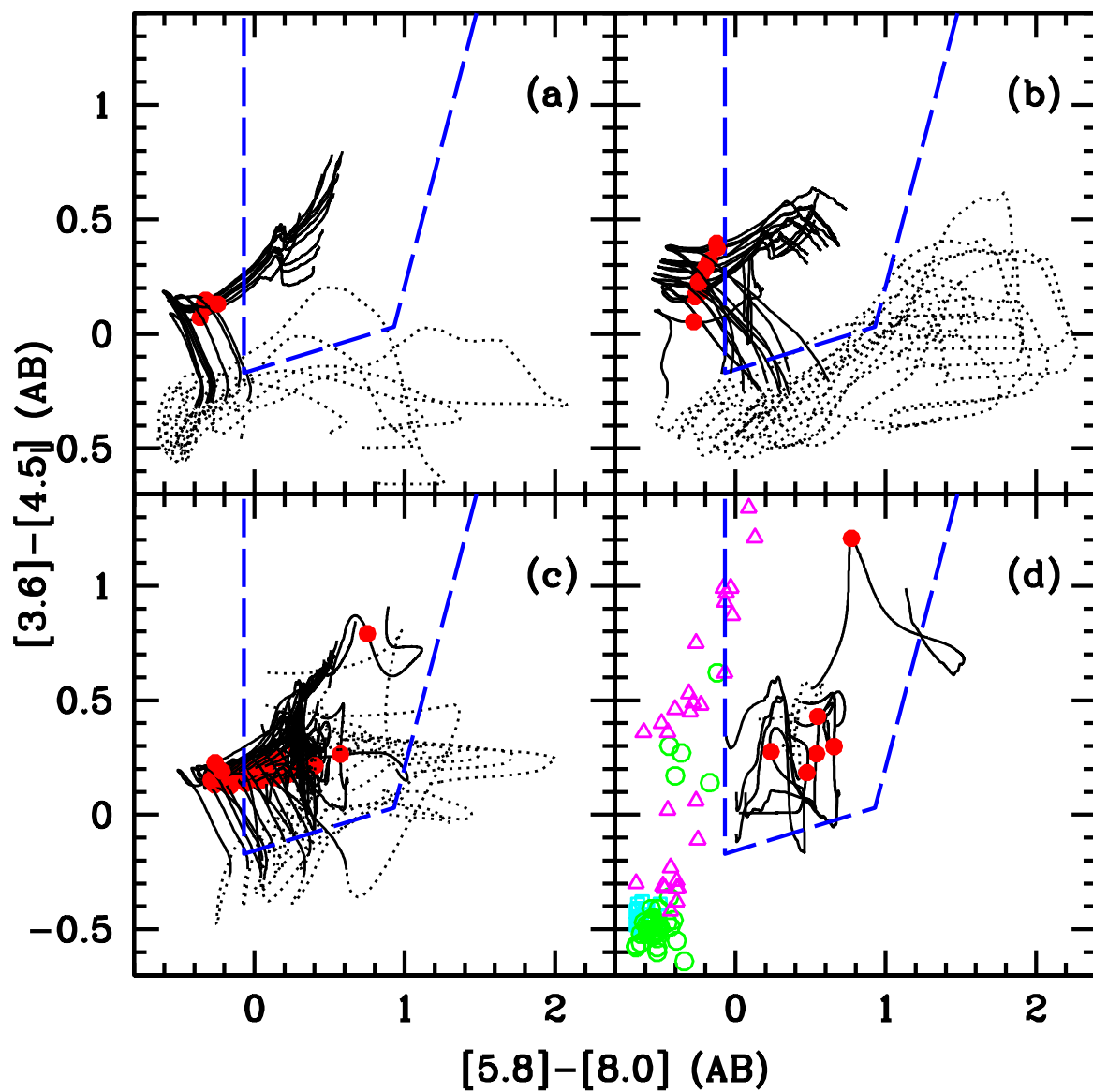


Figure 3.3: Model colour tracks displayed in the S05 criterion colour-colour space. Symbols and panel definition as in Figure 3.2.

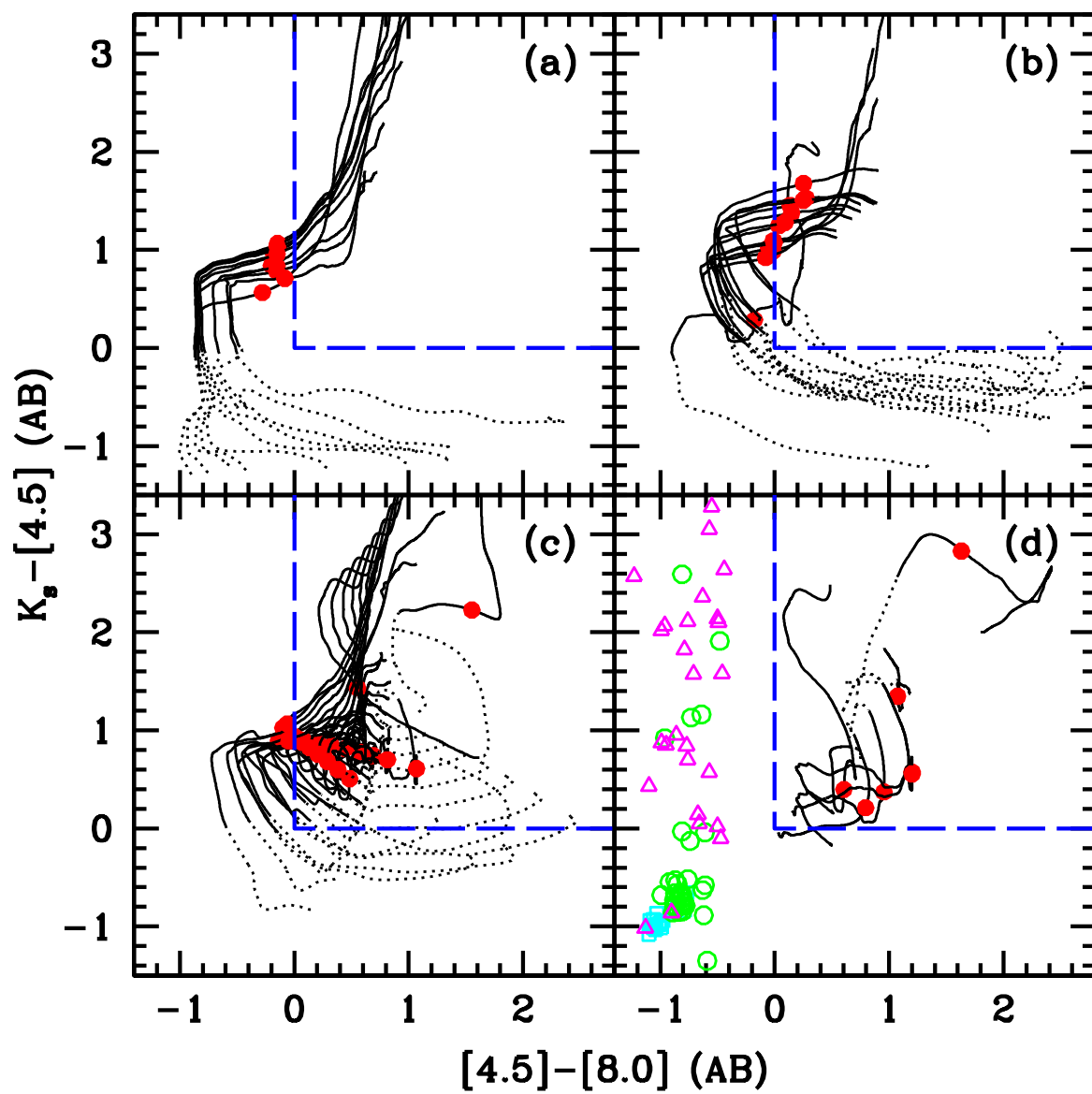


Figure 3.4: The proposed KI criterion. Symbols and panel definition as in Figure 3.2.

$z \gtrsim 2.5$ seems similar. However, the contamination by normal galaxies at $z \lesssim 2.5$ appears significantly reduced (higher reliability), with no effect on the ability to select AGN (completeness). Another conceptual improvement of KI, adding to the simplicity of its definition, is the unbounded upper right AGN region. This avoids the loss of heavily obscured AGN (with extremely red colours). This is in opposition to what is seen in S05, for example, where the Torus template moves out from the selecting region at the highest redshifts ($z \gtrsim 4$).

One can also note the usefulness of the simple $K - [4.5]$ colour in excluding low redshift normal galaxies: the condition $K - [4.5] > 0$ is able to reject a large fraction of the $z < 1$ non-AGN galaxies. Such a property also makes this simple colour-cut of great use to the study of AGN and star-formation co-evolution in the last half of the universe history.

It should be noted that not all the templates considered take into account prominent emission lines. These may affect the photometry and produce some degree of scatter in the colour-colour tracks. This is visible in Figure 3.5 where updated versions of the QSO1 and BQSO1 templates (Polletta et al., 2007) were considered, now with both $H\alpha$ and OIII lines included (visible in the unchanged TQSO1 template). Although in specific redshift intervals (when a certain emission line is redshifted into a given filter), AGN sources with smaller AGN contribution in the IR (like BQSO1) fall out the AGN region of the KI criterion, the bulk of the AGN population is expected to remain inside the KI boundaries nonetheless. Also, the presence of emission lines in starburst SEDs (e.g., $H\alpha$, $Pa\alpha$) will improve the results by producing colours that will place a given starburst further away from the AGN region. This reasoning equally applies to S05 and L07, although the effect on the latter is expected to be smaller due to its larger selection region.

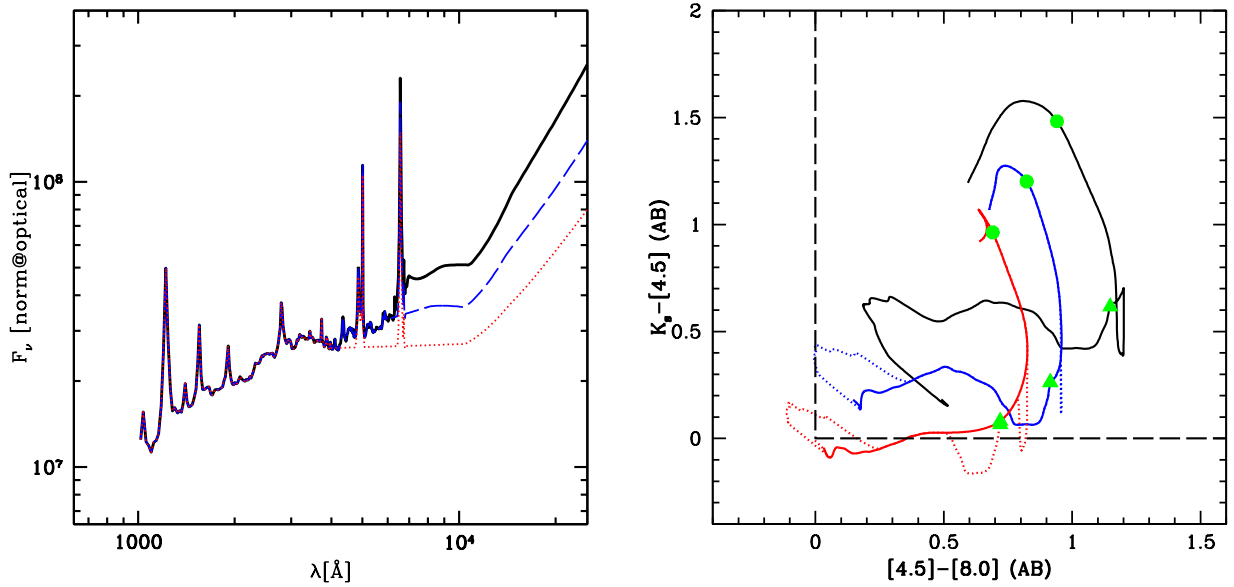


Figure 3.5: The effects of considering prominent lines in type-1 QSO SED models. The left panel shows three such SEDs originally from Polletta et al. (2007): two updated versions of QSO1 (dashed blue line, now with an $H\alpha$ line) and BQSO1 (red dotted, now with both $H\alpha$ and $OIII$ lines), and the unchanged TQSO1 (continuous black). On the right panel the original SED model tracks are shown as continuous lines (from top to bottom: TQSO1, QSO1, and BQSO1), whereas the inclusion of strong emission lines produces the deviations given by the dotted segments. Circles and triangles show $z = 1$ and $z = 3$, respectively. The tracks extend from $z = 0$ to $z = 7$.

3.2.1.3 Extending to high redshifts

One serious problem is the contamination by normal galaxies at high redshifts ($z \gtrsim 2.5$). All three criteria (L07, S05, and KI) fail to disentangle AGN dominated systems from normal galaxies at those redshifts. To avoid this problem, the longer MIR wavelength range to be available in the *JWST* ($> 20 \mu m$) will be considered. For this purpose, we extend the criterion to the MIPS- $24 \mu m$ band.

The use of this waveband for AGN selection has always been peculiar. Given the degeneracy between AGN and non-AGN when exploring IRAC-MIPS colours (Lacy et al., 2004; Hatziminaoglou et al., 2005; Cardamone et al., 2008), people tend to use the MIPS- $24 \mu m$

band for unique, extreme objects (like the IRxs techniques) or in single, unconventional situations. For instance, while Garn et al. (2010) use [8.0]-[24] against [5.8]-[8.0] for a $z \sim 0.8$ sample to identify those sources showing AGN activity, Treister et al. (2006) and Messias et al. (2010) use a single [8.0]-[24] colour cut at, respectively, $z \sim 2$ and $z > 2.5$ for the same purpose³. Colours involving the $24\mu\text{m}$ band are usually avoided due to the large wavelength gap between this band and other commonly available MIR bands (usually the IRAC *SST* bands). At high- z (e.g., $z \sim 3$), however, the sampled rest-frame wavebands (2 and $6\mu\text{m}$ corresponding to observed 8 and $24\mu\text{m}$, respectively) are not much more separated than the 3.6 and $8.0\mu\text{m}$ IRAC bands for nearby galaxies. A different issue is the lower sensitivity and larger point spread function of the MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ images, compared with those for the IRAC channels, which affects the accuracy of colour measurements using this longer wavelength band.

Furthermore, normal galaxies show a wide [8.0]-[24] colour range, which is further increased by redshift. This results in a considerable colour overlap with AGNs, limiting the usefulness of this single colour to separate both populations (Lacy et al., 2004; Cardamone et al., 2008). Nonetheless, adding a shorter wavelength MIR colour helps to break this degeneracy. Figure 3.6 illustrates a proposed colour-colour separation diagnostic efficient at high redshifts. One can see that beyond $z \sim 1$, AGN (lower panels) and normal galaxies (upper panels) occupy essentially different regions in the [8.0]-[24] versus [4.5]-[8.0] space. This is of great interest for the characterization of high redshift galaxy populations, such as Lyman break galaxies and equivalents at $z \gtrsim 2$ (Steidel et al., 2003, 2004; Adelberger et al., 2004).

However, at low redshifts a high degree of degeneracy exists, with AGN and normal galaxies occupying the same colour-colour region. A rejection of low-redshift ($z < 1$) normal/star forming galaxies would, however, remove this overlap, allowing for a powerful

³Ivison et al. (2004) and Pope et al. (2008) also address [8.0]-[24] against [4.5]-[8.0] to distinguish AGN from normal galaxies, but, in those works, only the [4.5]-[8.0] colour is effectively used for that purpose.

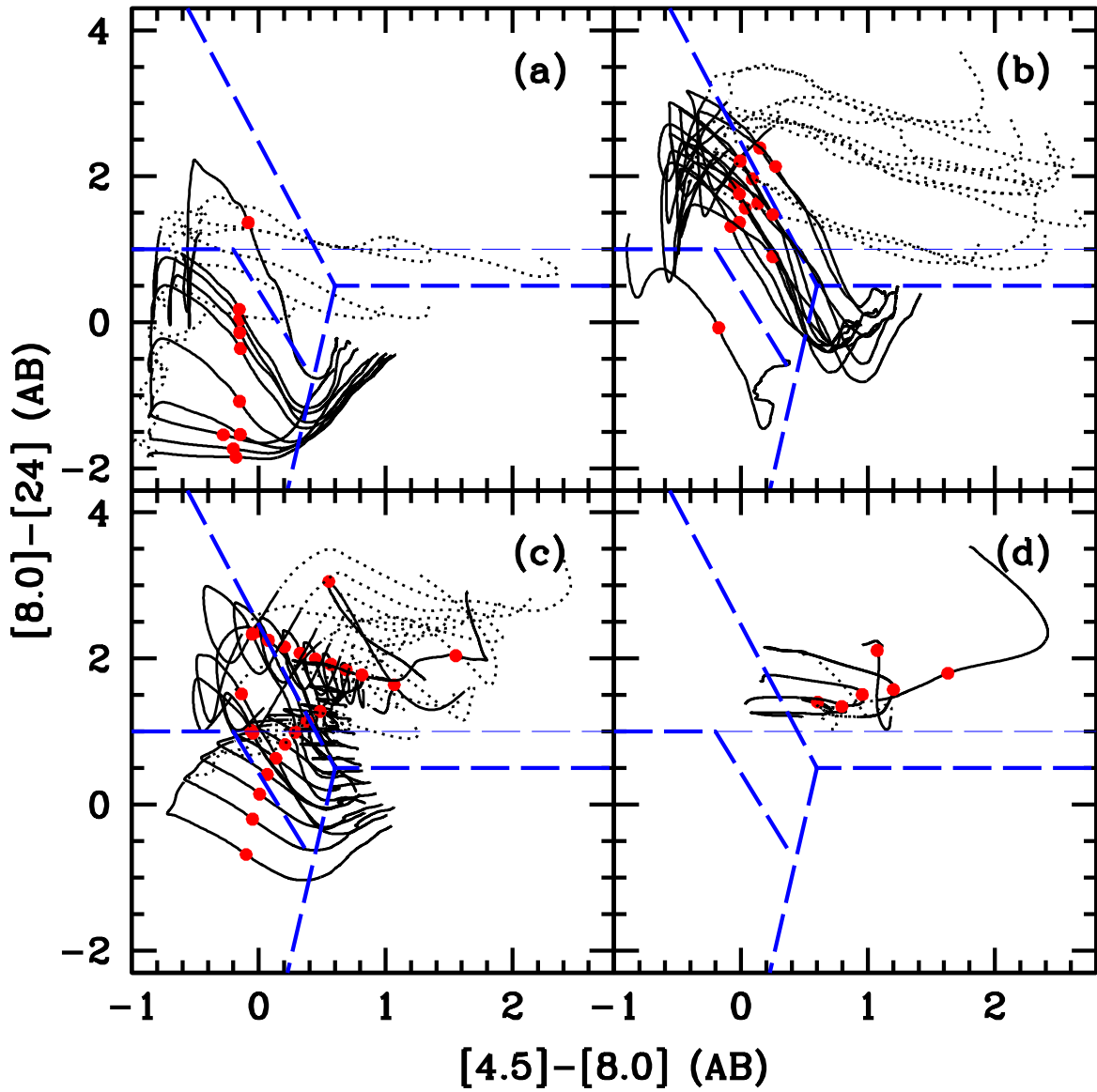


Figure 3.6: The IRAC-MIPS colour-colour space and the proposed criterion. Symbols and panel definition as in Figure 3.2. The thin dashed blue line refers to a simpler criterion valid at $z \gtrsim 3$, as detailed in the text.

AGN-selection criteria to be built. This can be achieved, as noted in the previous section, by using the $K - [4.5] > 0$ colour cut, which will allow for the rejection of a large fraction of the $z < 1$ non-AGN galaxies, with AGN and hybrid galaxies in this redshift range remaining mostly unaffected.

Under these conditions (either at $z > 1$ or having excluded $z < 1$ normal galaxies by applying a criteria such as the above $K - [4.5] > 0$), one is then able to define four regions in the IRAC-MIPS (IM) colour-colour space as shown in Figures 3.6 and 3.7: AGN dominated, miscellaneous (where both pure starburst and hybrid systems with a reasonable AGN contribution appear), normal galaxies and, finally, a region occupied by sources at higher redshifts ($z \gtrsim 3-4$). The boundaries of each of these regions are set by the following conditions (\vee and \wedge denote the ‘‘OR’’ and ‘‘AND’’ conditions, respectively):

(i) AGN :

$$[8.0] - [24] > -3.3 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) + 2.5 \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] \geq 0.5$$

(ii) Miscellaneous :

$$([8.0] - [24] \geq 1 \vee$$

$$[8.0] - [24] > -2.8 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) + 0.4) \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] \leq -3.3 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) + 2.5 \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] > 7.5 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) - 4$$

(iii) Normal :

$$[8.0] - [24] < 1 \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] < -2.8 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) + 0.4 \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] > 7.5 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) - 4$$

(iv) High- z :

$$[8.0] - [24] < 0.5 \wedge$$

$$[8.0] - [24] \leq 7.5 \times ([4.5] - [8.0]) - 4$$

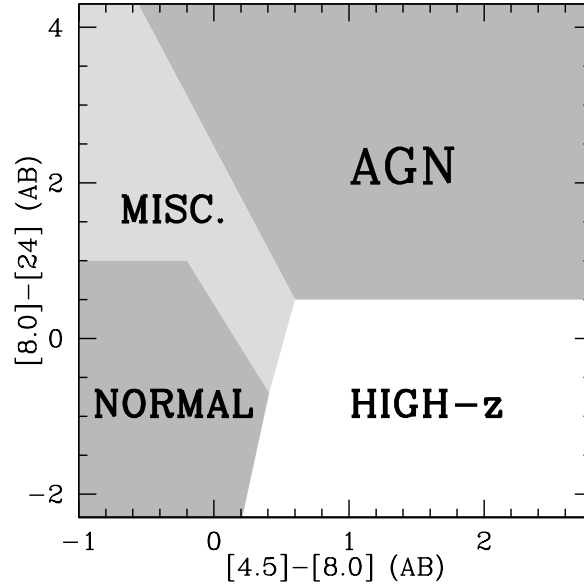


Figure 3.7: The IRAC-MIPS colour-colour space and the proposed IM criterion regions.

These IM conditions, when considered together with the $K - [4.5] > 0$ cut, which implements the rejection of $z < 1$ normal galaxies, define what we will henceforth call the KIM (K+IRAC+MIPS) criterion.

We further note from Figure 3.6 that for $z \gtrsim 3$, essentially all SEDs with $[8.0] - [24] > 1$ are dominated by AGN emission. Figure 3.8 details this behaviour, clearly showing that stellar dominated galaxies at $z \gtrsim 3$ show $[8.0] - [24] < 1$ colours, as described by Messias et al. (2010).

3.3 Test bench

In the previous section we proposed: $K - [4.5]$ as an useful colour for the efficient segregation of the galaxy population into AGN-dominated and normal SEDs at $z < 1$; the KI criterion as an alternative to L07 and S05; and KIM (a 4 band, 3 colour criterion), as a diagnostic which, according to the colour tracks of the templates used, enables the selection of AGN

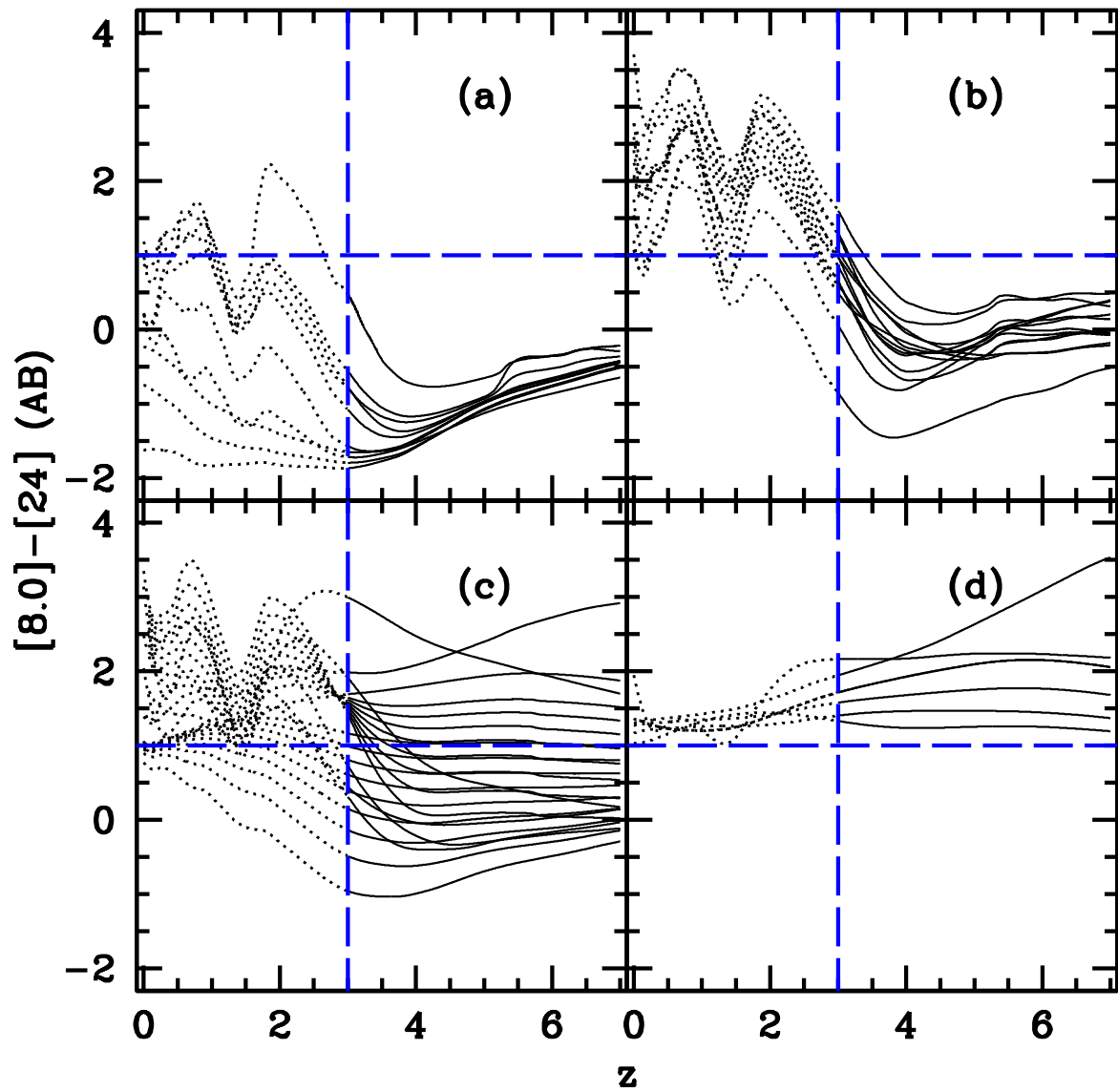


Figure 3.8: The $[8.0] - [24]$ colour evolution with redshift. Panel definition as in Figure 3.2. The horizontal line shows $[8.0] - [24] = 1$, while the vertical one indicates $z = 3$. At $z > 3$, only AGN dominated galaxies show $[8.0] - [24] > 1$ colours.

sources at $0 < z < 7$ with little contamination by normal galaxies. This is of great interest as it enables to track AGN activity since the epoch of reionization to the current time. The usefulness of these criteria can only be evaluated, however, by pursuing a test with well characterized control samples. By using different galaxy samples, and considering other available AGN criteria, based on distinct spectral regimes, we can obtain some estimate of the reliability and completeness of the new proposed diagnostics in comparison with commonly used ones. Again, one must keep in mind that any AGN criteria will be complete and reliable only at some level, so caution must be exercised when comparing the results.

We will perform these tests with five control samples. Firstly, we use a sample of galaxies from the Great Observatories Origin Deep Survey (GOODS, Giavalisco et al., 2004) and another from the Cosmic Evolution Survey (COSMOS, Scoville et al., 2007), both with available AGN classification from X-rays and/or optical spectroscopy. Secondly, we assemble samples of IRxs sources found in GOODS and COSMOS fields. The QSO sample from the Sloan Digital Sky Survey (SDSS, Schneider et al., 2010), reaching $z \sim 6$, is also considered for the testing, as well as the High- z Radio Galaxy (HzRG) sample from Seymour et al. (2007). The first two samples allow for an indication of the completeness and reliability of the IR AGN selection criteria, while the AGN samples (IRxs sources, SDSS QSOs and HzRGs) will allow for independent measures of their completeness up to the highest redshifts, with the caveat that the AGN samples are, themselves, incomplete.

In the following subsections, Completeness (\mathcal{C}) is defined as the fraction of the AGN population that a given IR criterion is able to select ($\text{AGN}_{SEL}/\text{AGN}_{TOT}$), while Reliability (\mathcal{R}) will refer to the fraction of the IR sources selected by a given criterion which are part of the “true” AGN population (AGN_{SEL}/N_{SEL} , where $N_{SEL} = \text{AGN}_{SEL} + \text{non-AGN}_{SEL}$). We again stress that the true AGN population is unknown, and we are always limited to a fraction of it as unveiled by other selection methods, which can themselves be more or less biased.

3.3.1 The GOODS and COSMOS samples

The ideal sample to test MIR-AGN selection criteria would be a sample of galaxies with complete AGN/non-AGN characterization for all of its members. Such a thorough characterization is at this stage impossible, this being precisely one of the reasons for the development of MIR AGN-selection criteria. As such, one can only aim to assemble a sample of galaxies where both AGN and non-AGN populations are represented, and keep in mind that the comparison between the MIR criteria being tested will only be indicative of relative performance.

For this first test sample, we have selected 2288 galaxies from MUSIC/GOODS-South catalogue (Grazian et al., 2006a; Santini et al., 2009) and 7180 from COSMOS (Ilbert et al., 2009) with an X-ray classification and/or a good quality⁴ optical spectroscopic classification. Whenever a spectroscopic redshift was not available, the photometric estimates by Luo et al. (2010, in GOODS) and Salvato et al. (2009, in COSMOS) were adopted.

Differences exist between the two samples (GOODS and COSMOS) that may produce somewhat different results. While the underlying COSMOS catalogue – from which the photometry was obtained – includes sources found in *I*-band or $3.6\mu\text{m}$ images, MUSIC considers sources detected in z_{850} , K_s , or $4.5\mu\text{m}$. This allows one to consider a broad variety of source types in both fields. One major difference between the MUSIC-GOODS and COSMOS catalogues is the photometry extraction method. While the former provides total fluxes (more adequate for comparison with the template predictions), COSMOS lists aperture fluxes which have to be corrected to total fluxes. Aperture photometry can be affected by galaxy morphology and redshift. The coverage of an extended source by a fixed aperture will be gradually restricted to the nuclear emission with decreasing redshifts, resulting in a decreasing contribution to the observed SED of the galaxy outer regions. This

⁴Spectra flagged as 0 (very good) or 1 (good) in the MUSIC catalogue, and with 90% probability in the COSMOS catalog.

is one of the justifications behind the use of hybrid templates, where different contributions from the AGN and non-AGN components are considered. Finally, underlying factors such as (a) the different photon indices used for the GOODS-S and COSMOS samples to convert from count rates to X-ray fluxes, (b) difference in relative sensitivity between soft and hard bands of *Chandra Space Telescope* (*CXO*, in GOODS-S) and *XMM-Newton* (in COSMOS), (c) different spectral coverage depth and procedures for spectral classification, and cosmic variance, will still most probably contribute to different results extracted from the GOODS and COSMOS samples. A proper study of the relative contribution of each of these factors is however beyond the scope of the paper.

The IR data used for the MUSIC catalogue comes from Vandame (2002) and Dickinson et al. (in prep.), and that for the COSMOS comes from Sanders et al. (2007), Le Floch et al. (2009), and McCracken et al. (2010). Regarding the X-rays, the 2 Ms *Chandra* Deep Field South (CDFs, Luo et al., 2008) data was used, as well as the XMM data in COSMOS (Cappelluti et al., 2009; Brusa et al., 2010). The X-ray AGN classification is similar to that of Szokoly et al. (2004). There, the X-ray luminosity and hardness-ratio (HR) are used to identify the AGN population. The HR is a measure of the source obscuration and is defined as $HR \equiv (H-S)/(H+S)$ with H and S being, respectively, the net counts in the hard, 2–8 keV, and soft, 0.5–2 keV, X-ray bands. However, this ratio becomes degenerated with redshift (Eckart et al., 2006; Messias et al., 2010, but also Alexander et al. 2005 and Luo et al. 2010). Hence we compute for each source the respective column densities (N_H) using the Portable, Interactive Multi-Mission Simulator⁵ (PIMMS, version 3.9k). The soft-band/full-band (SB/FB) and hard-band/full-band (HB/FB) flux ratios⁶ were estimated for a range of column densities ($20 < \log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) < 25$, with steps of $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) = 0.01$), and redshifts ($0 < z < 7$, with steps of $z = 0.01$), considering a fixed photon index, $\Gamma = 1.8$

⁵<http://heasarc.nasa.gov/docs/software/tools/pimms.html>

⁶The use of ratios based on FB flux instead of the commonly used SB/HB flux ratios, allows for an estimate of N_H when the source is detected in the FB but no detection is achieved in either the SB or HB.

(Tozzi et al., 2006). The comparison with the observed values results in the estimate of N_{H} , which can then be used to derive an intrinsic X-ray luminosity. The HR constraint used by Szokoly et al. (2004) ($\text{HR} = -0.2$) is equivalent to $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) = 22$ at $z \sim 0$, and this is the value considered throughout the whole redshift range. Hence, an X-ray AGN is considered to have (\vee and \wedge denote the ‘‘OR’’ and ‘‘AND’’ conditions, respectively):

$$L_{\text{X}}^{\text{int}} > 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1} \wedge N_{\text{H}} > 10^{22} \text{ cm}^{-2}$$

\vee

$$L_{\text{X}}^{\text{int}} > 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$$

The remaining X-ray detections are hence regarded as non-AGN sources. The intrinsic X-ray (0.5–10 keV) luminosities are estimated as:

$$L_{\text{X}}^{\text{int}} = 4\pi d_{\text{L}}^2 f_{\text{X}}^{\text{int}} (1+z)^{\Gamma-2} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$$

where $f_{\text{X}}^{\text{int}}$ is the obscuration-corrected X-ray flux in the 0.5–10 keV band and Γ is the observed photon index (when $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) \leq 20$ cm^{-2}) or $\Gamma = 1.8$ (when $\log(N_{\text{H}}[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 20$ cm^{-2}). The luminosity distance, d_{L} is calculated using either the spectroscopic redshift or, if not available, the photometric redshift. The 0.5–8 keV luminosities, derived using Luo et al. (2008) catalogued 0.5–8 keV fluxes, were converted to 0.5–10 keV considering the adopted Γ . For simplicity, the luminosity ‘int’ label is dropped from now on, as we will always be referring to intrinsic luminosities, unless stated.

Regarding the spectroscopic sample, the AGN sources are those which display broad line features or narrow emission lines characteristic of AGN (BLAGN or NLAGN). The remaining sources with a spectroscopic classification are regarded as part of the non-AGN population (e.g., SF galaxies, stars). The NLAGN classification comes from MUSIC cata-

logue in GOODSs, and from Bongiorno et al. (2010) in COSMOS.

In both GOODS and COSMOS final AGN samples, most sources have an X-ray AGN classification (82% and 80%, respectively), and a significant fraction also has a spectroscopic AGN classification (21% in GOODS and 55% in COSMOS).

3.3.1.1 GOODS-South

For consistency, we only consider sources with photometry estimates with a flux error smaller than a third of the flux value (equivalent to an error in magnitude smaller than 0.36) in all K_s -IRAC bands when testing L07, S05, and KI. This requirement will remove many of the fainter objects, but the final sample is still among the deepest ever used to test these IR criteria. The magnitude distribution of the sources considered is shown in Figure 3.9. Among the 1441 sources composing the final sample, 171 (12%) are classified as AGN hosts (141 in X-rays and 38 through spectroscopy). The sample is further separated into redshift ranges ($0 \leq z < 1$, $1 \leq z < 2.5$, $2.5 \leq z < 4$). The adopted threshold of $z = 2.5$, is the redshift beyond which L07, S05, and KI are believed to be strongly contaminated by SF systems as shown in section 3.2.1.2. This results in 801, 536, and 94 sources with K_s -IRAC photometry at $0 \leq z < 1$, $1 \leq z < 2.5$, and $2.5 \leq z < 4$, respectively. When testing KIM we also require reliable $24\mu\text{m}$ photometry (see Figure 3.9). However, this requirement restricts the sample to the brightest sources, unavoidably increasing the probability of finding AGN dominated sources (Brand et al., 2006; Treister et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2008) and resulting in an unfair comparison with the remainder criteria (L07, S05, and KI). Hence, when comparing KIM to L07, S05, and KI, we consider the sample of 835 sources (460/325/47 in the respective redshift bins) with reliable K_s -IRAC-MIPS $_{24\mu\text{m}}$ photometry, of which 139 (17%) are classified as AGN hosts.

Tables 3.1, 3.2, and 3.3 summarize the final statistics for the application of each of the referred IR criteria to the GOODSs control sample at different redshift ranges. L07 reaches

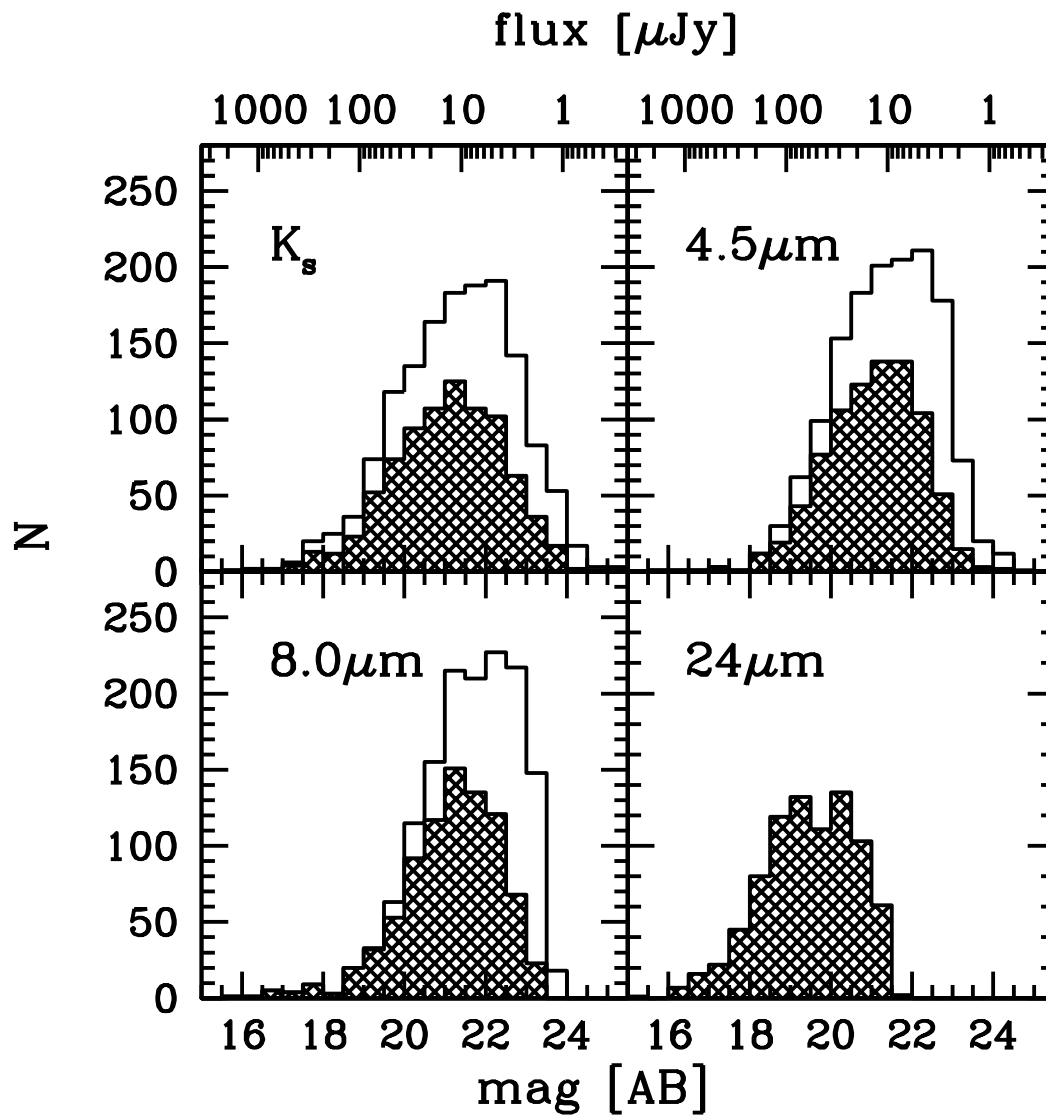


Figure 3.9: The distribution in magnitude of the final GOODSs sample with reliable photometry in K-IRAC bands (open histogram) and K-IRAC-MIPS_{24 μ m} (hatched histogram). Each panel refers to the magnitude distribution in the following bands: K_s (upper left), $4.5\ \mu\text{m}$ (upper right), $8.0\ \mu\text{m}$ (lower left), and $24\ \mu\text{m}$ (lower right). Note that in the latter both histograms coincide.

the highest levels of completeness (\mathcal{C}) in the full redshift range covered, yet at the expense of its reliability (\mathcal{R}), this is, it selects too many sources as AGN (higher \mathcal{C}), consequently including higher fractions of both AGN and non-AGN (lower \mathcal{R}). However, at $1 \leq z < 2.5$, L07 presents an \mathcal{R} value comparable to that of S05. At $z < 2.5$, both KI and KIM present the best \mathcal{R} levels. While at $z < 1$ KI and KIM present similar \mathcal{R} to S05, at $1 \leq z < 2.5$, KI and KIM reach an impressive level of improvement over L07 and S05.

At high- z ($2.5 \leq z < 4$), the fraction of identified AGN hosts is already high (40%, increasing to 70% when restricting to the MIPS_{24 μ m} detected sample). All but one object in the sample fall inside the L07 region, while S05 and KI show yet again higher reliability. Note, however, that KI is significantly more complete than S05. This incompleteness was shown for high- z QSOs by Richards et al. (2009), who consequently extended S05 frontiers to bluer [5.8]-[8.0] colours. The result is the same when restricting to the MIPS_{24 μ m} detected sources, where KIM presents equal efficiencies as S05. This is easily explained with the necessary constraints applied to the sample. By requiring reliable detections in the full K_s -IRAC(-MIPS_{24 μ m}) range, the sample is consequently restricted to the most luminous objects, which at the highest redshifts tend to be AGN hosts. Hence, with the current sample, no conclusion can be drawn on the efficiency of these IR criteria at such high redshifts.

Figure 3.10 details the application to GOODSs data of KI (upper panels) and KIM (lower panels). For this exercise, we have required reliable photometry in the bands needed for KI and KIM. In KIM panels, the boundaries for each of the regions defined in Section 3.2.1.3 are shown. One of the main results from the KIM panels is the extremely low number of sources in the high- z region (lower right-hand side of the diagram). This can be seen as a result of the limiting flux at both X-rays and spectroscopic observations, as a detection is required to have enough S/N for a proper classification with either indicator. Under such requirements, high redshift sources are, with the current existing

Table 3.1: GOODS-South X-ray and Spectroscopic $0 \leq z < 1$ control sample test.

Sample	Criterion	N_{SEL}^a	AGN^b	\mathcal{C}^c	\mathcal{R}^d
	[none] ^e	801	47	...	(6)
K+IRAC	L07	105	22	47	21
	S05	26	12	26	46
	KI	24	12	26	50
	[none] ^e	460	42	...	(9)
K+IRAC+	L07	76	19	45	25
MIPS _{24μm}}	S05	20	11	26	55
	KI	17	10	24	59
	KIM	15	8	19	53

Note. — This table is restricted to the $0 \leq z < 1$ GOODSs sample. While in the upper set of rows it is required reliable photometry — a magnitude error below 0.36 — in $K+IRAC$ bands, in the lower set of rows we also require reliable $24\mu m$ photometry.

^a Number of sources selected by a given criterion with a AGN/non-AGN classification from X-rays and/or spectroscopy.

^b Number of selected sources with an AGN classification, from either the X-rays or optical spectroscopy.

^c Completeness calculated as AGN_{SEL}/AGN_{TOT} .

^d Reliability calculated as AGN_{SEL}/N_{SEL} .

^e The first row in each group refers to the total number of sources with reliable $K+IRAC$ (upper group) and $K+IRAC+24\mu m$ (bottom group) photometry. For reference, the value in parenthesis in \mathcal{R} column gives the overall fraction of identified AGN hosts, equivalent to the \mathcal{R} of a criterion selecting all sources with reliable photometry in the considered bands.

Table 3.2: GOODS-South X-ray and Spectroscopic $1 \leq z < 2.5$ control sample test.

Sample	Criterion	N_{SEL}	AGN	\mathcal{C}	\mathcal{R}
	[none]	536	80	...	(15)
$K+IRAC+$	L07	171	50	63	29
	S05	104	28	35	27
	KI	60	32	40	53
	[none]	325	61	...	(19)
$K+IRAC+$	L07	111	39	64	35
$MIPS_{24\mu m}$	S05	70	25	41	36
	KI	40	26	43	65
	KIM	37	23	38	62

Note. This table is restricted to the $1 \leq z < 2.5$ GOODSs sample. Table structure and columns definitions as in Table 3.1.

Table 3.3: GOODS-South X-ray and Spectroscopic $2.5 \leq z < 4$ control sample test.

Sample	Criterion	N_{SEL}	AGN	\mathcal{C}	\mathcal{R}
	[none]	94	40	...	(43)
$K+IRAC+$	L07	93	40	100	43
	S05	54	29	73	54
	KI	73	36	90	49
	[none]	47	33	...	(70)
$K+IRAC+$	L07	47	33	100	70
$MIPS_{24\mu m}$	S05	32	24	73	75
	KI	41	30	91	73
	KIM	33	24	73	73

Note. This table is restricted to the $2.5 \leq z < 4$ GOODSs sample. Table structure and columns definitions as in Table 3.1.

data, likely AGN hosts, thus falling in the AGN region⁷. Also, the KIM-normal region is worthy of note. The galaxies that appear here are expected to be, as seen in Figure 3.6, either early-to-late type, blue dust-free starbursts or hybrid sources at high redshift (due to the $K-[4.5]>0$ cut), with the IR colours becoming redder with AGN strength. The bluest $[8.0]-[24]$ AGN source at high- z in this region, with an X-ray AGN classification and a faint optical SED ($BViz > 26-27$), has $z_{phot} = 2.54$. Already noted by Messias et al. (2010), it seems to be a very interesting source as its IR colours are compatible with a spiral Sa–Sc galaxy or, if an AGN is contributing to the IR, a galaxy of an earlier type (see Figure 3.6). In either case, its optical flux and blue $[8.0]-[24]$ colour hint to one of the most distant known objects of such evolved nature (e.g., Stockton et al., 2008; van der Wel et al., 2011). A proper discussion on this source and a whole sample of similar objects is deferred to a future work (Messias et al., in preparation), where the disk-like nature is confirmed. The numbers of GOODSs sources falling in each region of the KIM criterion (Section 3.2.1.3) are summarized in Table 3.4.

3.3.1.2 COSMOS

The same study is now followed in COSMOS. No redshift segregation is applied as there is no classified SF system at $z \gtrsim 1.6$ in this COSMOS sample. Among the 7180 sources with either a spectral or X-ray classification and adequate K -IRAC photometry, 1404 are flagged as AGN hosts. There are 2643 sources with MIPS_{24 μ m} detection (844 AGN hosts). Table 3.5 reports the final statistics on the application of the various considered diagnostics. Having that 84% of this COSMOS sample is at $z < 1$, it is fair to compare Tables 3.5 and 3.1, this referring to the GOODSs sample at $0 \leq z < 1$. Both imply the same conclusions, where the relative performances between each of the criteria agree between the two samples. L07 is the most complete, yet the least reliable. S05 and KI provide comparable \mathcal{C} and

⁷The only source found in the high- z region is a type-2 QSO ($\log(L_X[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) > 44$) and indeed shows a redshift estimate of $z_{phot}=3.1$.

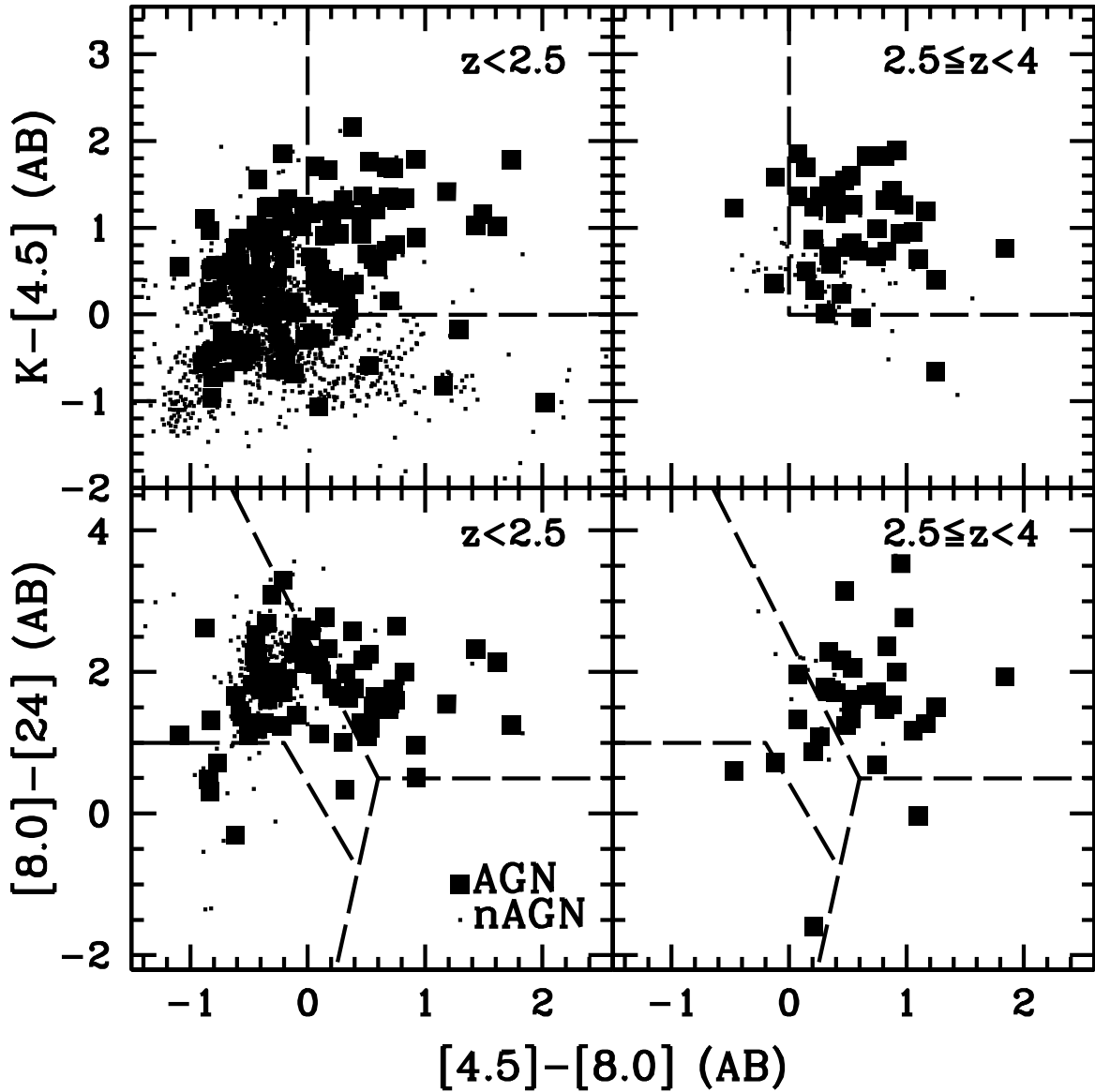


Figure 3.10: The MUSIC sources on KI (upper panels) and KIM (lower panels) colour-colour spaces, divided into low- z ($z < 2.5$, left panels) and high- z ($2.5 \leq z < 4$, right panels) groups. Squares represent AGN hosts, while dots highlight non-AGN sources. The dashed lines in the upper panels refer to the KI criterion, while the dashed lines in the lower panels refer to the adopted region boundaries from Figure 3.6. All sources displayed in the lower panels have $K - [4.5] > 0$ as required by the KIM criterion.

Table 3.4: KIM classification of GOODS-South sample.

Region	N ^a	AGN
Total	387	109
KIM-AGN	90	58
KIM-Misc	270	43
KIM-Normal	26	7
KIM-High- z	1	1

^a Number of sources with good photometry in all relevant bands (K_s , $4.5\mu m$, $8.0\mu m$, and $24\mu m$), pre-selected with $K_s - [4.5] > 0$, and with a AGN/non-AGN X-ray or spectroscopic classification.

\mathcal{R} . KIM is slightly less complete, presenting, however, comparable \mathcal{R} levels to S05 and KI. Together with the results from Table 3.1, this likely means that many AGN dominating the SED at $< 8\mu m$ do not significantly dominate the IR regime at $12\text{--}24\mu m$ at least up to $z \sim 1$. Table 3.6 summarizes the results from the application of each of the KIM criteria (Section 3.2.1.3) to COSMOS sample.

It is difficult to directly compare in absolute value the results achieved with the GOODSs and COSMOS samples, since many survey characteristics differ between the two, as referred above. As an example, by applying COSMOS (IR and X-rays) flux limits to GOODSs sample, the \mathcal{C} and \mathcal{R} values are closer to those of COSMOS. We again stress, however, that relative efficiency between the criteria is the same in the two samples.

3.3.2 IR-excess sources

Also known as IR bright galaxies (IRBGs), IRxs sources are believed to be part of an extreme IR population, the compton-thick (type-2) AGN, frequently missed by optical/X-ray surveys. The selection criteria vary in the literature, but it is accepted that all IRxs

Table 3.5: COSMOS X-ray and Spectroscopic control sample test.

Sample	Criterion	N_{SEL}	AGN	\mathcal{C}	\mathcal{R}
	[none]	7180	1404	...	(20)
$K+IRAC$	L07	2032	1108	79	55
	S05	1101	919	65	83
	KI	965	879	63	91
	[none]	2643	844	...	(32)
$K+IRAC$	L07	1089	730	86	67
$MIPS_{24\mu m}$	S05	700	630	75	90
	KI	644	590	70	92
	KIM	529	485	57	92

Note. Table structure and columns definitions as in Table 3.1. No redshift range is adopted as there is no classified SF systems at *zgrsim1.6* in the COSMOS sample.

Table 3.6: KIM classification of COSMOS sample.

Region	N^a	AGN
Total	838	648
KIM-AGN	529	485
KIM-Misc	304	158
KIM-Normal	1	1
KIM-High- z	4	4

^a Table structure and columns definitions as in Table 3.4.

diagnostics are quite reliable in selecting this type of source ($> 80\%$; Donley et al., 2008; Treister et al., 2009a; Donley et al., 2010). The diagnostics considered below rely on optical-to-IR colour cuts, more specifically, $R - K$ and $R - [24]$. However, R -band photometry is not available in the MUSIC catalog. We thus convert those colours to equivalent ones using i -band ($i - K$ and $i - [24]$) considering a power-law spectrum ($f_\nu \propto \nu^\alpha$). We highlight three criteria. Dey et al. (2008, D08) select sources with $S_{24}/S_R > 1000$ and $S_{24} > 300 \mu\text{Jy}$ (equivalent to $i - [24] > 7$ and $[24] < 17.5$), Fiore et al. (2008, F08) with $S_{24}/S_R > 1000$ and $R - K > 4.5$ ($i - [24] > 7$ and $i - K > 2.5$), allowing a fainter flux cut at $S_{24} > 40 \mu\text{Jy}$ ($[24] < 20$). Finally, we also consider the brightest $S_{24}/S_R > 1000$ sources by adopting the flux cut of Polletta et al. (2008, P08), $S_{24} > 1 \text{ mJy}$ (corresponding to $[24] < 16.5$).

These criteria were applied to the MUSIC and COSMOS catalogues and Table 3.7 details the numbers of the selected sources by each of the IR colour criteria. Similar results are achieved in both GOODSs and COSMOS fields: S05 is the criterion selecting fewer IRxs sources, and KIM is always more complete than both KI and S05. KIM is even more complete than L07 when selecting the brightest IRxs sources (P08), thus revealing its great potential.

3.3.3 SDSS QSOs

QSOs present in the Sloan Digital Sky Survey Quasar Catalogue Data Release 7 (SDSS-DR7, Schneider et al., 2010) were cross-matched ($2''$ radius) with the SST IR catalogues from the COSMOS (S-COSMOS), Lockman Hole, ELAIS-N1, and ELAIS-N2 (SWIRE, Lonsdale et al., 2003) fields using GATOR⁸ at IRSA-NASA/IPAC. The final number of sources amounts to 293 objects. K -band photometry comes from 2MASS (for 21% of the sample Skrutskie et al., 2006), UKIDSS-DXS DR8⁹ (Lawrence et al., 2007) (29%),

⁸<http://irsa.ipac.caltech.edu/applications/Gator/>

⁹UKIDSS uses the UKIRT Wide Field Camera (WFCAM; Casali et al., 2007) and a photometric system described in Hewett et al. (2006). The pipeline processing and science archive are described in Irwin et al.

Table 3.7: Selection of IRxs sources.

Region	F08	D08	P08
GOODS _s			
...	77	10	1
L07	72 (94%)	9 (90%)	1 (100%)
S05	29 (38%)	5 (50%)	1 (100%)
KI	40 (52%)	7 (70%)	1 (100%)
KIM	41 (53%)	8 (80%)	1 (100%)
COSMOS			
...	991	256	51
L07	909 (92%)	244 (95%)	47 (92%)
S05	381 (38%)	137 (54%)	39 (76%)
KI	493 (50%)	179 (70%)	46 (90%)
KIM	618 (62%)	212 (83%)	50 (98%)

Note. — The numbers in parenthesis give the equivalent fractions.

and Ilbert et al. (2009, 23%). Overall, there are 186 QSOs with reliable photometry in all IRAC channels. Of which, 140 have also MIPS_{24 μ m} photometry, 142 have K -band photometry. We find 107 with full K -IRAC-MIPS_{24 μ m} coverage. To enhance the high- z regime sampling, we further include 13 SDSS-DR3 QSOs at $z \sim 6$ (Jiang et al., 2006). Of these, 12 are detected in all IRAC and MIPS_{24 μ m} channels, while only five have 2MASS K -band.

Figure 3.11 shows the location of the QSO sample in the KI, IM (Section 3.2.1.3), L07, and S05 colour-colour spaces. Only sources with reliable photometry in the displayed bands are shown. All four criteria select most of the displayed sample ($> 90\%$). For $z > 5$ QSOs, the IM completeness drops to 50%, in agreement with Figure 3.6 where some QSO templates start to move out of the KIM-AGN region at $z \sim 6$. We note, however, that if there is a prior indication for such high redshifts ($z > 3$), then the [8.0]-[24] colour can be used by itself and much more efficiently for the identification of AGN (cf. Figure 3.8). For $z > 5$ QSOs, all but one show $[8.0] - [24] > 1$. The small number of QSOs with blue $K - [4.5]$ colours is explained in light with what was shown in Section 3.2.1.2. These are potentially less IR dominant AGN and/or sources possessing strong line emission.

The high completeness levels achieved with this optical selected sample show the eclectic selection of IR criteria. However, optically selected AGN are not the main targets of IR AGN diagnostics, as, by definition, optical surveys *do* detect them. The most interesting use of these criteria is to recover sources undetected at X-ray and optical wavelengths. Sections 3.3.2 and 3.3.4 are, in this respect, much more representative of the intended use of IR AGN diagnostics.

(in preparation) and Hambly et al. (2008). We have used data from the 8th data release.

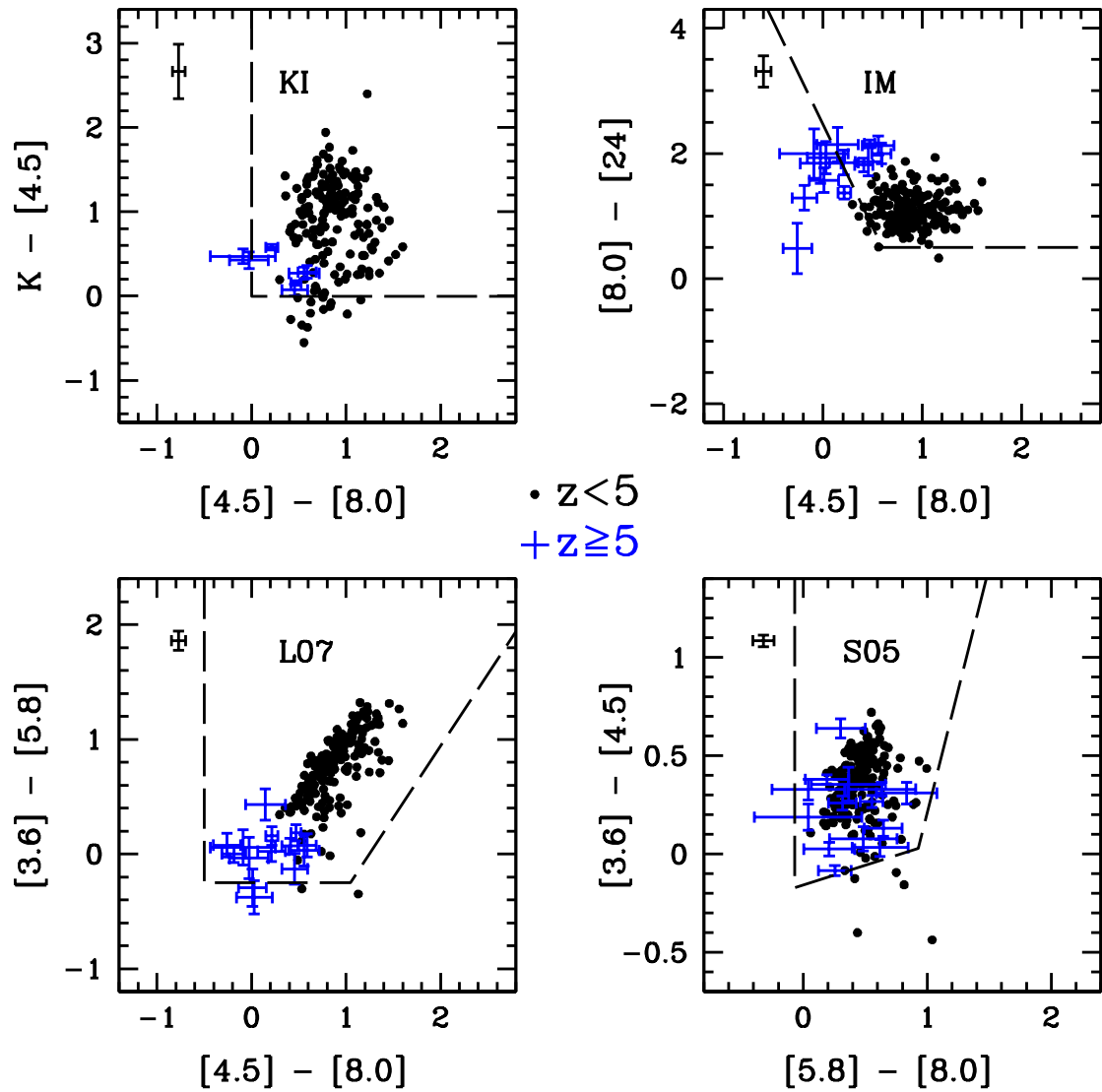


Figure 3.11: The SDSS-DR7 QSOs found in SWIRE and COSMOS fields together with Jiang et al. (2006) sample displayed in KI (top left), IM (top right), L07 (bottom left), and S05 (bottom right) colour-colour spaces. Black dots represent $z < 5$ sources, and blue dots (with error bars) otherwise. The error bars in each top right corner shows the average colour error for the $z < 5$ population. The high $K - [4.5]$ error is due to the numerous sources with 2MASS K-band photometry.

3.3.4 HzRGs

To test yet another AGN population, we now consider HzRGs. These are among the most luminous sources in the Universe and are believed to host powerful AGN. We use the sample of 71 HzRGs from Seymour et al. (2007). These are all at $z > 1$, a redshift range where no normal galaxy is believed to contaminate the AGN IM region proposed in Section 3.2.1.3. This is a classic example — such as that of LBGs — for the direct application of the IM frontiers. Having this, the $K - [4.5] > 0$ colour cut is not required to disentangle AGN/non-AGN dominated sources at $z < 1$, meaning that one may consider $[4.5]-[8.0]$ and $[8.0]-[24]$ colours alone to determine whether AGN or stellar emission dominates the IR spectral regime.

Figure 3.12 shows the location of 62 HzRGs in the IM colour-colour diagram. Note the difference to SDSS QSOs (Figure 3.11), where HzRGs show predominantly redder colours. The AGN region correctly selects as AGN 85% (40 sources) of the sample with adequate photometry (47 sources detected at 4.5, 8.0, and $24\mu\text{m}$). In case no redshift estimate was available, however, one would need the $K - [4.5] > 0$ colour cut to apply the IM AGN criterion, i.e., the KIM criterion. The application of KIM would result in a 76% completeness level. L07 selects 85% (41 out of 48 sources), and S05 selects 69% (33 out of 48 sources).

Again we recall that much of the improvement of KI/KIM over the commonly used L07 and S05 will be in terms of reliability, not evaluated with this sample nor those referred in Sections 3.3.2 and 3.3.3.

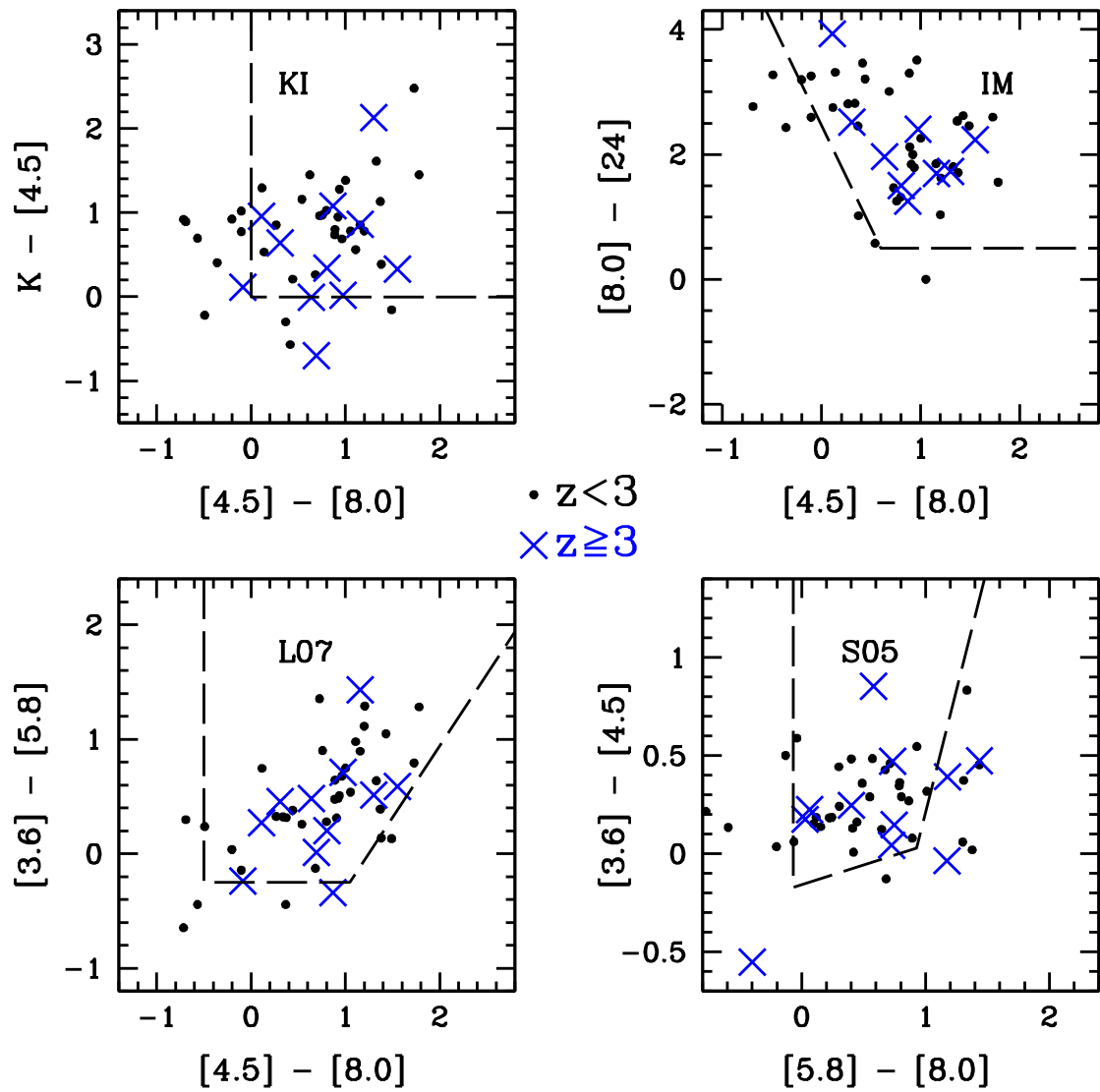


Figure 3.12: The HzRG ($z > 1$) sample from Seymour et al. (2007) displayed in the same colour-colour spaces as in Figure 3.11. Note the objects at $2 < [8.0] - [24] < 4$ which are even redder than QSOs (Figure 3.11). Dots show the $z < 3$ population, while crosses that at $z \geq 3$. Photometric errors of this sample are mostly small and are not displayed for simplicity.

3.4 Discussion

3.4.1 Selection of type-1/2 and low-/high-luminosity sources

Previous studies have claimed that IR colour-colour criteria are biased toward unobscured systems (BLAGN or type-1 AGN; Stern et al., 2005; Donley et al., 2007; Cardamone et al., 2008; Eckart et al., 2010), and tend to select the most luminous objects, missing many low-luminosity ones (Treister et al., 2006; Cardamone et al., 2008; Donley et al., 2008; Eckart et al., 2010). These tendencies are also assessed in this work. The considered AGN samples are those of GOODSs and COSMOS detailed in Section 3.3.1. X-ray and spectroscopy data are considered in order to separate the samples into type-1 (unobscured) and type-2 (obscured) AGN. The way both regimes were considered and the relevant assumptions for this classification are discussed with more detail in Appendix A. The intrinsic X-ray luminosity distribution is shown for GOODSs and COSMOS in Figure 3.13 for the overall X-ray AGN sample, highlighting the type-1 and type-2 AGN populations.

We again emphasise that the aim of IR colour-colour criteria is the selection of galaxies with an IR SED dominated by AGN light. However, low-luminosity AGN will likely not dominate the IR emission, making their IR selection impossible. This is clearly the case seen in Figure 3.14, where the AGN completeness of L07, S05, and KI rises significantly with source luminosity in agreement with the literature. Note also that the type-1 and type-2 AGN trends follow each other quite reasonably, pointing to a much stronger dependency on source luminosity than on type-1/type-2 nature (we note that the same trend is achieved if considering the uncorrected or observed luminosity). Literature work seems to indicate that type-1 AGN tend to be more luminous than type-2 AGN (still controversial, but see the discussions in Treister et al., 2009a; Bongiorno et al., 2010, and references therein). If so, and combined with the IR criteria sensitivity toward high luminosity objects, then one would expect to see a higher fraction of type-1 objects among the IR selected AGN

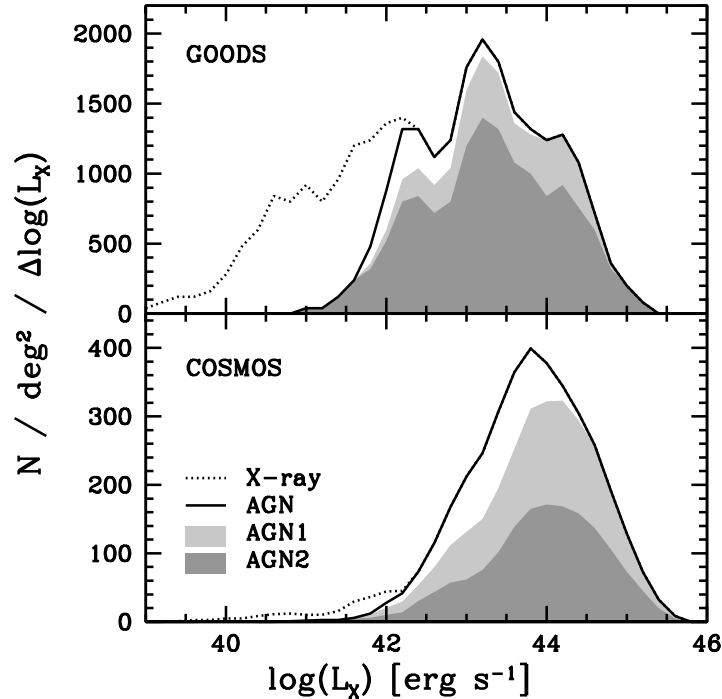


Figure 3.13: The source density distribution with intrinsic X-ray luminosity distribution for GOODSs (upper panel, $\sim 140 \text{ arcmin}^2$) and COSMOS (lower panel, 1.8 deg^2) samples (note the y-axis are different). The trends were obtained with a moving bin of width $\Delta \log(L_X) = 0.6$, with measurements taken each $\Delta \log(L_X) = 0.2$. The overall X-ray population is represented by the dotted line, the AGN by the continuous line. The AGN population is further separated into the type-1 (light shaded region, $N_{\text{H}}(\text{cm}^{-2}) \leq 22$) and type-2 (dark shaded region, $N_{\text{H}}(\text{cm}^{-2}) > 22$) sub-populations.

sample. However, this does not mean the IR criteria are more sensitive to type-1 AGN, as the main dependency is on luminosity (Figure 3.14). Adding to that, the separation into type-1 and type-2 objects is highly dependent on the techniques used for that task (optical versus X-ray diagnostics, and HR versus N_{H} constraints, as discussed in Appendix A), and how one treats the available information. Hence, a different approach to verify a real dependency on AGN nature has to be considered

Let \mathcal{S} be introduced as the relative sensitivity of a given selection criterion to a certain AGN type over another. Take unobscured (type-1) and obscured (type-2) AGN popu-

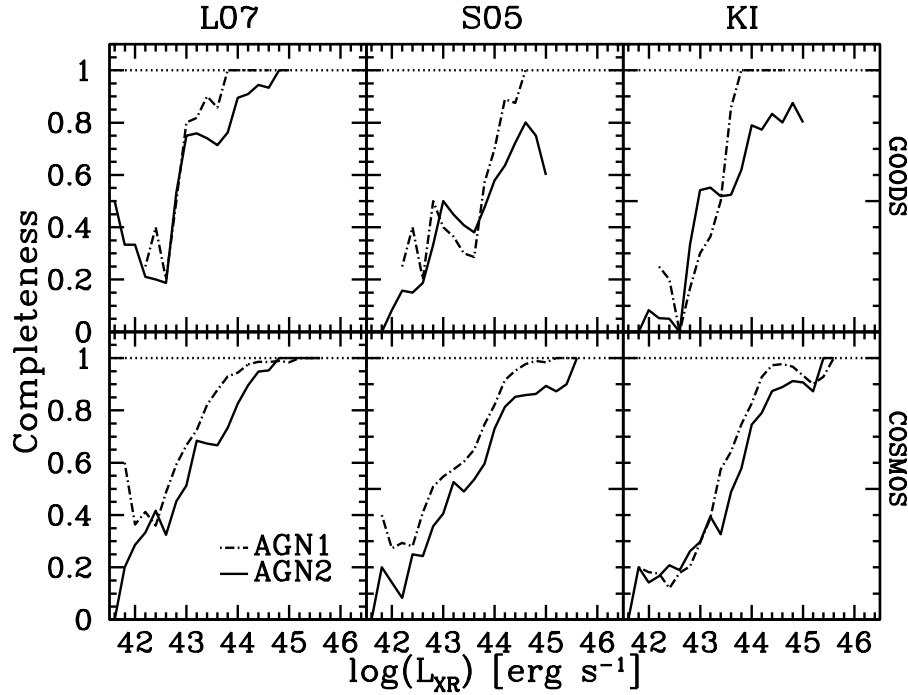


Figure 3.14: The AGN completeness for L07, S05, and KI criteria depending on source X-ray luminosity and type-1 (dotted-dashed lines) or type-2 (continuous lines) nature.

lations as an example. These sub-populations exist in the overall AGN population at a given proportion. If such a proportion is maintained after applying a given selection criterion (either colour or luminosity based), it means the criterion is equally sensitive to either population, if not, there is a bias. Hence, \mathcal{S} is calculated as the ratio between the proportion estimated using a given criterion and the proportion estimated for the total AGN population. That is, the relative sensitivity regarding type-1 and type-2 AGN is defined as $\mathcal{S}_{12} = (A_1/A_2)_{\text{SEL}}/(A_1/A_2)_{\text{TOT}}$, where A_1 and A_2 are the numbers of type-1 and type-2 objects, respectively. The relative sensitivity concerning low ($\log(L_X[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) < 43.5$) and high X-ray luminosity ($\log(L_X[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) \geq 43.5$) is defined as $\mathcal{S}_{\text{HL}} = (A_{\text{H}}/A_{\text{L}})_{\text{SEL}}/(A_{\text{H}}/A_{\text{L}})_{\text{TOT}}$, where A_{H} and A_{L} are the numbers of high and low X-ray luminosity objects, respectively. Values of 1 mean no bias, while, for example, higher values of \mathcal{S}_{12} or \mathcal{S}_{HL} mean biases favouring the selection of type-1 or high-luminosity AGN,

respectively. As an example, in Figure 3.14 the IR criteria clearly show a bias toward the selection of high luminosity sources. This implies by definition $\mathcal{S}_{\text{HL}} > 1$ for the IR AGN diagnostics. Care should be taken when comparing \mathcal{S} values. For instance, if a given criterion has a lower \mathcal{S}_{12} value than another criterion, that does not necessarily mean a comparatively higher completeness of type-2 sources, nor lower completeness of type-1 sources. The completeness ought to be estimated separately.

Figure 3.15 shows the variation of \mathcal{S}_{12} with luminosity, meaning that in each bin $\mathcal{S}_{12} = (A_1/A_2)_{\text{BIN}}/(A_1/A_2)_{\text{TOT}}$. The trend is estimated with a moving bin with width $\Delta \log(L_X) = 0.6$, with measurements taken every $\Delta \log(L_X) = 0.2$ step (procedure similar to the moving average method). The three panels show the difference when considering intrinsic or observed luminosities (L_X^{INT} or L_X^{OBS} , respectively), and N_{H} or HR (two different alternatives for the AGN type-1 and type-2 classifications). In the upper panel, the use of HR and L_X^{OBS} imply a bias favouring the selection of type-1 AGN at the highest luminosities, in agreement with, e.g., Hasinger (2008) and Bongiorno et al. (2010). Yet, if one considers N_{H} instead (middle panel) this bias appears to decrease. The trend disappears over the full luminosity range if both N_{H} and L_X^{INT} are considered instead (lower panel). However, the sample spreads over a large redshift range (see ahead) and that variable is hidden in this plot. In fact, if now \mathcal{S}_{12} is plotted against redshift (where $\mathcal{S}_{12} = (A_1/A_2)_{\text{zBIN}}/(A_1/A_2)_{\text{TOT}}$, upper panel of Figure 3.16), a redshift evolution is seen. A weighted least square fit implies an evolution ($\mathcal{S}_{12} \propto (1+z)^\alpha$) with $\alpha = 0.39$ for GOODSs sample and $\alpha = 0.17$ for COSMOS sample. However, if only the $z < 2.5$ regime is considered, an $\alpha = 0.38$ is estimated for COSMOS, in agreement with GOODSs.

As for the evolution with redshift of the obscured fraction (f_{obs}), it is either flat ($\alpha = 0.01$ for GOODSs sample) or mildly decreasing ($\alpha = -0.17$ for COSMOS sample). However, Treister & Urry (2006) and Treister et al. (2009b) proposed that, in reality, this trend (their estimates appear as crosses in Figure 3.16) actually implies an increase

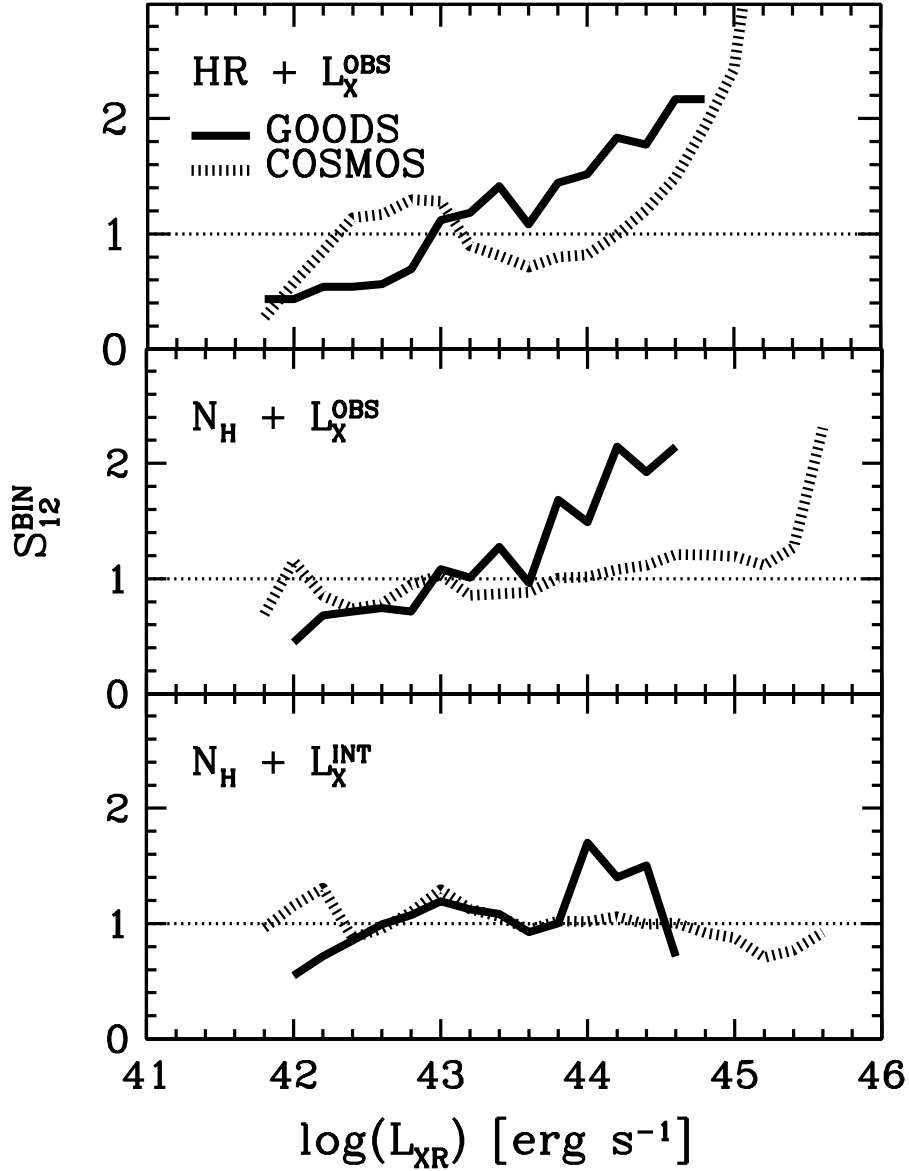


Figure 3.15: The variation of \mathcal{S}_{12} with source X-ray luminosity. The different panels show the effect of different assumptions in assessing the luminosity classes, by considering either the intrinsic or observed luminosities (L_X^{INT} or L_X^{OBS} , respectively), and type-1 or type-2 populations, by considering either the HR or N_H . A moving bin is used as described in Figure 3.13. In each bin, $\mathcal{S}_{12}^{BIN} = (A_1/A_2)_{BIN}/(A_1/A_2)_{TOT}$.

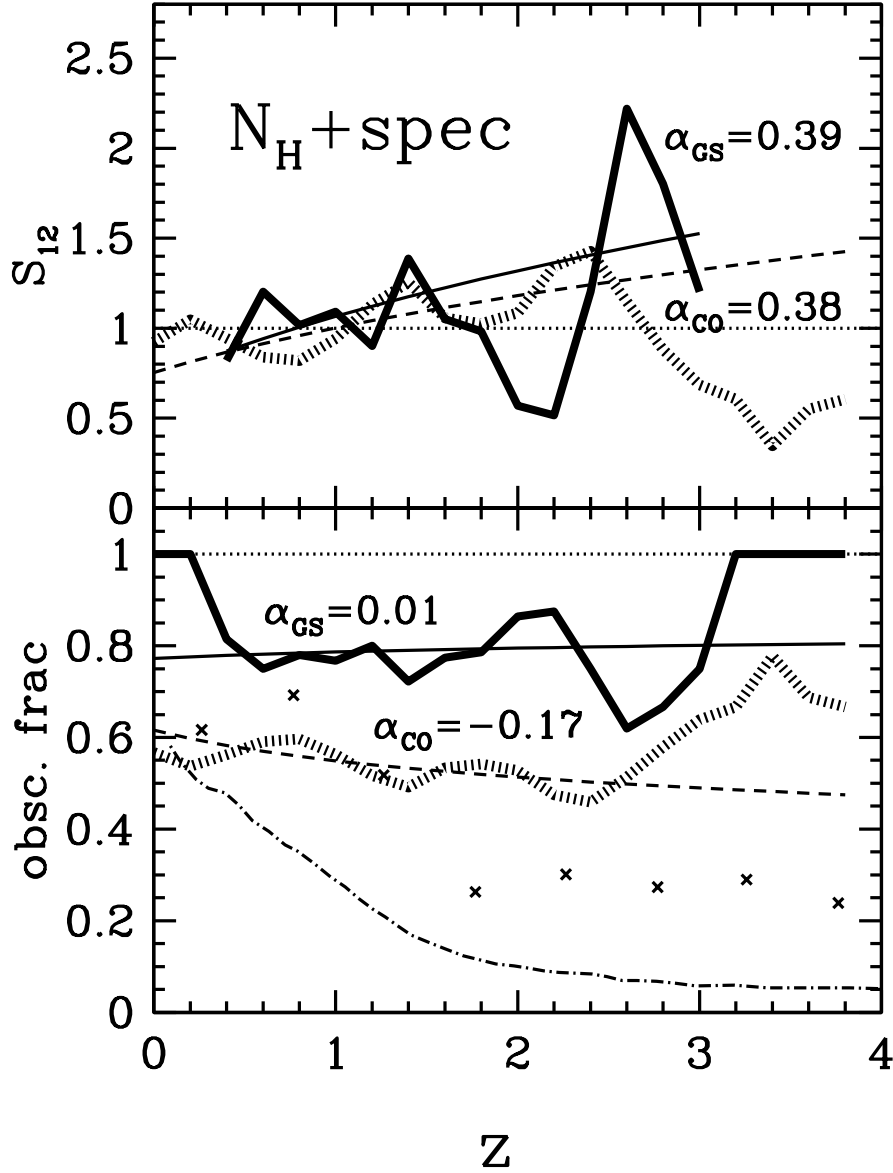


Figure 3.16: The variation of S_{12} (upper panel) and the obscured fraction (lower panel) with redshift. The trends for both GOODSs (thick solid lines) and COSMOS (thick dotted lines), are displayed. The power-law ($\propto (1+z)^\alpha$) index α is given for GOODSs (α_{GS}) and COSMOS (α_{CO}). As a reference, the data points (crosses) and the expected evolution of the obscured fraction induced by sample characteristics in ECDFs (dotted-dashed line) from Treister et al. (2009b) are displayed.

of the obscured fraction. This assumption is based on the estimated evolution (seen as dotted-dashed line in Figure 3.16) of f_{obs} with redshift after accounting for incompleteness, survey characteristics and spectral classification (specifically for Extended CDFs, ECDFs). However, comparing our results with theirs, our method implies an even higher fraction of obscured sources at high redshifts ($z \gtrsim 1.5$), even when the shallower COSMOS survey is considered. Treister et al. (2009b) stress that the use of N_H is likely overestimating the obscured fraction at the highest redshifts. However, that assumption is based on a tentative finding (as referred by the authors) by Akylas et al. (2006, see Appendix A). Also, if the HR (known to be degenerate at high- z , resulting in a higher fraction of unobscured sources) is used instead (Figure 3.17), the results at $z \gtrsim 1.5$ for the COSMOS sample follow those of Treister et al. (2009b), who use spectroscopy data to assess the type-1 and type-2 populations at high redshifts. Hence, this is probably an evidence for the spectroscopy analysis adopted in Treister et al. (2009b) to be missing a reasonable fraction of the obscured population at the highest redshifts. However, their attempt to correct for incompleteness is probably the best current method to estimate the real f_{obs} evolution with redshift.

The dependency of the type-1 to type-2 ratio on luminosity or redshift affects the evaluation of the type-1/type-2 bias of the IR criteria. So, assuming that IR criteria are clearly dependent on source luminosity (presenting high \mathcal{S}_{HL} , Figure 3.14) and the type-1/type-2 AGN ratio is equal throughout the full range of intrinsic luminosities (Figure 3.15), does our sample imply nevertheless a bias toward type-1 sources, as referred to in the literature? Figure 3.18 helps to clarify this point. Restricting the estimate of \mathcal{S}_{12} to each luminosity bin ($\mathcal{S}_{12} = (A_1/A_2)_{SEL}/(A_1/A_2)_{BIN}$ for each IR criterion) any possible luminosity dependency seen in Figure 3.15 is avoided. Although GOODSs sample (upper panel) does not allow one to draw any conclusion due to the high scatter, in COSMOS (lower panel) it is clear the IR criteria are biased toward type-1 AGN at intermediate

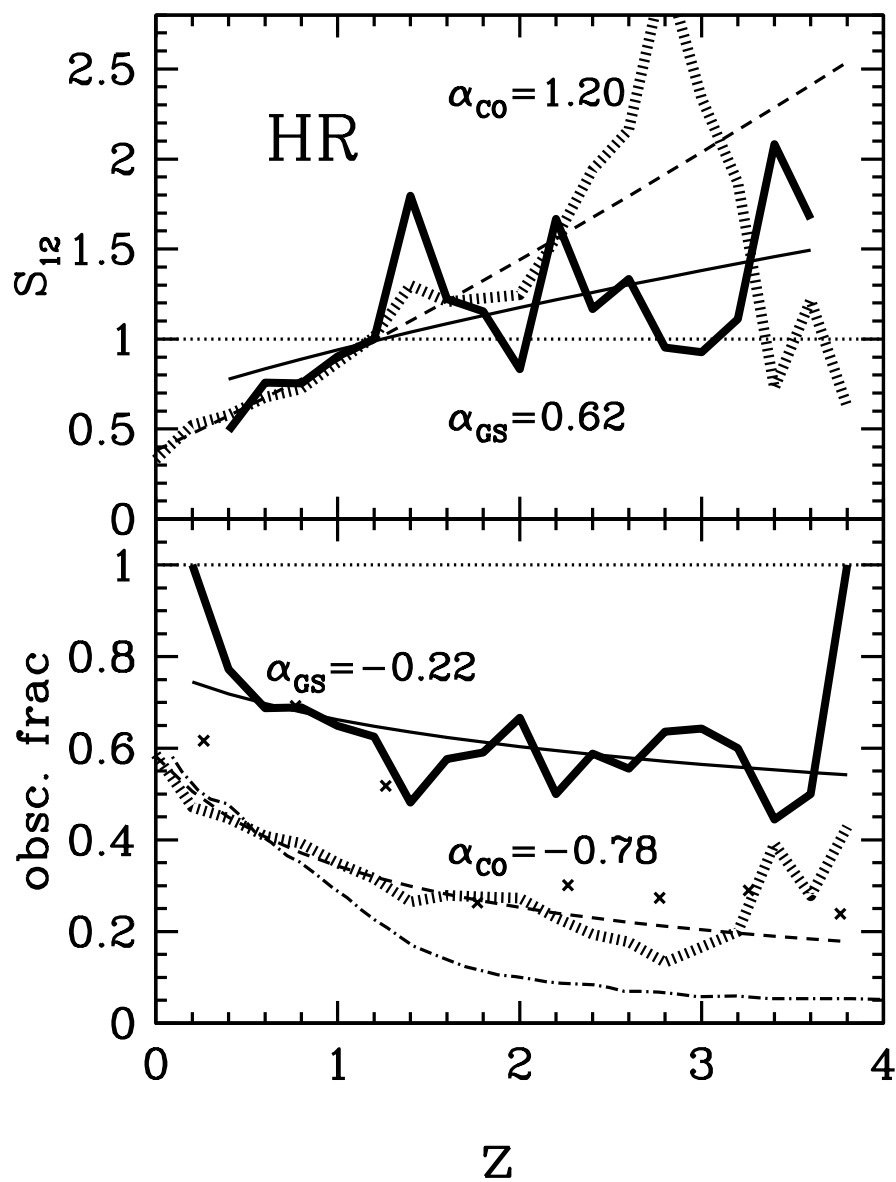


Figure 3.17: The same as in Figure 3.16, but considering the HR to identify obscured and unobscured sources instead of N_H and optical/nIR spectroscopy. Symbols and labelling as in Figure 3.16.

luminosities ($43 < \log(L_X[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) < 44$), while both types seem equally selected at the highest luminosities. This is in agreement with the findings of Treister et al. (2009a), who noticed a lack of IR excess emission in intermediate luminosity obscured AGN, even though their analysis is mainly spectroscopically based. In that work, effects of self-absorption in a thick torus are evoked as the mechanism behind the lack of IR AGN emission. However, can dust-free X-ray obscuration also account for such behaviour? As discussed in Appendix A, the existence of dust-free clouds between the nuclear source and the dust torus is responsible for the bulk of the X-ray obscuration, but it will not emit at IR wavelengths. This results in a weaker radiation field at any given radius when compared to a gas-obscuration-free scenario. Hence, the inner radius of the dust torus (set by the sublimation radius, e.g., Nenkova et al., 2008; Hönig & Kishimoto, 2010) will be smaller and the dust will still be heated up to the highest temperatures, emitting at short IR wavelengths. However, the existence of a weaker radiation field results in a less intense dust emission, when comparing gas obscured and unobscured AGN with equal intrinsic X-ray luminosities. Hence, dust-free obscuration can indeed be another reason for the observed lack of IR AGN emission of intermediate luminosity AGN.

Also, the scenario where the obscuration material of the X-ray nuclear source is not the circumnuclear torus, but instead the dust present in the disk of the host galaxy itself may happen. AGN are frequently found in disk-like sources either at low redshifts (e.g., Griffith & Stern, 2010; Cisternas et al., 2011) or at earlier times (e.g., Schawinski et al., 2011). Extreme examples are also found in the literature. For example, Polletta et al. (2006) find five X-ray compton-thick candidates (sources having $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 24$). Yet, three of them are not selected as such at IR wavelengths, showing instead normal spiral-type SEDs. Available optical imaging of these sources is however inconclusive regarding the morphology and orientation of these systems. This host galaxy disc obscuration effect is not expected to be a significant contributor to the X-ray compton-thick population, as it

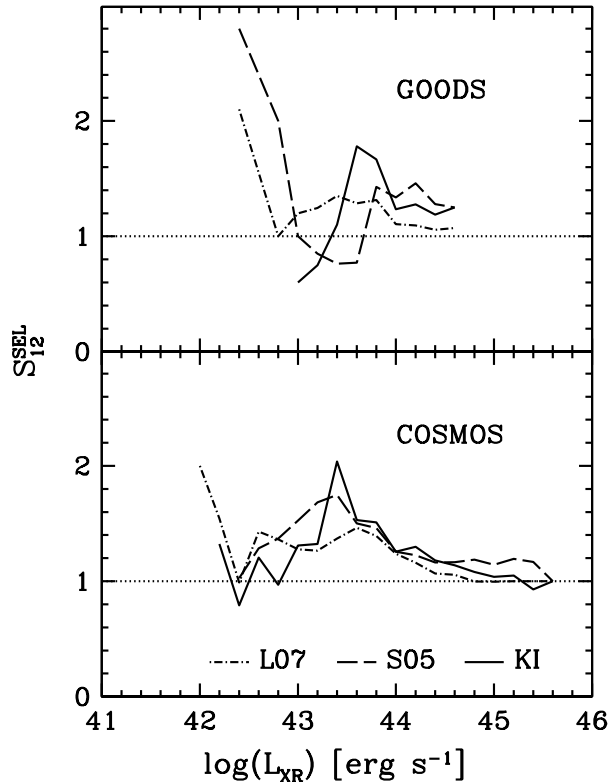


Figure 3.18: The variation of \mathcal{S}_{12} with source intrinsic X-ray luminosity for L07, S05, and KI. N_{H} is considered to identify type-1 and type-2 AGNs. A moving bin is used as described in Figure 3.13. In each bin $\mathcal{S}_{12}^{\text{SEL}} = (A_1/A_2)_{\text{SEL}}/(A_1/A_2)_{\text{BIN}}$.

has been found that the rotation axis of the central black-hole (a) is randomly align to the galaxy disc in Seyfert galaxies (Clarke et al., 1998; Nagar & Wilson, 1999; Kinney et al., 2000) and (b) it seems to avoid the dust torus plane in radio galaxies (Schmitt et al., 2002, and references therein). Nevertheless, deeper optical and (near-)IR imaging should be pursued as a fundamental tool to confirm such scenario in these three specific X-ray compton-thick sources.

Table 3.8 shows the results for GOODSs sample, while Table 3.9 those for COSMOS, both considering the full redshift range. Both show a clear bias towards more X-ray luminous sources (as implied by Figure 3.14) and, at a lower level, towards type-1 objects.

Table 3.8: AGN-type selection comparison in GOODS-South.

Sample	Criterion	A_1^a	A_2^a	\mathcal{S}_{12}^b	A_L^a	A_H^a	\mathcal{S}_{HL}^b
	[none] ^c	33	119	...	171	65	...
<i>K</i> +IRAC	L07	26	75	1.26	69	58	2.25
	S05	17	45	1.37	36	38	2.78
	KI	20	55	1.32	33	51	4.07
	[none] ^c	26	101	...	137	56	...
<i>K</i> +IRAC	L07	23	61	1.47	56	49	2.15
MIPS _{24μm}	S05	15	39	1.50	30	34	2.78
	KI	18	44	1.59	27	43	3.90
	KIM	13	37	1.37	25	35	3.43

Note. — While in the upper set of rows it is required reliable photometry ($\delta\text{mag} < 0.36$) in *K*+IRAC bands, in the lower set of rows we also require reliable 24 μ m photometry. A_1 stands for AGN type-1, whereas A_2 for type-2 (X-ray or spectroscopic classifications). A_L refers to the sources having $\log L_{\text{XR}} < 43.5$ erg s⁻¹, while A_H refers to those having $\log L_{\text{X}}[\text{erg s}^{-1}] \geq 43.5$. No redshift cut applied to this sample.

^a Number of AGN sources selected by the applied MIR criterion.

^b Relative sensibility: $\mathcal{S}_{12} = (A_1/A_2)_{\text{SEL}}/(A_1/A_2)_{\text{TOT}}$ and $\mathcal{S}_{HL} = (A_H/A_L)_{\text{SEL}}/(A_H/A_L)_{\text{TOT}}$. \mathcal{S}_{12} or \mathcal{S}_{HL} values higher than one mean greater relative sensitivity toward A_1 or A_H AGN, respectively.

^c The first row in each group refers to the total number of sources of a given type with reliable *K*+IRAC (upper group) and *K*+IRAC+24 μ m (bottom group) photometry.

Table 3.9: AGN-type selection comparison in COSMOS.

Sample	Criterion	A_1	A_2	\mathcal{S}_{12}	A_L	A_H	\mathcal{S}_{HL}
	[none]	519	629	...	468	916	...
$K+IRAC$	L07	455	445	1.24	262	820	1.60
	S05	404	354	1.39	196	709	1.85
	KI	378	339	1.36	149	721	2.48
	[none]	371	370	...	252	584	...
$K+IRAC$	L07	346	293	1.18	164	549	1.45
$MIPS_{24\mu m}$	S05	313	246	1.27	117	497	1.83
	KI	288	229	1.26	87	492	2.45
	KIM	233	190	1.23	69	403	2.52

Note. — Table structure and columns definitions as in Table 3.8.

3.4.2 Photometric errors

In the discussion so far, some conceptual advantages of KI and KIM have been presented, such as the open upper right AGN selection region allowing the selection of extremely obscured sources. Also, the use of filters probing widely separated wavelength ranges, such as K and $4.5\mu\text{m}$ as opposed to 3.6 and $4.5\mu\text{m}$, for instance. This results in a wider colour-range domain, diminishing the sensitivity to photometric errors, particularly relevant close to the colour-colour space boundaries. This is verified by assessing the errors associated with the numbers in Tables 3.1 and 3.5 by varying the data points within the respective photometric errors ($\delta\text{mag} < 0.36$). For instance, in GOODSs, the overall \mathcal{C} of KI can vary between $\sim 46\%$ and $\sim 50\%$. This is a range of $\sim 5\%$, which is comparable to that of L07 (9%), yet significantly smaller than that of S05 (23%). Restricting to MIPS $_{24\mu\text{m}}$ detected sources, the ranges are 6, 20, 2, and 9% for L07, S05, KI, and KIM criteria, respectively. The range for the \mathcal{R} variation is 28% for KI, again comparable to that of L07, 20%, and much better than that of S05, 54%. Again, the MIPS $_{24\mu\text{m}}$ detected sample holds similar results, with \mathcal{R} variations of 17, 41, 19, and 22% for L07, S05, KI, and KIM criteria. The same test in COSMOS implies the same conclusion: the frontiers of criteria with filters probing widely separated wavelength ranges are less affected by photometric errors.

3.4.3 $K - [4.5]$ at $z < 1$

We finally highlight the importance of the $K - [4.5] > 0$ colour cut as part of the KI and KIM-AGN criteria. In Figure 3.19 the redshift distributions for both the AGN and non-AGN populations found in GOODSs and COSMOS are presented. One can see the effect of the $K - [4.5] > 0$ cut: at $z < 1$ there is a significant rejection of non-AGN galaxies (97%), while $\sim 40\%$ of the AGN population is kept. At $z \geq 1$ this colour cut has practically no effect in either galaxy population, selecting 97% of the AGN population in both fields, and

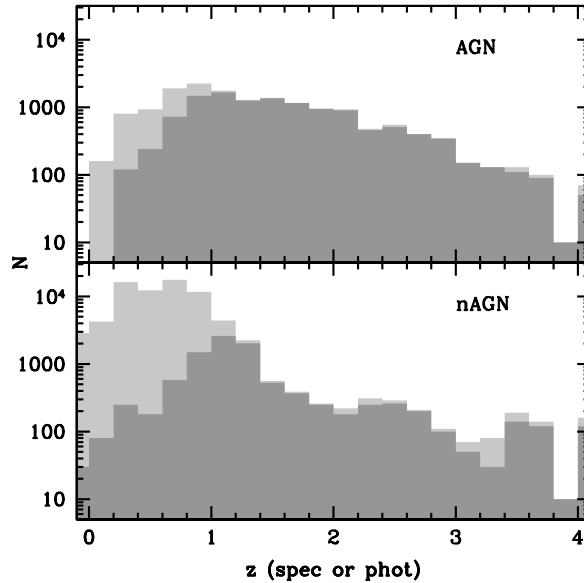


Figure 3.19: Applying a $K - [4.5] > 0$ cut to the GOODSs and COSMOS samples in order to discard low- z non-AGN systems. Note the logarithmic scale on the ordinate axes.

80% (54%) of the non-AGN in GOODSs (COSMOS), not biasing the selection in the IM colour-colour space (Section 3.2.1.3). As expected, the selection of AGN sources improves with source X-ray luminosity (Figure 3.14). At low- z the \mathcal{C} of $\log(L_X[\text{ergs}^{-1}]) > 43.5$ sources is 60% (67%) in GOODSs (COSMOS), and 95% (97%) at high- z .

3.5 Implications for JWST surveys

The start of scientific observations of *JWST*, the successor of *SST* at MIR wavelengths, is expected for 2015. It will be a 6.5m space telescope with the ability to probe the Universe from 1 to $25\mu\text{m}$. As highlighted in this work, this spectral regime has great potential for separating AGN from normal (non-AGN) galaxies.

The sensitivity will of course be better than ever before, and the high- z universe will be probed with unprecedented detail. Many galaxies will be studied with MIR spectroscopy, and signs for AGN activity will be naturally found that way (see, for example, Laurent

et al., 2000, and references therein). When dealing with large surveys, however, with thousands of sources and many close to the detection limit, AGN selection will have to rely on photometric diagnostics such as the KI/KIM criteria presented here. By selecting AGN candidates over a broad range of redshifts, $0 < z < 7$, the KIM criterion will enable the study of AGN phenomena to the earliest epochs.

While the KI/KIM criteria can already be applied to current data from *SST*, potentially more efficient MIR criteria will be possible with the large wavelength coverage of the *JWST*. Using planned *JWST* filter response curves¹⁰, we suggest a possible and promising colour-colour space alternative to that proposed in Section 3.2.1.3, using the MIRI $10\mu\text{m}$ and $21\mu\text{m}$ filters instead of the IRAC $8.0\mu\text{m}$ and MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ bands, and the NirCAM $4.4\mu\text{m}$ instead of IRAC $4.5\mu\text{m}$ (note that these are bands close to those used in Wide-field IR Survey Explorer, WISE; see also Assef et al., 2010). In Figure 3.20, the four panels show that the $[4.4]-[10]$ versus $[10]-[21]$ colour-colour space seems to present a better selection of the AGN/Hybrid model tracks. The AGN model tracks are better delineated by the selection boundaries and, as a bonus, the $21\mu\text{m}$ filter is significantly more sensitive than the planned MIRI $25\mu\text{m}$ filter (equivalent to the MIPS $24\mu\text{m}$ filter), increasing the probability of a detection needed for an AGN classification. This is shown in Figures 3.21 and 3.22, where AGN dominated sources are detected up to the highest redshift considered in this work ($z \sim 7$).

¹⁰Provided online at:

http://www.stsci.edu/jwst/instruments/nircam/instrumentdesign/filters/index_html
http://www.stsci.edu/jwst/instruments/miri/instrumentdesign/miri_glance.html.

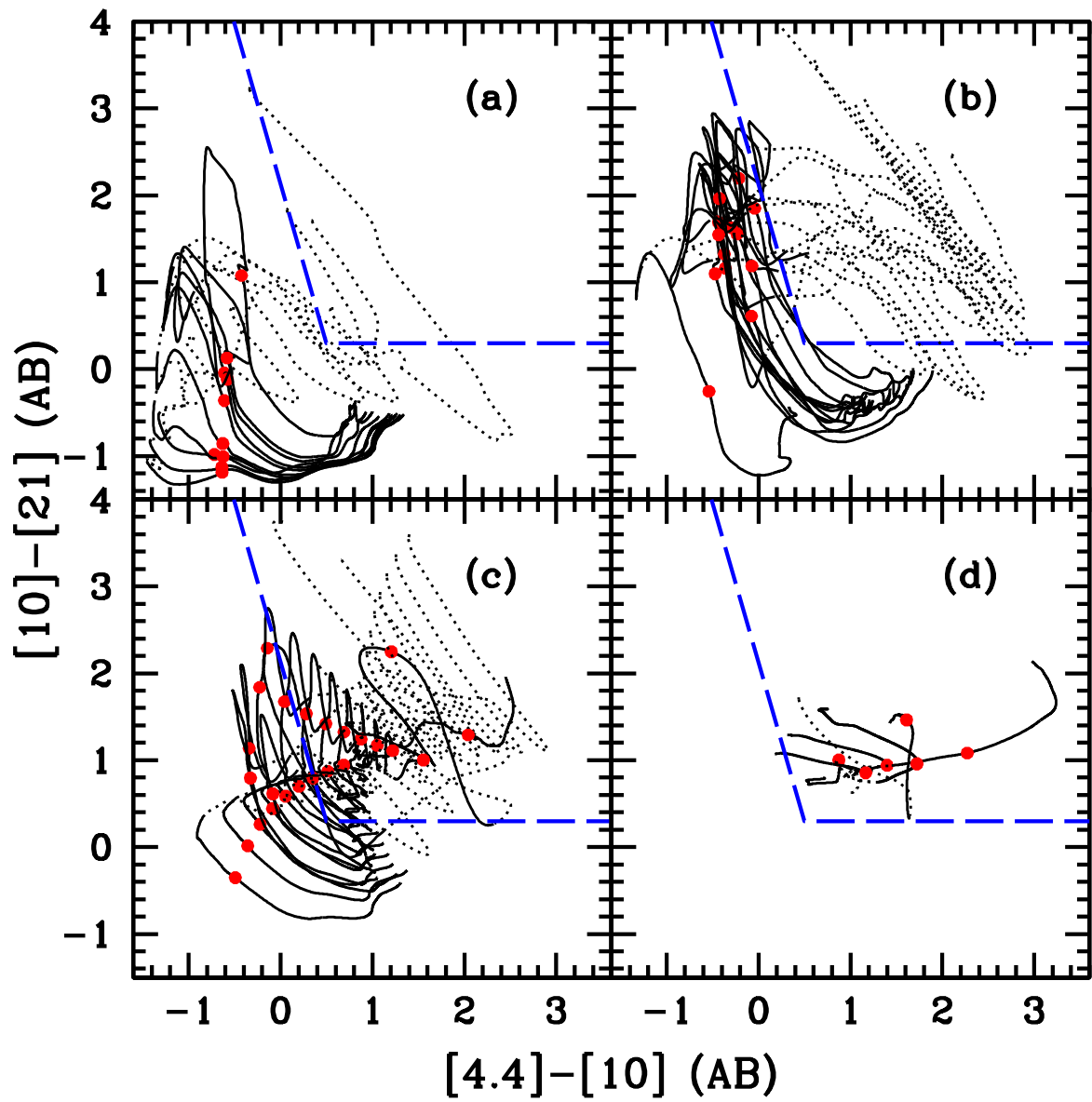


Figure 3.20: An alternative colour-colour space with *JWST* bands which might improve the AGN selection at $0 < z < 7$. Symbols and panels definition as in Figure 3.2.

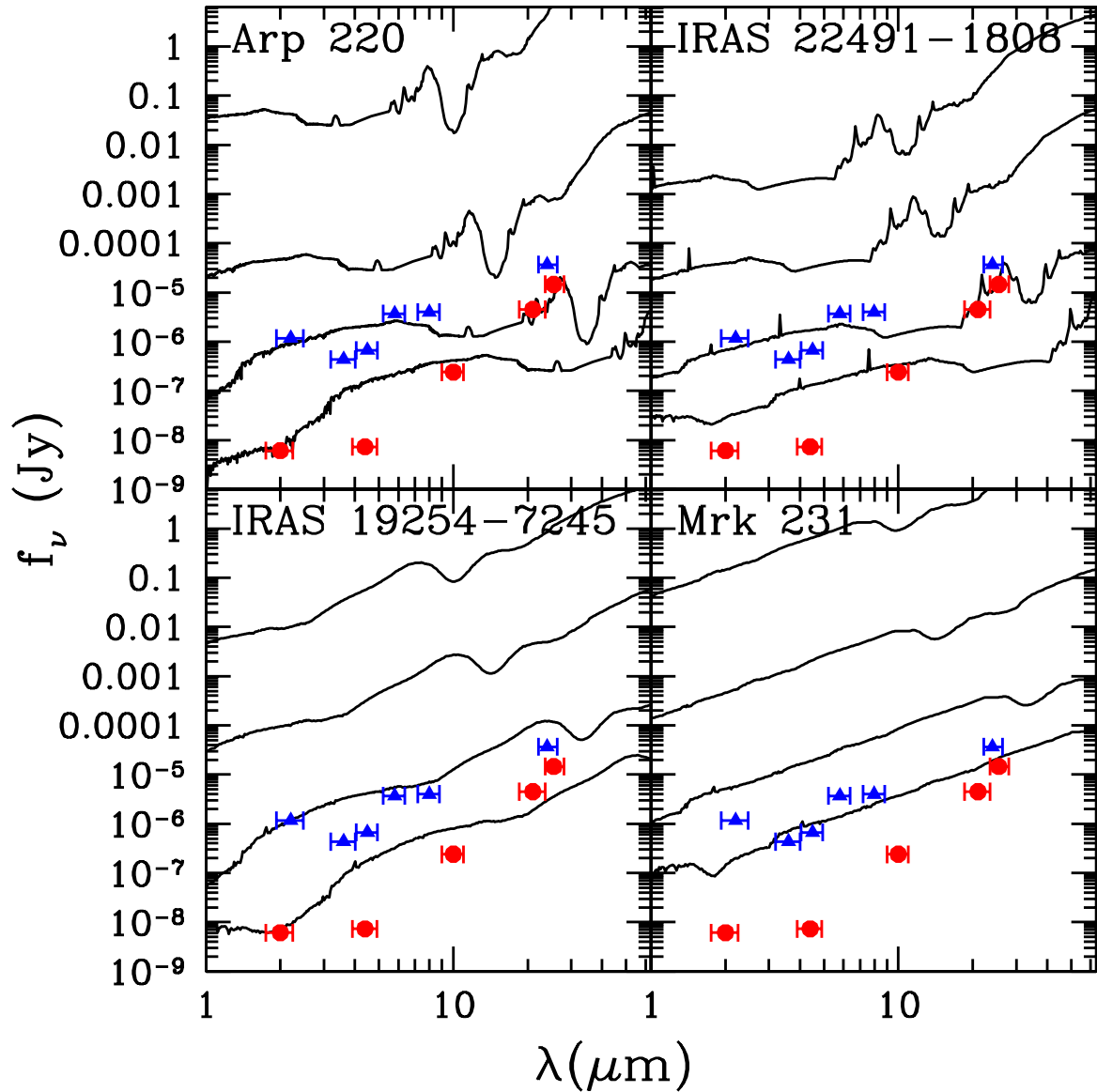


Figure 3.21: SED evolution with redshift for two star-formation dominated systems (Arp220 and IRAS 22491-1908, upper panels), and two AGN dominated systems (IRAS 19254-7245 and Mrk231, lower panels). The redshift steps are $z = z_0, 0.5, 2.5, 7$. The blue dots indicate the K -IRAC-MIPS $_{24\mu\text{m}}$ GOODSs 10σ total flux level (based in Table 1 of Wuyts et al., 2008), red dots give the 10σ level (at equivalent GOODSs integration times) of the $JWST$ filters: $2.0\mu\text{m}$, $4.4\mu\text{m}$, $10\mu\text{m}$, and $21\mu\text{m}$. At longer wavelengths, the gap between SST and $JWST$'s sensitivities is smaller due to the warmer telescope thermal background of $JWST$.

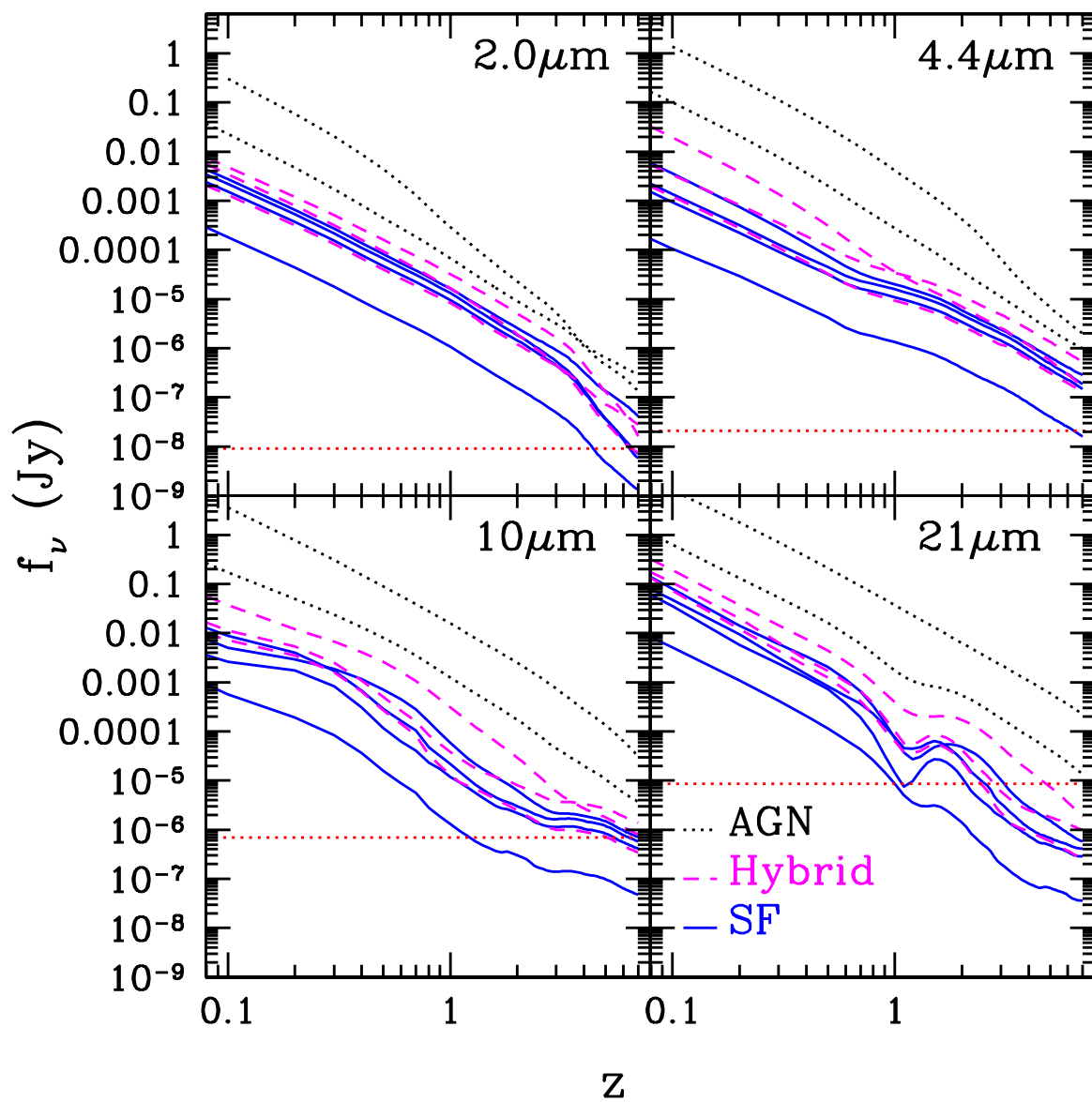


Figure 3.22: Flux evolution with redshift for starbursts (blue continuous line), hybrids (magenta dashed line), and AGN (black dotted line) in four *JWST* filters. Red dotted horizontal lines mark the 10σ level (10,000 s integration) of each filter.

3.6 Conclusions

Based on semi-empirical galaxy SED templates, we have developed IR colour based criteria for the selection of a wide variety of AGN in a large redshift range ($0 < z < 7$). As well as the application to existing data (and soon to be available WISE all sky survey), these criteria are particularly relevant for the *JWST*, given the wide MIR spectral range considered. We thus propose new AGN IR diagnostics, which select AGN populations at better reliability levels than commonly used IR criteria (e.g., L07 and S05). The $K - [4.5]$ colour is ideal for the $z < 1$ universe (Sections 3.2.1.2 and 3.4.3); KI is a reliable alternative to the IRAC-based diagnostics (Section 3.2.1.2); and KIM (Section 3.2.1.3), a 4 band (K, 4.5, 8.0, and $24\mu\text{m}$), 3 colour (K-[4.5], [4.5]-[8.0], and [8.0]-[24]) criterion is shown to be more reliable than the L07 and S05 ‘wedge’ criteria on selecting AGN hosts over the full $0 < z < 7$ range, when tested against some of the deepest IR data available today (Section 3.3) and based in a template library sampling a broad range of galaxy types. In comparison to S05, these criteria are also shown to be significantly more robust against photometric errors and more complete in the selection of IRxs sources.

Nonetheless, in the coming years, these criteria should be improved as a result of the rich variety of filters to be incorporated in the instruments on board the upcoming *JWST*. The ability to track AGN activity since the end of the reionization epoch will hold great advantages for the study of galaxy evolution in the future.

Appendix A

Obscured/unobscured AGN

A.1 X-ray versus optical diagnostics

In this study, both X-rays and optical/nIR spectroscopy are used to identify the unobscured (type-1) and obscured (type-2) AGN populations. However, there are known cases where the two spectral regimes do not agree: either narrow lines are found in the optical spectra of X-ray unobscured AGN hosts, or broad lines are found in the optical spectra of galaxies hosting X-ray obscured AGN.

An optical obscured classification of X-ray unobscured AGN is now believed to be the result of selection effects (Moran et al., 2002; Severgnini et al., 2003; Silverman et al., 2005), where the light from the host galaxy outshines that of the AGN continuum and broad lines, the latter appearing with apparent smaller equivalent widths (hence classified as narrow line systems) due to the relatively high stellar continuum. This was further supported by subsequent work (Page et al., 2006; Cardamone et al., 2007; Garcet et al., 2007). This effect is thought to increase with redshift, as the same slit width will gradually include more light from the host galaxy at higher redshifts.

However, selection effects can not explain an unobscured optical classification together

with obscured X-ray emission. Such combination is real and has frequently been found (e.g., Perola et al., 2004; Eckart et al., 2006; Garcet et al., 2007). Short time variability on flux and absorption column density (Elvis et al., 2004; Risaliti et al., 2007) imply obscuration material at smaller radii than the dusty torus inner radius, which is set by the sublimation radius (R_{sub} , Suganuma et al., 2006; Nenkova et al., 2008). These dust-free gas clouds will only absorb X-ray emission, not affecting the optical/nIR broad-line emission. Hence, knowing that the dusty material obscuring optical light also blocks X-ray emission, the X-ray column densities are always larger than those producing the optical obscuration, up to extreme ratios of two orders of magnitude (Maccacaro et al., 1982; Gaskell et al., 2007). This clearly implies that dust-free clouds at $<R_{sub}$ frequently comprise the bulk of the X-ray obscuration. Being composed by gas, and not dust, these innermost clouds will not re-emit at IR wavelengths. But note that these sources tend to present high luminosities (e.g., Perola et al., 2004; Eckart et al., 2006; Garcet et al., 2007; Treister et al., 2009b). Such property is determinant for an IR AGN classification, as significant initial X-ray flux is needed to still heat the dust torus at the necessary level to overcome the host galaxy light and produce an IR SED dominated by AGN emission. The same should apply to the broad-line emission. If not luminous enough, the host galaxy stellar light continuum will again produce either apparent narrow lines or a spectrum with no AGN emission lines. Note that the former will produce an underestimate of the number of such type of sources, unless adequate spectral observations are done (slit size and orientation set to probe solely the nuclear region). In this scenario, the apparent narrow-line spectral classification agrees with the X-ray obscured classification, inducing the astronomer to account such source as a normal obscured AGN source.

Finally, both optical-colour based AGN criteria and optical spectroscopy classification are known to miss many of the faintest obscured AGN (e.g., Treister et al., 2004, and references therein).

A.2 N_{H} versus hardness-ratio

The above discussion leads us to adopt the X-ray spectral regime as the main tool to assess the type-1 and type-2 AGN populations. Such procedure relies on the X-ray spectrum hardness, i.e., how much flux is observed in the hard-band (2–10 keV) compared to that observed in the soft-band (0.5–2 keV). The hardness-ratio (HR, Section 3.3.1) is often adopted for such task. However, it is degenerated at high redshifts (Eckart et al., 2006; Messias et al., 2010, but see also Alexander et al. 2005 and Luo et al. 2010), as more energetic rest-frame X-ray wave-bands (less affected by dust obscuration) are observed by both *CXO* and *XMM-Newton* telescopes. Also, HR relies on photon counts, which is highly dependent on telescope band efficiency. Flux ratios (used to estimate N_{H}) are hence a more uniform measurement from telescope to telescope. Hence, we adopt the source column density N_{H} (computed as described in Section 3.3.1) as the X-ray diagnostic for obscured/unobscured nature. Although the high- z degeneracy is avoided, the estimate of N_{H} still relies on band-ratios. At high redshift this implies that even small photometric errors correspond to larger uncertainties in the N_{H} value. This is expected to produce a scatter effect instead of a systematic one.

In this work, only when the type-1/type-2 classification is undetermined in the X-rays, is the optical/nIR spectral classification adopted.

A.3 Band ratios versus spectral fit

Akylas et al. (2006) use an X-ray spectral fit procedure to estimate the column density. They find a tentative trend (as referred by the authors) hinting for a systematic and increasing overestimate of N_{H} with redshift, reaching a 50% level at $z \sim 2.5$, corresponding to a $\Delta \log(N_{\text{H}}) = 0.17$ increase. This may be due to the spectral fit algorithm failing to give a satisfactory match when trying to follow the photoelectric cut-off (important

feature for the spectral fitting), which tends to move out of the observed 0.5–8 keV¹ band at high redshifts. Also, the quality requirements for a spectral fit induce a bias toward the identification of harder X-ray SEDs, as enough photon counts are needed throughout the full 0.5–8 keV band to provide a good spectral fit. Both *XMM-Newton* and *CXO*, however, have soft-bands ~ 6 –7 times more sensitive than the hard-bands. This means that many observed-frame soft sources detected in the soft-band cannot be classified because the hard-band upper limit is too high. The opposite does not hold, as whatever is detected in the hard-band and not in the soft-band already implies (with *CXO* and *XMM-Newton* observations) an obscured nature.

The use of band ratios allows reaching to fainter sources, as the flux is summed over two wide bands, instead of the narrow spectral channels. More importantly, the consideration of the full-band flux instead of the hard-band flux (see Section 3.3.1) allows the flux limit to be pushed even deeper and to classify part of the undetermined population missed by spectral fitting or HR diagnostic. Briefly, let two sources have the same full-band flux, which happens to be close to the sensitivity limit. Let one source have a hard SED, while the other has an observed-frame soft SED. The former will be detected in both hard and soft bands allowing for a classification, while the latter is only detected in the soft band, resulting in an undetermined classification. However, if one considers both full and soft bands (where the soft source is detected), a classification is now possible. The full-band ratio method is only possible to apply to the data in GOODSs, as no full-band flux is provided in the XMM-COSMOS catalogue. Note that the *CXO* full-band is only 3–4 times less sensitive than the soft band and almost two times more sensitive than the hard-band. This allows us to classify 41 sources more than the HR method, which already classifies 192 (including sources with useful upper-limits). Of this extra sample, 17 (41%) are classified as unobscured sources ($\log(N_{\text{H}} [\text{cm}^{-2}]) < 22$), while the remainder are high

¹Normally, while pursuing an X-ray spectral fit analysis, only the 0.5–8 keV spectral range is considered due to poor instrumental sensitivity at the highest spectral energies (8–10 keV).

redshift ($z > 1.5-2$) obscured sources.

A.4 The adopted classification

In this work, X-ray column densities are computed to all possible sources (as described in Section 3.3.1). An obscured AGN is considered to have $\log(N_{\text{H}} [\text{cm}^{-2}]) > 22$, while unobscured AGN have $\log(N_{\text{H}} [\text{cm}^{-2}]) \leq 22$. If such estimate is indeterminate, the optical/nIR classification is adopted, where broad line features imply unobscured nuclear activity, and high-ionization narrow lines indicate obscured nuclear activity.

Again we stress that no criterion is perfect. The choice of the criteria finally adopted is thought to be, after a careful line of reasoning, the least affected by all the bias inherent to this and similar studies.

A.5 Comparison with Treister et al. (2009b)

Treister et al. (2009b) present a detailed procedure to estimate the dependency of the fraction of obscured sources (f_{obs}) on both X-ray luminosity and redshift. The f_{obs} is found to decrease with increasing luminosity and, after accounting for incompleteness effects (as described in Treister & Urry, 2006), to increase with increasing redshift. The sample in that work is selected in the extended CDFs (ECDFs, a *CXO* survey with an average 230 ks depth in a region three times larger than CDFs and six times smaller than the COSMOS field).

A spectroscopic analysis (including data from 8-m class telescopes) is the main diagnostic between obscured and unobscured AGN (at $z < 0.5$ the HR is considered instead). In the lower panel of Figure 3.16 we compare our estimates (using both X-ray and spectroscopic criteria) with the f_{obs} data points (crosses) presented by Treister et al. (2009b,

which also consider those from Treister & Urry 2006). The expected f_{obs} trend resulting from incompleteness effects and survey characteristics for the specific ECDFs sample and type-1/type-2 classification was computed (for a constant type-1/type-2 ratio) as described in Treister & Urry (2006) and is shown as a dotted-dashed line. As the ECDFs data points are always above the theoretical line, Treister et al. (2009b) propose that the f_{obs} is actually increasing. At $z < 1.5$ the ECDFs data points fall between the GOODSs and COSMOS trends as expected from an intermediate depth survey, recovering more obscured sources than COSMOS, yet still missing those detected in the 2 Ms *CXO* observations (Luo et al., 2008). At $z > 1.5$, however, our data points show a higher f_{obs} , even when considering the shallower XMM-*Newton* data in COSMOS. This is due to the different classification methods. Figure 3.17 clearly proves the statement. If the HR is used instead of N_H , the lower redshift ($z < 1.5$) data points from Treister et al. (2009b) still agree with our trends derived from the COSMOS and the deeper GOODSs data, while at higher redshifts the agreement with COSMOS is clear. The reader should recall once again that the HR is increasingly degenerate with increasing redshift (at $z \gtrsim 2$, a reasonably obscured source, $\log(N_H[\text{cm}^{-2}]) \sim 23$, may be classified as unobscured, Figure 3 in Messias et al., 2010). Hence, we deduce that the Treister et al. (2009b) analysis suffers of equal bias at $z > 1.5$ as it is based in spectroscopic classification alone.

Note that the deeper GOODSs/CDFs data imply a non-dependency with redshift (Figure 3.16), with the caveat that this work may still be missing a significant population of obscured AGN. The recently released 4 Ms depth *CXO* observations² will definitely improve this estimate. Hence, while the underlying obscured population remains undetected by current surveys, a procedure like that of Treister & Urry (2006) should be pursued for (what seems to be) a proper estimate of the dependency of f_{obs} on redshift.

The upper panels in Figures 3.16 and 3.17 show that \mathcal{S}_{12} increases with redshift with

²<http://cxc.harvard.edu/cda/Contrib/CDFS.html>

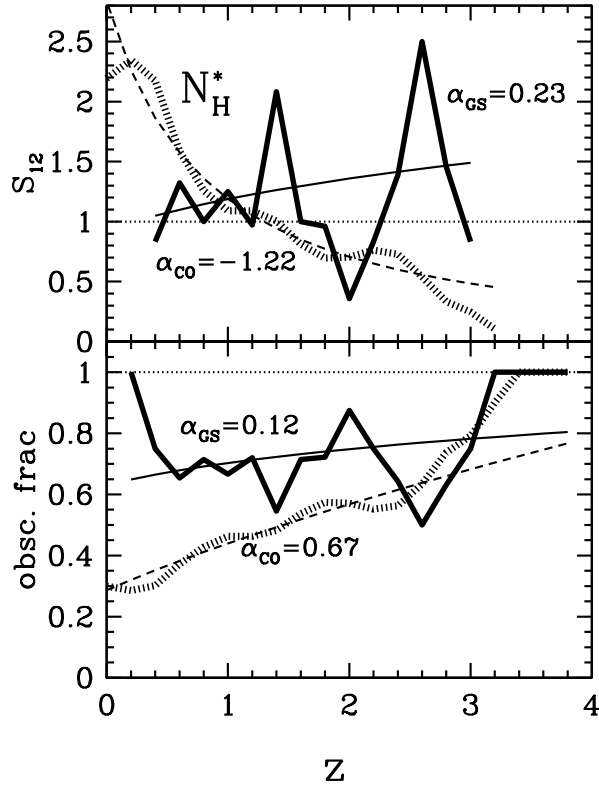


Figure A.1: The same as in Figure 3.16, but considering N_{H} to identify obscured and unobscured sources in the restricted sample composed by sources detected in both soft and hard X-ray bands. Symbols and labelling as in Figure 3.16.

a power-law ($\mathcal{S}_{12} \propto (1+z)^\alpha$) index $\alpha \sim 0.4$. This means that compared with the overall type-1 to type-2 ratio in the X-ray sample, that ratio increases with redshift, meaning a relatively higher number of type-1 sources.

As a final remark to prove the bias induced by the discrepant relative sensitivity between the soft and hard bands (as described in Section A.3), the same trends are shown in Figure A.1 this time considering only the sources detected in both soft and hard bands. The clear increase of f_{obs} with redshift reflects the referred selection effect.

Chapter 4

Infra-red dust luminosity functions in COSMOS

4.1 Introduction

While FIR/mm studies focus on the cold ($T \lesssim 100$ K) dust re-emission dominating at those wavelengths, in this study, the hot extremes of dust re-emission ($T \sim 500 - 1500$ K, e.g., Nenkova et al., 2008) are explored (at $\sim 2-8 \mu\text{m}$) using observations on the Cosmic Evolution Survey (COSMOS, Scoville et al., 2007). The study is mostly based on data from the IR array camera (IRAC) on board the *Spitzer Space Telescope (SST)*, facility which, in less than a decade, has contributed so much to the field of galaxy evolution (for a review, see Soifer et al., 2008). The goal is to estimate the dust contribution to the SED of the galaxy population at short IR wavelengths, and how it depends on both redshift and galaxy nature. This study thus focus on redshift ranges where specific polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons (PAHs) features (3.3 , 6.2 , and $7.7 \mu\text{m}$) are expected to be observed by *SST*-IRAC filters, and to which hot dust is also known to contribute significantly. PAHs are large molecules (composed by ~ 50 Carbon atoms) of Carbon rings and Hydrogen. These

molecules act as light-blocking small dust grains for UV radiation, producing broad emission features in a galaxy IR SED (for a review, see Tielens, 2011). These were referred as unidentified IR bands until the 80's, when the PhD work of Kris Sellgren provided a key understanding of such emission features (Sellgren, 1983; Sellgren et al., 1983). PAHs comprise a significant fraction of the Carbon existing in the universe, they are believed to be closely related to star-formation activity, and to reprocess a substantial fraction of UV-light into the IR wave-bands, hence being a major source of obscuration (Tielens, 2011). For simplicity throughout this chapter, when referring “dust”, the PAHs contribution is also included in that class. The IR continuum comes from dust heated by energetic radiation fields. Vigorous obscured star-formation can account for such emission as well as AGN activity (da Cunha et al., 2008; Nenkova et al., 2008; Hönig & Kishimoto, 2010; Popescu et al., 2011, and references therein). However, the overall stellar population also emits at these wavelengths, even frequently dominating at $< 3 \mu\text{m}$ and peaking at $1.6 \mu\text{m}$, due to the H^- opacity minimum in stellar atmospheres (see discussion in Chapter 3 and, e.g., Donley et al., 2008).

In Section 4.2, the sample used in this study is described, detailing how each redshift regime was assessed and how each galaxy population — early and late-types, starbursts, and AGN hosts — was assembled. Section 4.3 describes the method used to extract the dust emission in each galaxy SED. In section Section 4.4, we first present rest-frame IR LFs and then the dust luminosity density functions. In this same section, the dust luminosity density is also shown to evolve with redshift and differently between each galaxy population. Finally, Section 4.5 summarises the conclusions drawn from this study.

4.2 The sample

We use observations from the COSMOS field, covering an area of 1.8 sq. deg., with available multiple-waveband data. The reference catalogue used is the one described in Ilbert et al. (2009). From it, consistent samples of galaxies are extracted depending on the target rest-frame wavelength (3.3 or 6.2 μm) and redshift, allowing for an evolution study with cosmic time. Each sample is further separated into: early-type, late-type, starburst, and AGN host populations. While the first three are assembled based on a spectral SED fitting algorithm, the AGN population is estimated by applying a new IR colour-colour diagnostic enabling the selection of AGN host galaxies (Chapter 3). The following sections detail each of these steps.

4.2.1 Redshifts and galaxy populations

The photometric redshifts assigned to each source found in the sample were estimated with the *Le Phare* code¹ (S. Arnouts & O. Ilbert) (Ilbert et al., 2009). The procedure and results are described and thoroughly tested in Ilbert et al. (2009). The template library is heterogeneous enough to cover a large range of the colour- z space. The templates used consist of three early and six late-type SEDs (Polletta et al., 2007, and linear interpolations between some of these SEDs for fitting improvement), and 12 SEDs generated with Bruzual & Charlot (2003) models in order to better match the colours observed in some of the bluest sources found in the field. The spectral types (early, late, and starbursts) are a result from the fitting procedure to the observed galaxy SEDs (Ilbert et al., 2009).

The testing done in Ilbert et al. (2009) indicates a fitting quality dependency on both source flux and redshift. The redshift intervals considered in this study are set by the target rest-frame wavelengths — 3.3 and 6.2 μm — and the central wavelengths and widths of

¹http://www.cfht.hawaii.edu/~arnouts/LEPHARE/cfht_lephare/lephare.html

the IRAC filters. Table 4.1 shows the redshift ranges considered throughout this study, resulting from the specific redshifts where 3.3 or 6.2 μm wavelengths enter or leave the 50% throughput limits of an IRAC filter. For the first three redshift bins, Figure 9 of Ilbert et al. (2009) shows a constant z_{phot} quality with distance, with $\sigma_{\Delta z}/(1 + z_{\text{spec}}) \lesssim 0.04$ at an i -band² magnitude of $i^+ < 25$ (where $\Delta z = z_{\text{spec}} - z_{\text{phot}}$). For the farthest redshift bin considered in this study, larger errors are expected, with $\sigma_{\Delta z}/(1 + z_{\text{spec}}) \lesssim 0.05$ for $i^+ < 24$ and $\sigma_{\Delta z}/(1 + z_{\text{spec}}) \lesssim 0.1$ for $i^+ < 25$. When computing the errors of the dust LF estimates, we consider in quadrature the poissonian and the z_{phot} -induced errors (σ_{poi} and $\sigma_{z\text{p}}$, respectively): $\sigma_{\text{tot}} = \sqrt{\sigma_{\text{poi}}^2 + \sigma_{z\text{p}}^2}$.

Table 4.1: The adopted redshift ranges and equivalent observing bands for rest-frame 3.3 and 6.2 μm

Rest-Frame [μm]	IRAC $_{\lambda}$ [μm]	z_{LOW}	z_{HIGH}
3.3	3.6	0.05	0.19
	4.5	0.21	0.52
	5.8	0.52	0.94
	8.0	0.97	1.86
6.2	8.0	0.05	0.52

When available, the spectroscopic redshift estimate from $z\text{COSMOS}$ (Lilly et al., 2009) is considered only if with high probability ($> 90\%$ confidence, 8562 sources were found with such constraint). Also, in Salvato et al. (2009) the COSMOS team re-computed photometric redshifts for XMM-detected sources. Variability effects in X-ray AGN hosts and AGN emission contribution is properly accounted for the computation of z_{phot} . If

²Subaru Telescope: <http://www.naoj.org/>

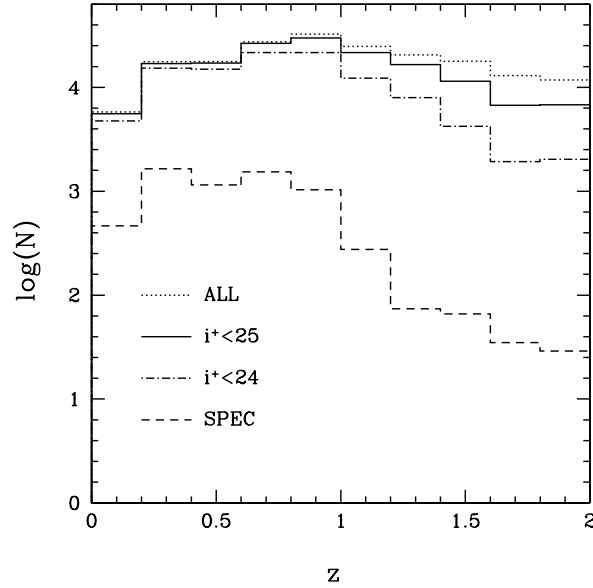


Figure 4.1: The redshift distribution of the COSMOS sample. Highlighted are the distributions of sources with available good quality spectroscopy (dashed histogram), with $i^+ < 24$ (dotted-dashed histogram) and $i^+ < 25$ (solid histogram), while the overall population is denoted by the dotted histogram. Note the logarithmic scale on the y-axis.

available, this improved z_{phot} estimate from Salvato et al. (2009) is considered instead of that from Ilbert et al. (2009). For the remainder sample, only good quality photometric redshifts ($(z_{68\%}^{\text{up}} - z_{68\%}^{\text{low}})/(1 + z_{\text{phot}}) < 0.4$) of sources with $i^+ < 25$ are considered for the study. The redshift distribution is shown in Figure 4.1, highlighting the fraction of the sources with available z_{spec} , with $i^+ < 24$, $i^+ < 25$, and the total population. The incompleteness caused by the quality constraints is accounted for while computing the LFs (Section 4.4). Figure 4.2 shows the variation of the fraction of sources having a reliable redshift estimate depending on observed magnitude in each of the IRAC-channels.

The final samples are selected differently in the four IRAC channels (when following the rest-frame $3.3 \mu\text{m}$ wavelength with redshift) and at $8 \mu\text{m}$, when studying the rest-frame $6.2 \mu\text{m}$ wavelength in the nearby universe. Hence, for the estimate of dust LFs at rest-frame $3.3 \mu\text{m}$ we consider all $0.05 < z < 0.19$ sources with $[3.6] < 23.9$ (for consistency with Ilbert

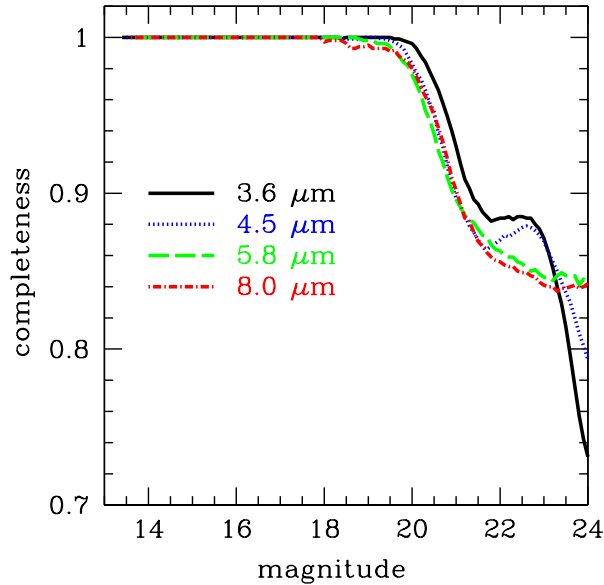


Figure 4.2: Completeness of reliable redshift estimates depending on source magnitude in each of the IRAC channels: $3.6 \mu\text{m}$ (solid black line), $4.5 \mu\text{m}$ (dotted blue line), $5.8 \mu\text{m}$ (dashed green line), and $8.0 \mu\text{m}$ (dot-dashed red line).

et al., 2009), all $0.21 < z < 0.52$ sources with $[4.5] < 23.6$, all $0.52 < z < 0.94$ sources with $[5.8] < 22.2$, and all $0.97 < z < 1.86$ sources with $[8.0] < 21.6$. For the estimate of dust LFs at rest-frame $6.2 \mu\text{m}$, we consider all $0.05 < z < 0.52$ sources with $[8.0] < 21.6$. The magnitude cuts are set as the magnitude value at which the magnitude distribution counts drop abruptly (Figure 4.3). The use of apparent magnitude as a completeness cut instead of absolute magnitude, is not a problem as redshift constraints are also applied. Within a narrow redshift, the apparent magnitude can be used as a proxy of the absolute magnitude. In our case, even in the highest redshift bin, which is not narrow in any way, this proxy is valid, as we are already limited to the brightest objects.

As previously referred, in each redshift interval a subsequent separation into different galaxy types is done. The final numbers are detailed in Table 4.2. The AGN sample is described in the next section.

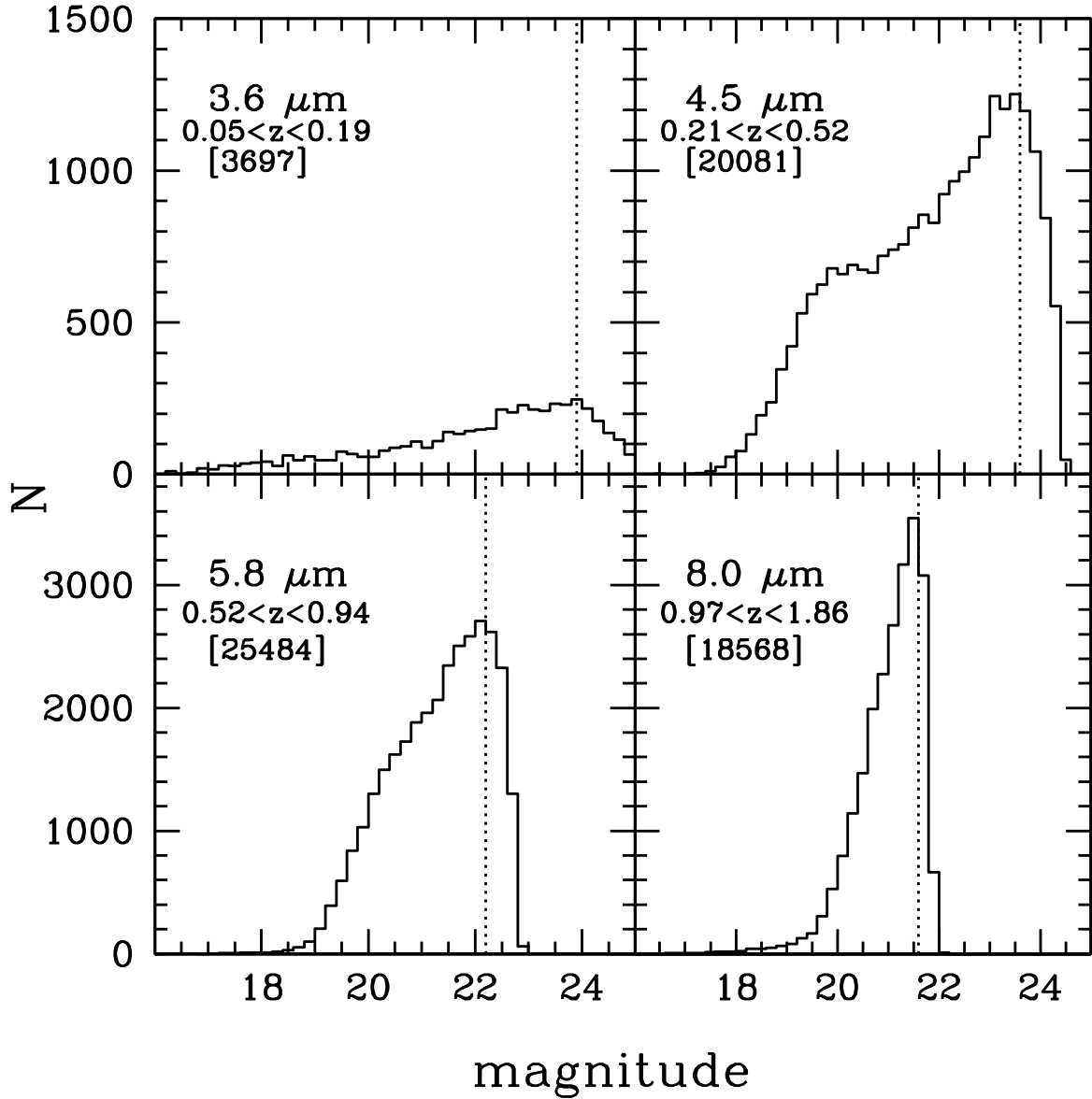


Figure 4.3: Magnitude cuts to constrain the completeness depending on redshift interval and observed band (see Table 4.1): 3.6 μm (upper left), 4.5 μm (upper right), 5.8 μm (lower left), and 8.0 μm (lower right). The numbers inside squared brackets give the number of selected galaxies, i.e., those found to the left of the vertical line (the magnitude cut). Note that the y-axis scale in the upper panels is different from that in the lower panels.

Table 4.2: The numbers of each population with redshift

Rest-Frame [μm]	z_{BIN}	TOTAL	EARLY	LATE	STARB.	AGN
3.3	$0.05 < z < 0.19$	3697	654 (18)	478 (13)	2453 (66)	112 (3)
	$0.21 < z < 0.52$	20081	2902 (14)	3770 (19)	12780 (64)	629 (3)
	$0.52 < z < 0.94$	25484	3410 (13)	4956 (19)	13597 (53)	3521 (14)
	$0.97 < z < 1.86$	18568	1486 (8)	4321 (23)	7796 (42)	4965 (27)
6.2	$0.05 < z < 0.52$	11759	1781 (15)	3800 (32)	5947 (51)	231 (2)

Note. — Numbers in parenthesis give the fraction (in %) of the total population each population represents at each redshift interval

4.2.2 IR selection of AGN

In COSMOS, both X-ray and spectroscopic observations can be used for the identification of AGN hosts. However, we are just interested in identifying those galaxies whose nuclear emission dominates the IR regime, which frequently is not the case for either optical or X-ray identified AGN (e.g., Treister et al., 2006; Donley et al., 2008; Eckart et al., 2010, and Chapter 3 of this thesis). We adopt the AGN diagnostics described in Chapter 3 of this thesis involving $K - [4.5]$ and $[4.5] - [8.0]$ colours. AGN hosts are considered to have $K - [4.5] > 0$ at $z < 1$, and $K - [4.5] > 0$ and $[4.5] - [8.0] > 0$ at $z \geq 1$. This implies 112 (3%) AGN hosts at $0.05 < z < 0.19$, 629 (3%) at $0.21 < z < 0.52$, 3521 (14%) at $0.52 < z < 0.94$, and 4965 (27%) at $0.97 < z < 1.86$ while studying the rest-frame $3.3 \mu\text{m}$, and 231 (2%) at $0.05 < z < 0.52$ while studying the rest-frame $6.2 \mu\text{m}$. Figure 4.4 shows the evolution of the AGN fraction depending on both redshift and galaxy type. At high redshift, most AGN are found in starburst and late-type galaxies.

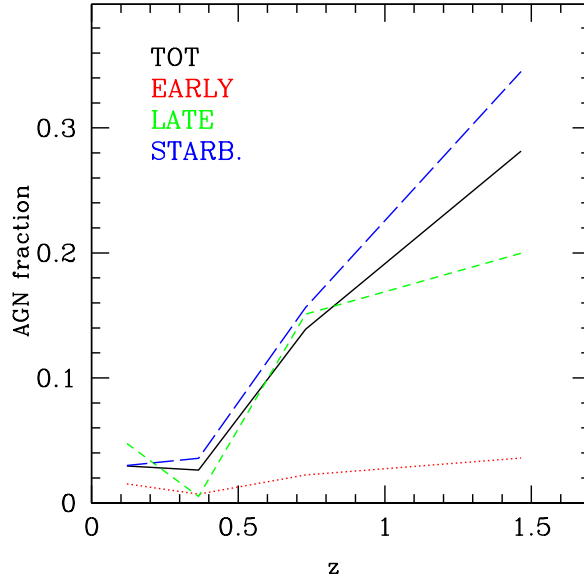


Figure 4.4: The evolution with redshift of the AGN fraction in the total IR (black solid line), early-type (red dotted line), late-type (green short dashed line), and starbursts (blue long dashed line) populations.

4.3 Estimating the Dust Content

This study focus on two specific rest-frame spectral regimes: 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$. Again, these are the wavelengths of two known PAH features. However, at these wavelengths, both stellar and hot dust continuum emission contribute to the galaxy SED. In order to disentangle both, we first estimate the stellar emission at 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$ for each galaxy. This is done in two steps. First we consider a wavelength which we expect to be solely due to stellar emission. With that as a reference, we than use a pure stellar emission model to estimate the stellar emission at 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$. The remaining flux is then considered to be due to dust emission alone.

The reference wavelength to estimate the stellar emission from is that of the peak of the stellar bump at $1.6\mu\text{m}$ (H -band). This emission bump is always present in SF galaxies (Figure 4.5), and, at shorter wavelengths than $\sim 2\mu\text{m}$, no significant dust emission is

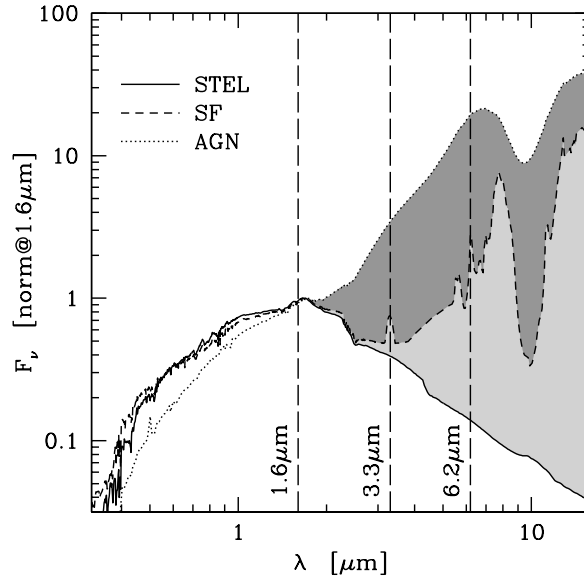


Figure 4.5: Separating the IR emission into stellar and dust contributions. The solid line shows an elliptical template, dominated by stellar emission alone, used for the conversions from rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ luminosities to 3.3 and $6.2 \mu\text{m}$ stellar luminosities. Together with the solid line, the dashed and dotted lines delimit, respectively, the dust contribution to the IR SED of Arp220 (a dusty starburst) and IRAS 19254-7245_{south} (an AGN host) galaxies (templates from Polletta et al., 2007).

expected. Either because SF UV/optical emission is not enough to heat dust for it to re-emit and dominate at such low wavelengths, or because beyond certain high energies – like those from AGN (e.g., Nenkova et al., 2008; Hönig & Kishimoto, 2010) – any dust particle in the radiation field is dissociated. Hence, at wavelengths below $\sim 2 \mu\text{m}$, only emission from the Wien tail by the hottest dust grains and from scattered AGN light is expected, which is expectable not to be substantial (however, see discussion in Section 4.4).

The source flux at rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ is obtained through interpolation between the two wavebands which straddle this rest-frame wavelength at the source’s redshift. However, although necessary, interpolation will generally underestimate the true rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ flux value depending on the source redshift and SED shape. This is evident from Figure 4.6 where discrepancies between estimated and true value (always below the 20% level) are

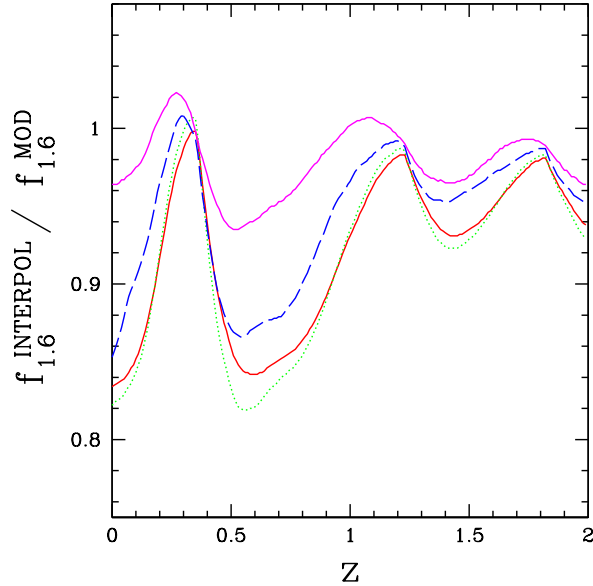


Figure 4.6: The redshift induced effect of interpolating the galaxy SED in order to estimate the flux at rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$. The y-axis shows the ratio between the interpolated flux ($f_{1.6}^{\text{INTERPOL}}$) and the actual model value ($f_{1.6}^{\text{MOD}}$) at $1.6 \mu\text{m}$. Different types are shown: early (solid red line) late (dotted green line), blue starburst (dashed blue line), and AGN (solid magenta line).

shown for typical early (red) and late (green) galaxies, blue starbursts (blue), and AGN hosts (magenta). These trends were used to correct the interpolated $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ flux for each galaxy type at a given redshift.

With the estimated stellar flux at $1.6 \mu\text{m}$, the corresponding stellar fluxes at 3.3 and $6.2 \mu\text{m}$ are obtained. This is done with a pure stellar model (solid line in Figure 4.5, taken from the SED library used for the fitting procedure in Ilbert et al. (2009)). The conversion from $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ stellar flux to that at 3.3 and $6.2 \mu\text{m}$ is slightly redshift dependent, as the bands directly probing the wavelengths of interest (Table 4.1) will shift upward the rising stellar peak as the redshift increases. Hence, using the pure stellar model (Figure 4.5), a table of conversion factors was produced by convolving the stellar model with the NIR filters (from J -band to $8 \mu\text{m}$) at each redshift step of $\Delta z = 0.01$.

Figures 4.7 and 4.8 show the estimated $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ luminosities versus the *raw* – stellar plus dust emission – 3.3 and $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$ luminosities for each galaxy population considered in this study. The regions between the dotted lines represent the locus where SEDs dominated by stellar emission alone are expected to fall. These two figures already show that the dust contribution at $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$ is more significant than at $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ in AGN hosts, starbursts, and some late-type galaxies. As expected, the elliptical data “cloud” tends to fall in the stellar region, although at $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$, some non-negligible dust emission is observed ($\log(L[\text{erg s}^{-1}]) = 28 - 29$). Note already in Figure 4.7, the distinct feature in the luminosity distribution of the starburst population (and slightly in that of the late-type population). This behaviour is assigned to strong dust emission producing a migration out of the pure stellar region. This is the emission excess we aim to extract when subtracting the stellar emission.

We note that the underlying shape of the galaxy IR SED, due to stellar emission alone, is considered to be common to all galaxy populations referred in this study. This is a fair assumption – for an universal initial mass function – knowing that stellar emission in this spectral regime originates in cold stars, which live longer in the stable main sequence, hence producing a constant SED shape over a wide range of ages. Different obscuration factors between rest-frame $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ and 3.3 or $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$ (only occurring in rare extremely obscured systems) is also considered to be negligible (da Cunha, private communication, and da Cunha et al., 2008). Finally, the Thermally Pulsating - Asymptotic Giant Branch (TP-AGB) stellar phase (Maraston, 2005; Kelson & Holden, 2010; Henriques et al., 2010), happening at a galactic age of $0.2-1$ Gyr, may contribute significantly at NIR and MIR wavelengths. Although, at first sight, it seems a larger problem at the highest redshifts (where younger systems are more frequently found), it is not expected to be a problem while estimating the dust contribution. The emission excess induced by the TP-AGB stellar phase is expected to contribute to a galaxy SED from $\sim 1\ \mu\text{m}$ up to $\sim 40\ \mu\text{m}$ (Maraston, 2005; Guandalini et al., 2006; Kelson & Holden, 2010) due to the presence of circumstellar

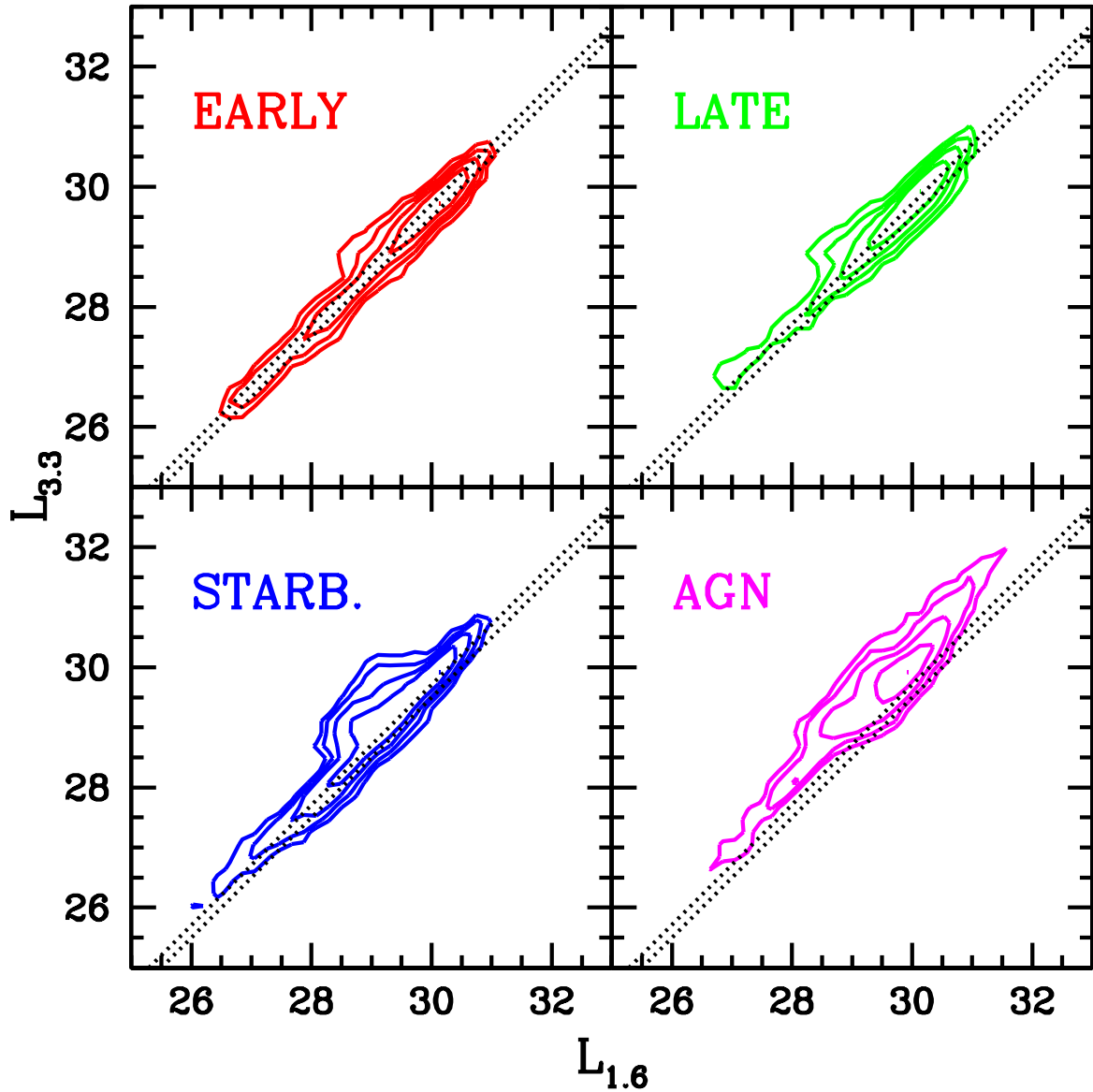


Figure 4.7: Luminosities at rest-frames $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ ($L_{1.6}$) and $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ ($L_{3.3}$). The dotted lines delimit the region where pure stellar emission should fall. Each panel is reserved to a different population: early-type (upper left), late-type (upper right), starburst (lower left), and AGN host (lower right). The contours are simply demonstrative of the sample distribution and are defined based on the maximum source density in each plot, hence the isocontour levels differ between panels.

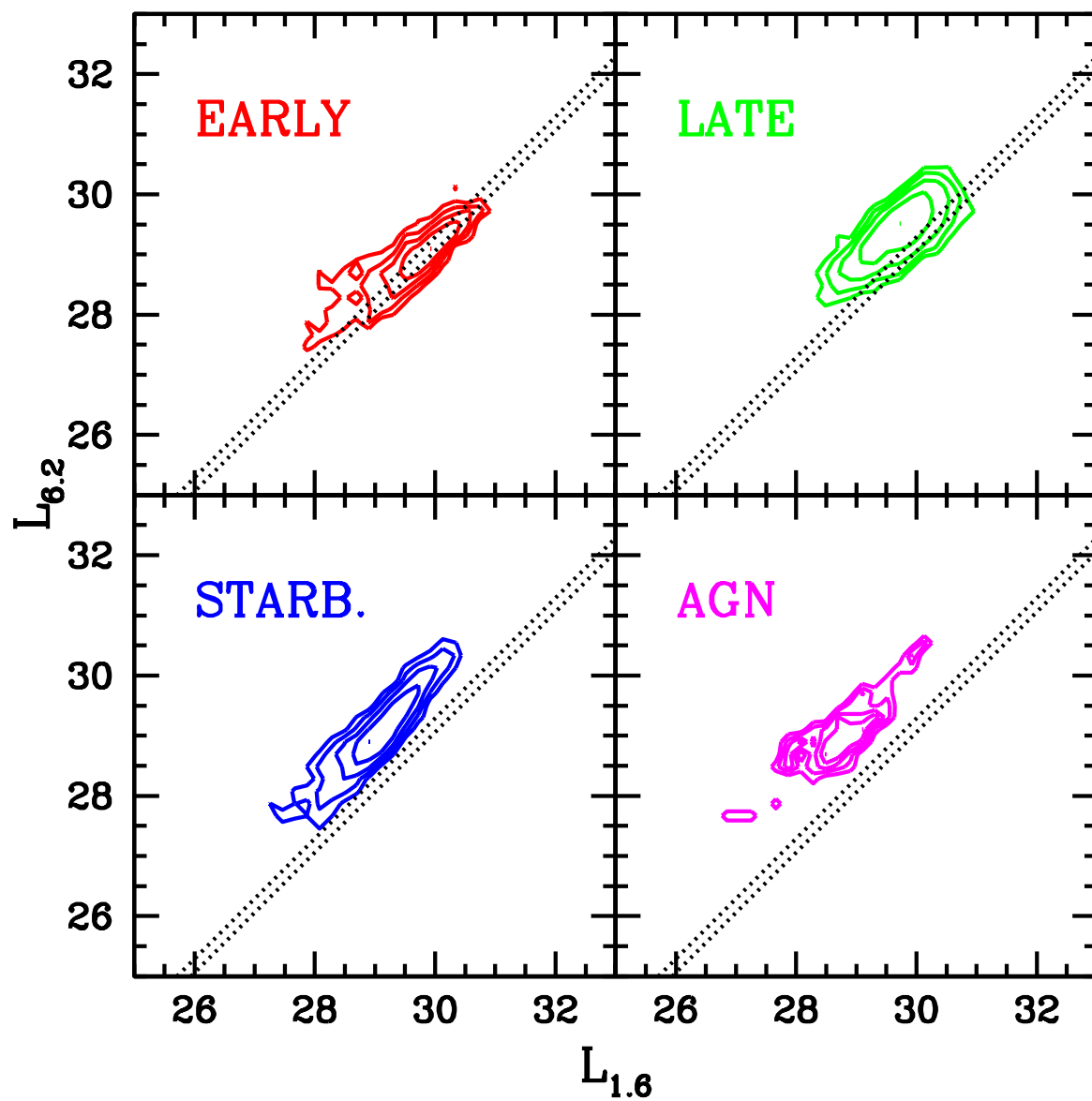


Figure 4.8: Luminosities at rest-frames $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ ($L_{1.6}$) and $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$ ($L_{3.3}$). The dotted lines delimit the region where pure stellar emission should fall. Panel and contour definition as in Figure 4.7.

dust enshrouding TP-AGB stars. Having this, we expect a more or less similar contribution at $1.6\text{--}6\mu\text{m}$ (Kelson & Holden, 2010), producing just a scaling effect to the galaxy SED, not affecting the flux conversion from $1.6\mu\text{m}$ to 3.3 or $6.2\mu\text{m}$. However, the peak of TP-AGB stellar emission at $\sim 2\mu\text{m}$ is close to our reference $1.6\mu\text{m}$ wavelength. This may result in an underestimate of the dust emission at 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$, most being that from circumstellar dust in TP-AGB stars.

4.4 Dust Luminosity Density Functions

Before separating stellar and dust emission, the total IR LFs are presented. While Figure 4.9 shows rest-frame $1.6\mu\text{m}$ LFs, Figures 4.10 and 4.11 show those for the rest-frames 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$, respectively. In each figure, different populations are considered: total (black), early-type (red), late-type (green), starburst (blue), and AGN hosts (magenta). Each panel refers to different redshift intervals (except for $6.2\mu\text{m}$ in Figure 4.11 where only one redshift interval is accessible with IRAC bands, Table 4.1). LFs were obtained through the $1/V_{max}$ method described in Chapter 2. The volume associated with each galaxy is based on the flux limit of the sample and estimated using the k -correction derived from the galaxy's own SED (as given by the observed multi-wavelength photometry).

Two interesting features are clearly visible in Figures 4.9 and 4.10: an observed bimodality in the total LF and, at the faintest magnitudes, a steep rise (upturn) for the LFs of early and late-type populations. These features have been previously pointed out in the literature (Baldry et al., 2008; Li & White, 2009; Pozzetti et al., 2010; Bolzonella et al., 2010), but specially by Drory et al. (2009) while estimating stellar mass functions (MFs) in COSMOS field up to $z = 1$. In Chapter 2, we have shown that the dip is present even at $z > 1$ (Marchesini et al., 2009, also seems to get bimodal MFs up to $z \sim 2$ but does not acknowledge it due to higher uncertainties), and another dip may exist at

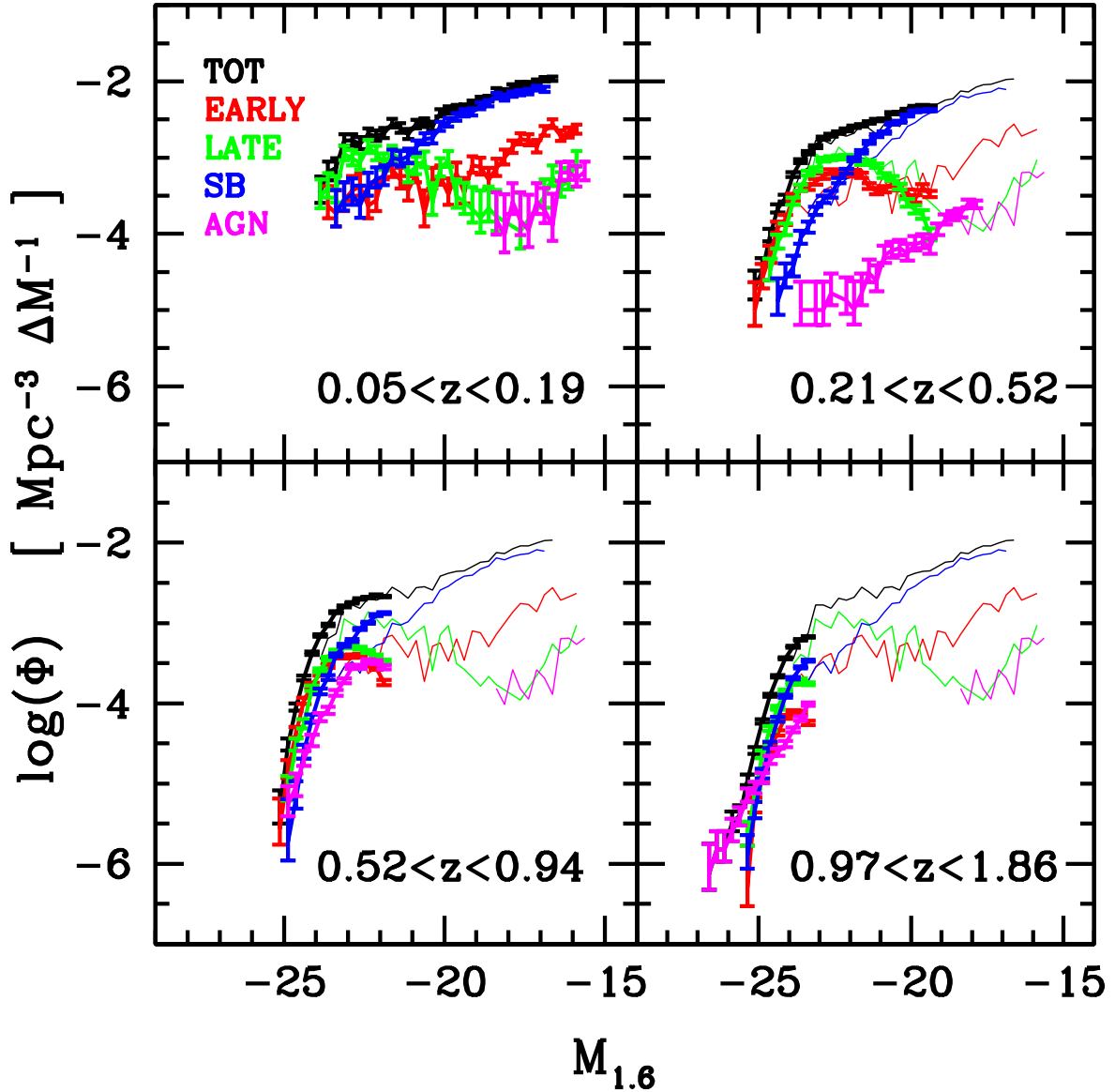


Figure 4.9: Rest-frame $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ LFs depending on redshift (each panel is reserved to a different redshift range) and galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). The trend shown by each LF in the lowest redshift panel is displayed in the subsequent panels for comparison. The LFs of each population were trimmed according to the luminosity below which a significant drop in the source densities (due to incompleteness) is observed in the total population LF or in the sub-population LF.

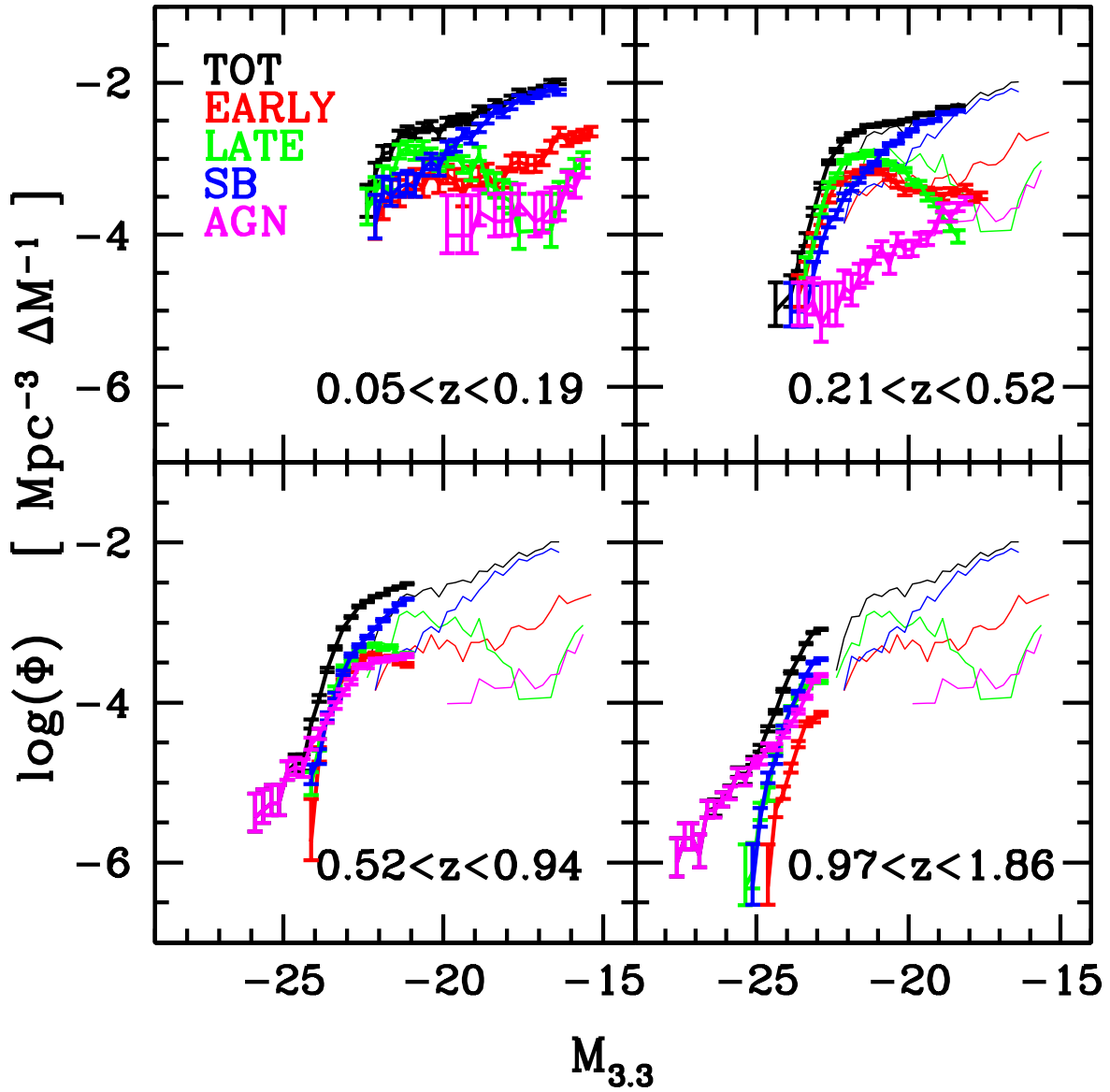


Figure 4.10: LFs at rest-frame $3.3\mu\text{m}$ depending on redshift and galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). The trend shown by each LF in the lowest redshift panel is displayed in the subsequent panels for comparison. The LFs of each population were trimmed as described in Figure 4.9.

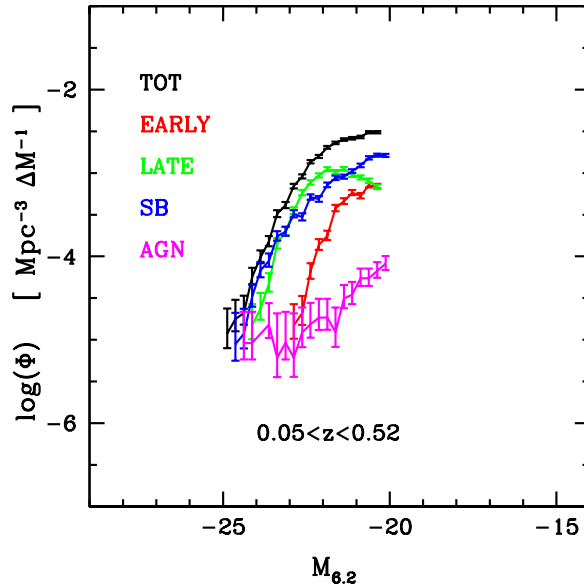


Figure 4.11: Local $6.2 \mu\text{m}$ LFs depending on galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). The LFs of each population were trimmed as described in Figure 4.9.

$\log(M/M_{\odot}) \sim 11$. Although here we present rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ LFs, this wavelength (at which the stellar continuum peaks) is expected to be correlated with the galaxy mass. So, one can attempt to compare the mass functions in the literature with our $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ LFs (and in some situations $3.3 \mu\text{m}$ as well). Dai et al. (2009) find that rest-frame IR LFs are well described by a Schechter function Schechter (1976), unlike the mass functions found in the literature above. However, not only they use shallower data, but a steeper rise at the faintest luminosities is actually seen (deviating from a Schechter function).

It should be stressed that this study is unable to follow the features referred in the literature up to the highest redshifts, as in Drory et al. (2009). This is due to the completeness constraints applied through magnitude cuts in each of the IRAC bands. Note that the IRAC bands used for sample selection at the highest redshift bins are also the least sensitive ones. Also, although it would be preferable to parametrise the LFs, the shapes obtained for these rest-frame wavelengths are complex. Normally, the Schechter

function is adopted for such task. However, not only it has been shown that the combination of more than one Schechter function is some times required (Drory et al., 2009, and references therein), but also the shape shown by the AGN population LF requires more complex parametrization. Nonetheless, many features and trends can be highlighted and do support the interpretations proposed in the literature.

Firstly, the bimodality of the total population LF is seen (at least at $z < 0.52$) as a result of the combined contribution from early- and late-type galaxies, dominating the bright-end, and starbursts, dominating the faint-end (as also referred by Drory et al., 2009; Ilbert et al., 2010). Note that the joint contribution of early and late-type galaxies at the bright end appears to be separated at least at $1 < z < 2$ (see Chapter 2). Secondly, at the faintest magnitudes both early- and late-type LFs present an upturn: $M > -18$ at $0.05 < z < 0.19$ for late-type galaxy and $M > -20$ at $z < 0.52$ for early-type galaxies. The interesting detail is that the AGN population follows it rather remarkably and presenting a similar steepness. Drory et al. (2009) note that the blue (starburst) population also presents a comparable steepness at fainter magnitudes, leading to the probable scenario where they may actually be related. This is supported by the work of Kormendy (1985) who proposed a connection between dwarf spheroidal and dwarf irregular galaxies. Adding to that, the fact that dwarf galaxies tend to cluster around massive galaxies (Zehavi et al., 2005; Haines et al., 2006, 2007; Carlberg et al., 2009), implies that tidal interactions or ram pressure stripping may be behind the quenching necessary to turn dwarf irregular galaxies into dwarf spheroidal galaxies (see also, e.g., Boselli et al., 2008; Henriques et al., 2008). The onset of AGN activity seen here may then be understood, as these perturbations and torques on a dwarf galaxy may drive material to the nuclear engine (as it happens in merger events, Di Matteo et al., 2005; Springel et al., 2005a,b) making the AGN “visible”. In its turn, the nuclear activity may then also act as a quenching mechanism (e.g., Hopkins et al., 2005), producing an even faster switch from a star-forming dwarf to a passive dwarf

galaxy.

The power-law shape of the AGN LFs have been observed in the X-rays (e.g., Aird et al., 2010), optical (e.g., Croom et al., 2004; Richards et al., 2005), and IR (Fu et al., 2010, but see also Assef et al. 2011), supporting the reliability of the KI AGN selection.

On the bright-end of the total LF (at both rest-frames 1.6 and $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$) it is seen that while starbursts contribute as much as the early- and late-type galaxies at high redshifts, at low redshifts that is no longer the case, as the early- and late-type populations alone are the main contributors to the bright-end of the total LF. In Figure 4.12, where the evolution of the rest-frame $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ LFs of each population are compared between redshift bins, the starburst population LF shows a shift to fainter magnitudes with time, unseen in the early- and late-type LFs. This may be the result of an actual evolutionary path or due to the adopted methodology. We identify the following possibilities:

- *Evolution* - it is expected that starbursts turn red with cosmic time (Bell et al., 2004; Bundy et al., 2006; Faber et al., 2007; Williams et al., 2009), hence the decrease in source density with decreasing redshift seen for the starburst LF at the highest luminosities should translate into an increase in source density with decreasing redshift in the early- and late-type LFs. However, this is not seen when comparing equal luminosity bins (Figure 4.9) meaning that stellar evolution is not the mechanism behind this feature. The shape of the early/late-type LFs seem fairly unchanged at the highest luminosities, but at gradually fainter magnitudes they do seem to show a mass build up, resulting in the growth of the hump which, at low redshifts, peaks at absolute magnitudes of $-23 < M_{1.6} < -22$ and source densities of $\log(\Phi[\text{Mpc}^{-3} \Delta M]) \sim -3$. It is interesting to notice that the growth of the hump stabilises by $0.21 < z < 0.52$. By this time the AGN activity has also gone through a change, being found in less luminous classes at those low redshifts;

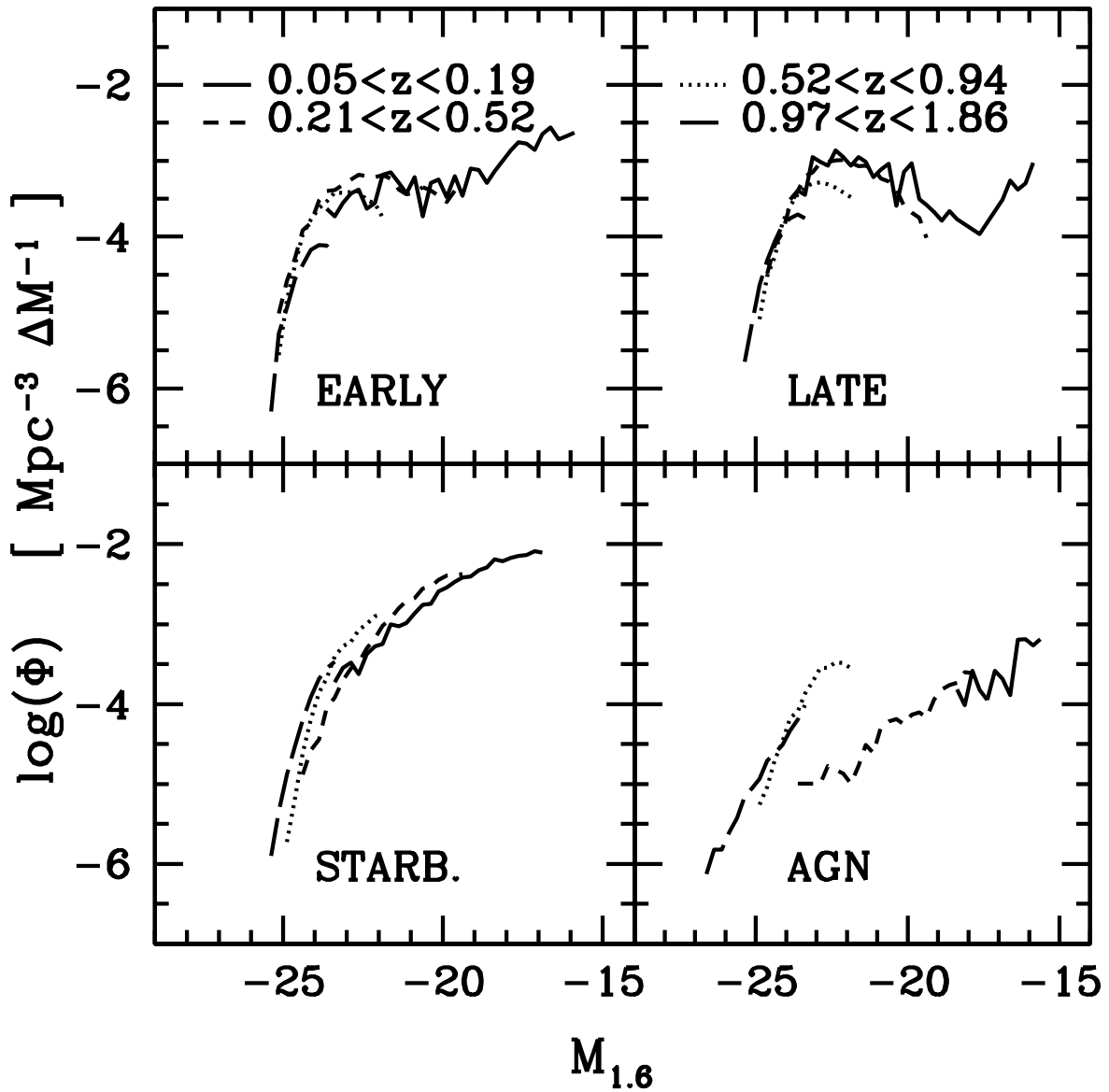


Figure 4.12: Comparing the rest-frame 1.6 μm LFs for each galaxy population between redshift bins: $0.05 < z < 0.19$ as solid line, $0.21 < z < 0.52$ as short dashed line, $0.52 < z < 0.94$ as dotted line, and $0.97 < z < 1.86$ as long dashed line.

- *Interpolation of the $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ flux* - the shift in the starburst LF with redshift is *not* likely due to difficulties in estimating the $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ flux through interpolation or due to the applied correction (Section 4.3). Figure 4.6 shows that the difference in estimating the rest-frame $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ flux at $0.21 < z < 0.52$ and $0.52 < z < 0.94$ (redshift ranges between which the difference in the LFs is larger) is $< 15\%$. This would translate in an horizontal shift (absolute magnitude axis) of ~ 0.25 mag. However, the shift reaches ~ 1 mag differences in certain parts of the LFs. Also, if no correction for interpolation is applied, the difference still holds;
- *AGN induced flux boost* - although a selection of AGN is performed, only the systems which have IR SEDs dominated by AGN emission are indeed selected. This means that less dominant AGN will be left out of the AGN sample, but will still potentially increase the host IR flux even at rest-frame $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$. Indeed it is expected that either scattered light from AGN activity or emission from the Wien's tail of the hottest dust grains may contribute to the galaxy SED at $< 2\ \mu\text{m}$. In case of a luminous AGN, its IR emission may even dominate at these wavelengths. This seems to be the case seen at the highest luminosities in the AGN LFs (Figure 4.10). In Figure 4.4 we have shown that the starburst population reveals a substantial AGN fraction of 15–35% at $z > 0.52$, so this may also be happening in the most luminous starburst population. Note however, that the late-type population also has reasonable AGN fractions, but no clear shift in the LF bright-end is seen. However, zooming into the region of interest in the LFs (Figure 4.13), and focusing on the two highest redshift bins, a difference is seen. Indeed the error bars at the bright-end of the late-type LFs do not overlap between the two redshift intervals, showing that the difference is significant. Hence, the AGN induced flux boost is real and may actually be the reason for the shift seen in the starburst LFs. This also implies that the total dust contribution is being underestimated, meaning that, at the highest redshifts, the

total dust contributions presented ahead could represent a lower limit;

- *TP-AGB stars* - At this stage, the emission from TP-AGB stars as responsible for the feature we analyse here can not be discarded and will be addressed in the near-future. It is known that emission from TP-AGB stars peaks at $\sim 2 \mu\text{m}$ (Maraston, 2005) and extends up to $\sim 40 \mu\text{m}$ (Kelson & Holden, 2010). Also, it is expected to be stronger in the first Gyr of stellar evolution (Maraston, 2005; Kelson & Holden, 2010). Hence, probing earlier epochs of the universe, where a higher fraction of younger (< 1 Gyr) sources are found, a significant contribution from TP-AGB stars is expected, resulting likewise in a flux boost compared to lower-redshift intervals.

The larger spread in absolute magnitudes seen for rest-frame $3.3 \mu\text{m}$ (Figure 4.14) is probably due to different dust contributions with redshift resulting from star-formation activity, affecting mostly starburst and late-type populations.

The evidence for an AGN flux boost even at rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ has important implications for the stellar mass estimate of high redshift sources (as does the inclusion of the TP-AGB phase in the stellar models used for such science). Although Marchesini et al. (2009) show that AGN emission induces uncertainties in the stellar mass estimate smaller than the photometric mass estimate uncertainty itself, their conclusion is based on a comparison with re-computed stellar mass estimates without considering the 5.8 and $8.0 \mu\text{m}$ IRAC channels. However, in a error-weighted SED fitting procedure, these channels will unavoidably count less due to their tendentially higher photometric errors. Also, the higher number of optical filters, and their tendentially smaller photometric errors, imply that the nIR and IR filters will tend to be less considered when compared to optical ones (see Rodighiero et al., 2010, for a tentative correction). Finally, it is known that the fraction of AGN increases both with redshift and stellar mass (Papovich et al., 2006; Kriek et al., 2007; Daddi et al., 2007). Hence, although it may not produce a scatter in the stellar

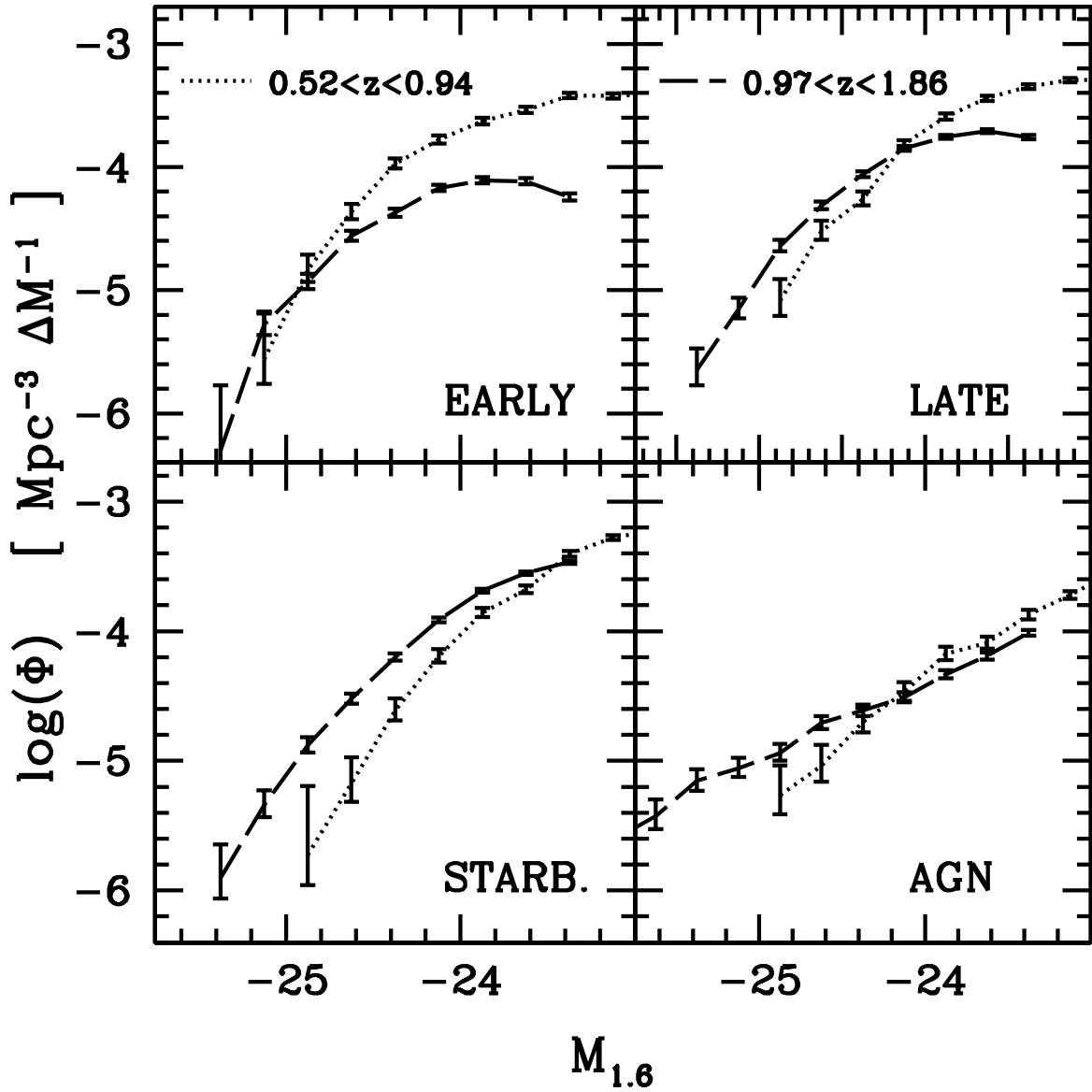


Figure 4.13: Zooming into the region of interest where it is visible that AGN flux boost may indeed occur even in the late-type population at the highest luminosities. For a better visual inspection, only the two highest redshift bins are shown: $0.52 < z < 0.94$ as dotted line, and $0.97 < z < 1.86$ as long dashed line.

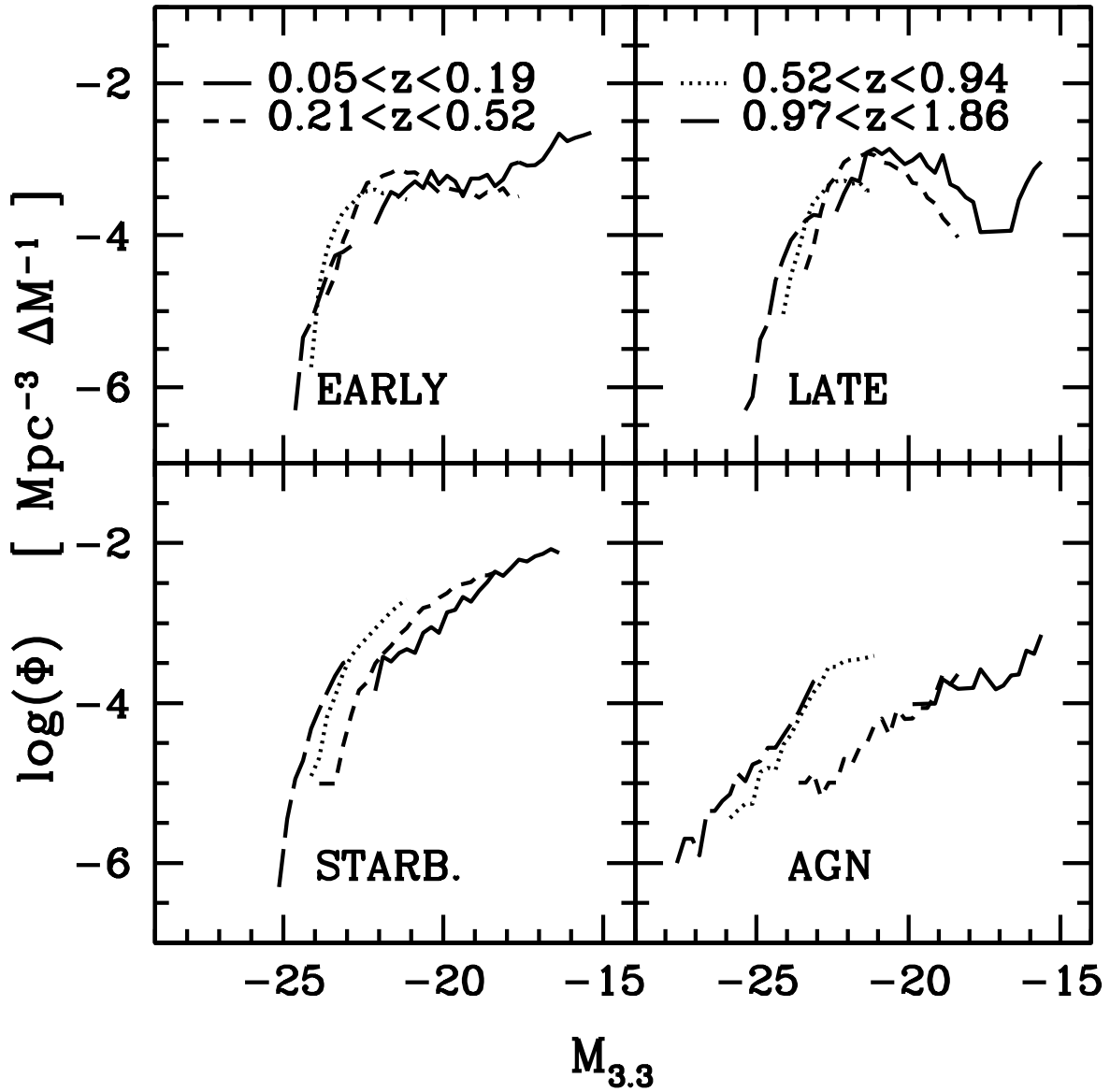


Figure 4.14: Comparing the rest-frame $3.3\mu\text{m}$ LFs for each galaxy population between redshift bins. Line coding as in Figure 4.12.

mass estimate, a dangerous upward scaling bias may happen. A thorough study on the systematic boost from AGN activity should thus be pursued in every high redshift study on stellar mass build up, using hybrid galaxy models like those of (Salvato et al., 2009).

Both Figures 4.12 and 4.14 show that the AGN population is the one to show the greatest difference between the low ($z < 0.5$) and high ($z > 0.5$) redshift intervals. While at high- z , one can see the AGN population as the largest contributor to the bright-end of the total population LF (Figures 4.9 and 4.10), even reshaping the steep bright end (better seen in Figure 4.10; see also some evidences for this in Cirasuolo et al., 2010, although not assigned to AGN activity in that work), its activity is completely altered as one moves to low- z . At low- z , the AGN activity is restricted to the faintest objects, where the upturn is seen for the LFs of the late and early-type populations. This can thus be understood as some kind of AGN downsizing, where at higher redshifts, AGN activity is seen more in brighter galaxies as opposed to the low redshift regime. As mentioned before, the time of change seems to be the same at which the LF hump (seen at absolute magnitudes of $-24 < M < -21$) has been completely assembled. However, the data used here is unable to confirm whether the fainter AGN sample seen at low- z is present at high- z or not. In fact, Cardamone et al. (2010) find a bimodal AGN host population at $z \sim 1$, with AGN activity found in equal numbers of passive evolving and dust-reddened young galaxies. This would imply that the downsizing effect is a selection result and not real, yet it is clear that the AGN activity shuts down first in more luminous galaxies between $0.52 < z < 0.94$ and $0.21 < z < 0.52$.

The method described in Section 4.3 enables a comparison between IR LFs and dust luminosity density functions (LDFs). The latter are presented in Figures 4.15, 4.16 and 4.17. These plots enable us to evaluate how much dust is emitting in the IR in each galaxy population at a given rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ luminosity. The choice of the rest-frame $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ absolute magnitude as the x-axis in the figures allows knowing where to trim the trends due

to incompleteness, and to see how much dust emission there is in each galaxy luminosity class in Figure 4.9. Each of these luminosity classes can be taken as a proxy to stellar mass classes providing that $1.6\ \mu\text{m}$ is dominated by stellar emission.

Again, AGN seem to lead the way at rest-frame $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$. Although we have shown that at low- z these systems are few (3% of the overall population), this population contributes significantly to the faint end of the dust LDF (and maybe even at a comparable level as the much more numerous starbursts at the faintest magnitudes). At high- z , the opposite clearly takes place. The AGN population is by far the largest contributor to the bright-end of the $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ dust LDF, as already expected from the LF shown previously (Figure 4.10). Analysing the rest-frame $6.2\ \mu\text{m}$ dust LDFs, however, one realises how strong the contribution of the PAH features and hot dust can be to the overall NIR/MIR LDF of late-type and starburst galaxies, clearly surpassing that from nearby AGN.

As a final remark, Figure 4.18 shows how the dust luminosity density has evolved since $z \sim 1.5\text{--}2$ (rest-frame $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ data appear connected). With a significant drop since $z \sim 1$ and a flattening at $z \gtrsim 1 - 2$, it resembles the evolution trend of the SF history of the universe (shaded region, Hopkins & Beacom, 2006, scaled to the total population luminosity density at $0.52 < z < 0.94$). However, comparing the luminosity density at present time to that at $0.52 < z < 0.94$, the drop in $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ luminosity density more significant than that of the SF history, by around 1 dex more. There are two interpretations for this: either the reduced star-formation at low redshifts is unable to heat enough quantities of dust for it to dominate at $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ or there is actually a decrease in the dust content in galaxies. A recent study with *Herschel Space Observatory* data may support the latter (Dunne et al., 2010).

The AGN sample appears as the only main contributor to the overall galaxy dust luminosity density only at $z > 1$. At $z < 1$, the starburst sample is the largest contributor with AGN hosts still comprising, nonetheless, a significant contribution to the overall dust

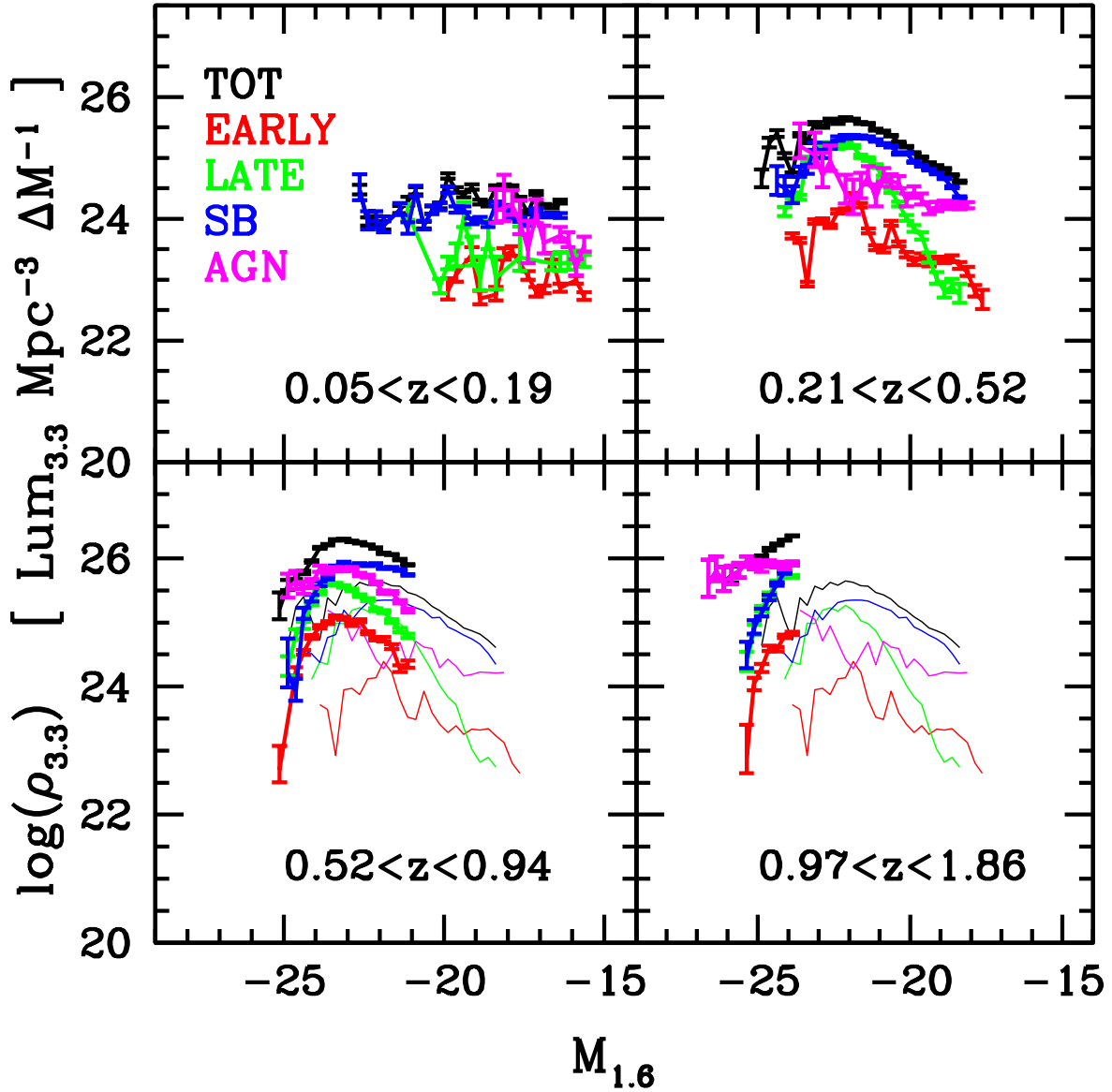


Figure 4.15: Rest-frame $3.3\mu\text{m}$ dust LDFs depending on distance and galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). Due to the irregular trends in the low redshift panel, the trend shown by each galaxy population in the $0.21 < z < 0.52$ redshift panel is displayed instead in the subsequent panels for comparison. The dust LDFs were trimmed according to the cuts adopted in Figure 4.9.

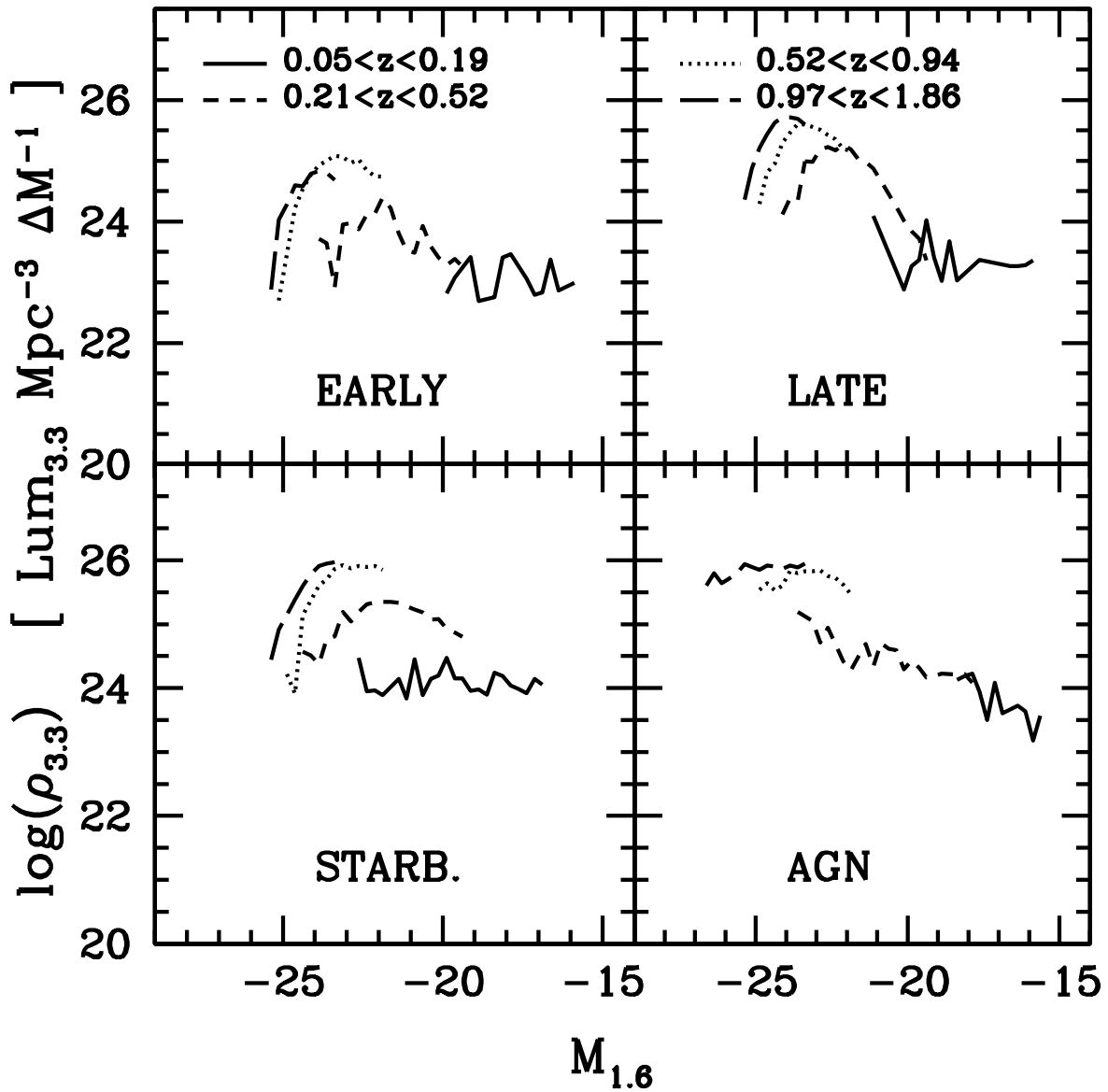


Figure 4.16: Comparing the rest-frame 3.3 μm dust LDFs for each galaxy population between redshift bins. Line coding as in Figure 4.12. The dust LDFs were trimmed according to the cuts adopted in Figure 4.9.

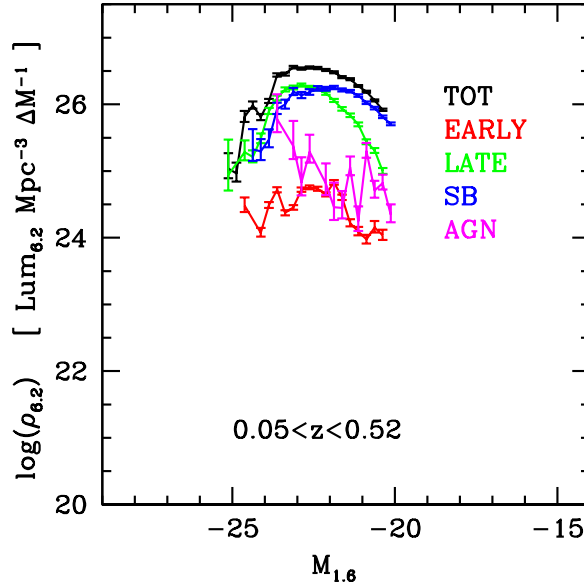


Figure 4.17: Local $6.2\mu\text{m}$ dust LDFs depending on galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). The dust LDFs were trimmed according to the cuts adopted in Figure 4.9.

luminosity density. We stress, however, the completely different source numbers of each of these two populations (Table 4.2), where the starburst population is significantly more numerous. Overlaid in Figure 4.18 are also the data points for rest-frame $6.2\mu\text{m}$ (open circles) in the nearby universe. It shows how much more dust is contributing to the galaxy SED at $6.2\mu\text{m}$ when compared to $3.3\mu\text{m}$. For instance, the dust luminosity density at rest-frame $6.2\mu\text{m}$ at $z < 0.52$ is still larger than the dust luminosity density at rest-frame $3.3\mu\text{m}$ at $z > 1$. Table 4.3 details the contributions of each of the galaxy populations to the overall dust luminosity density at rest-frames 3.3 and $6.2\mu\text{m}$, depending on the redshift.

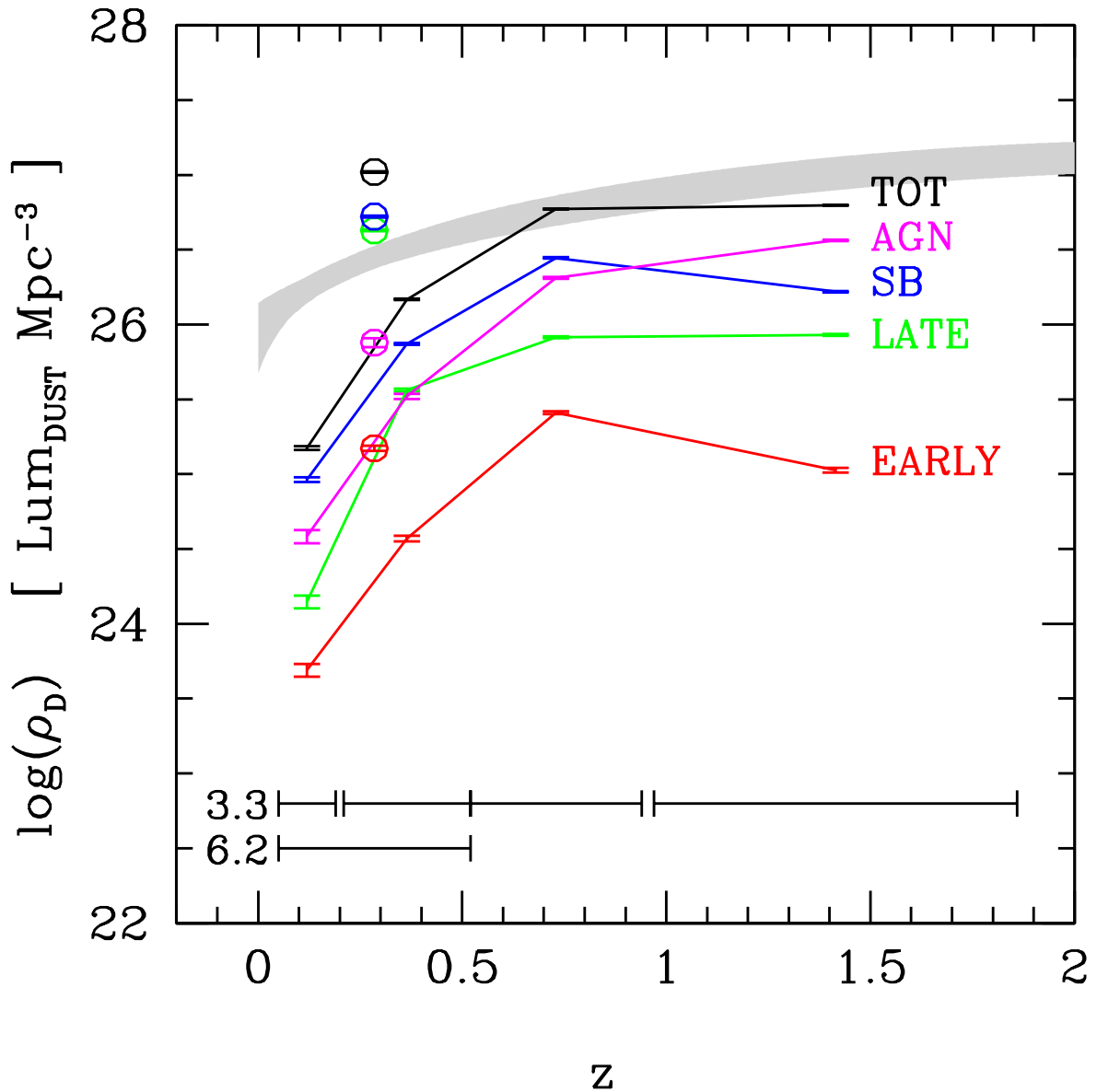


Figure 4.18: Rest-frame 3.3 and 6.2 μm dust luminosity densities (ρ_D) depending on redshift and galaxy type: Total population (black), Early (red), Late (green), Starburst (blue), and AGN (magenta). Rest-frame 3.3 μm estimates appear connected, while 6.2 μm estimates appear as open circles. The redshift intervals corresponding to each data point of each rest-frame wavelength (Table 4.1) are indicated as error bars at the bottom. The star-formation history 3σ trend, as compiled by Hopkins & Beacom (2006), is shown for comparison as the grey shaded region and scaled to the ρ_D value of the total population at $0.52 < z < 0.94$.

Table 4.3: The contribution of the different galaxy samples to the rest-frame 3.3 and 6.2 μm dust luminosity densities

Rest-Frame [μm]	z_{BIN}	EARLY [%]	LATE [%]	STARB. [%]	AGN [%]
3.3	$0.05 < z < 0.19$	3	11	58	28
	$0.21 < z < 0.52$	2	25	50	23
	$0.52 < z < 0.94$	4	14	47	35
	$0.97 < z < 1.86$	2	14	26	58
6.2	$0.05 < z < 0.52$	1	41	51	7

4.5 Conclusions

In this chapter, the hottest regime of dust emission was explored. Our new approach considers both stellar and dust emissions separately, as well as the separation of the IR galaxy population into early, late, starburst, and AGN host galaxies. This allows to evaluate the IR luminosity functions depending on galaxy-type and distance, as well as to estimate how much dust is contributing to the IR emission. We have concluded the following:

- The upturn seen in the IR LFs at the faint-end is probably linked to AGN activity, but may not be due to AGN activity. Instead, AGN activity is believed to be the consequence, and not the cause, of the upturn (e.g., dwarf galaxy disruption). Nevertheless, AGN may help speed up the transition process between star-forming dwarf galaxy into passive dwarf galaxy.
- Bimodality is related to different contributions by the early/late-type populations at the highest luminosities and starbursts at the faintest luminosities. Chapter 2 confirms the existence of such feature even at $z > 1$, and points to the existence of

another one at even higher luminosities (masses) where the contribution of early and late-type appears to be more distinct than it is at local distances.

- AGN “downsizing” between $z \sim 1$ and $z \sim 0$ is probably a selection effect in our study, as fainter AGN hosts are missed at the highest redshift ranges. But it is clear that the AGN activity in the most luminous objects shuts down between $0.21 < z < 0.52$ and $0.52 < z < 0.94$ range. Interestingly, this is the range where the IR LF bump at $-24 < M < -21$ seems to be finally assembled, meaning that the two episodes may be related.
- The observed AGN flux boost at $1.6 \mu\text{m}$ has important implications for any high redshift study on galaxy stellar mass as it results in a systematic overestimate of the stellar masses. The final AGN shapes in comparison with work in the literature, supports the reliability of our results, and no significant contamination from TP-AGB stars is expected to bias our conclusions.
- Although significantly less numerous, AGN comprise a significant contribution to the overall dust emission at rest-frame $3.3 \mu\text{m}$ since $z \sim 2$.
- Evolution with redshift of the hot dust luminosity densities resembles that of SF history of the universe, but it drops more steeply (about 1 dex more).

Chapter 5

Future prospects

With the main focus on the IR spectral regime, this thesis addresses three science key subjects for the understanding of galaxy evolution: extremely red galaxies (ERGs), active galactic nuclei (AGN), and dust.

With a new statistical approach, meaningful results are obtained for Extremely Red Galaxy (ERG) populations (Chapter 2). By separating the sample into pure and common ERGs (respectively, galaxies belonging to only one or to the three ERG groups considered in this study), we show that pure-EROs (pEROs) are mostly for passively evolved galaxies, while the common galaxies (mostly IEROs and DRGs) show evidences for a dusty starburst nature. However, a morphology study and the non-existent colour bimodality (there is a continuum in $J - K$ colours from pEROs to DRGs) point to a link among the ERG population, where the more star-forming ERGs will later turn into more passively-evolved ERGs. Hence, the frequently referred difficulty to separate ERGs into distinct populations, either morphologically (Moustakas et al., 2004) or photometrically (Pierini et al., 2004; Fontanot & Monaco, 2010), is probably a result of this smooth transition during the ERG phase.

The new KI and KIM criteria showed to be more reliable than commonly used IR

criteria and are of great use for the study of AGN populations undetected at X-rays or optical wavelengths (Chapter 3). For instance, in Chapter 4 the KI criteria allowed to see that AGN activity is closely related to different features seen in the IR luminosity functions (LFs), and that hot dust in AGN host galaxies may emit significantly at short IR wavelengths probably biasing systematically any stellar mass study at high- z (where the effect seems to be stronger).

The overall results of this thesis reveal the possibility for further applications in a wide variety of science projects, and for improvements to the work itself. In this chapter, future lines of research are considered. Following-up on the developed work, these comprise further testing of the considered techniques (such as the KI and KIM criteria), the need to overcome the present limitations (e.g., small areal coverage), and new proposed projects making use of the experience gained during the course of this thesis (e.g., the study of high redshift passive disc galaxies).

5.1 On the application to other surveys

Before presenting any of the future projects, it should be stressed that extending the work to other fields is not always the answer. It depends on the science goals and survey characteristics. If each of these factors are not properly taken into account, sometimes one will be comparing apples and oranges.

With deep (near-)IR imaging, we find, for instance, larger surveys like COSMOS (1.8 deg²), VISTA Deep Extragalactic Observations (VIDEO 12 deg², PI. Matt Jarvis) and the UKIDSS Ultra Deep Survey (UDS, 0.8 deg² Warren et al., 2006). All these wide-field deep surveys make use of optical to near-IR imaging that reach survey depths comparable to those achieved in the Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey (GOODS) fields, however, except for radio frequencies (with upcoming all-sky surveys reaching 10 μ Jy *rms*

levels), the remainder spectral regimes tend to be a whole different scenario.

Take the X-ray coverage as an example, it is unlikely that, in the next decade or so, surveys like those referred above will ever reach the 2 Ms depth achieved in the northern and southern GOODS fields (and even less the recent 4 Ms on GOODS-South, GOODSs). This holds because of the large areal coverage of these surveys, which *CXO* will not be able to cover till such depths in a reasonable time-length. The extended ROentgen Survey with an Imaging Telescope Array (eROSITA, to be launched in 2012/2013, Predehl et al., 2010) will cover the whole sky in the X-rays (0.5–10 keV), albeit to depths 2 dex higher than those reached by *CXO* and with a half energy width (HEW) 25 times larger. The Wide Field X-ray Telescope (WFXT, with a HEW five times larger than *CXO* Rosati et al., 2011) will cover as well the whole sky, and later cover $\sim 100 \text{ deg}^2$ down to the deepest CXO sensitivity. However, this mission is not yet scheduled for launch.

Also, *Spitzer* Space Telescope (*SST*) is now on ‘warm mode’, meaning that observations at higher wavelengths ($> 5 \mu\text{m}$) are no longer possible. Although these higher wavelength filters were the least sensitive even on ‘cryogenic mode’, they were (and are) fundamental for the study of the high redshift Universe by probing rest-frame near-IR ($1\text{--}3 \mu\text{m}$ at $z > 1$), allowing for, e.g., proper stellar mass estimates. The all-sky survey performed by Wide-field Infrared Survey Explorer (WISE, Wright et al., 2010) reaches magnitude (source confused) limits at $3 \mu\text{m}$ brighter than those available in COSMOS at $8 \mu\text{m}$, limiting the studies to the brightest of the sources at high redshifts. Finally, the small $\sim 4 \text{ arcmin}^2$ field of view of *James Webb* Space Telescope makes it more a follow-up science telescope than a survey science one. Hence, the currently available fields resulting from the combination between area and depth of *SST* at $> 5 \mu\text{m}$ will still be the best in the next years to come.

5.2 Extremely red galaxies

Although this study is based in one of the deepest data-sets ever assembled, it does not provide a large enough sample to constrain, for instance, the SFR values for the $2 \leq z \leq 3$ non-AGN ERG sample. At this point, we believe that similar methodology to this thesis is only possible in GOODS north (GOODSn), given the similar deep multi-wavelength coverage. This is, in Chapter 2, if we had restricted the AGN classification to the shallower X-ray and IR flux limits available in other surveyed fields (referred above), some of the sources classified as AGN in this thesis would no longer be so, hence being included in the non-AGN stack instead, boosting the stacking flux signal and resulting in a detection. By considering GOODSn, similar flux levels are considered and a proper statistical improvement is possible, even though the overall areal coverage is still small (~ 300 arcmin² in total for the two fields).

We do believe, however, that larger fields will probably help confirming if the second proposed dip seen in the mass functions (MFs) at $z > 1$ (Section 2.4.6) is real or a result of a methodology bias. This second dip is found at relatively high masses, hence, shallow IR surveys will still be able to probe it.

5.2.1 Dependencies on clustering

ERGs are known to be found in over-dense regions of the Universe (e.g., Roche et al., 2003; Grazian et al., 2006b; Kong et al., 2009), and among ERGs, there are differences between those galaxies showing evolved stellar populations and those known to be dusty starbursts, where the former are found in the densest of the environments (up to twice the clustering amplitude, Daddi et al., 2002; Roche et al., 2002; Kong et al., 2009). But can one actually see any evolution from $2 < z < 3$ to $1 < z < 2$? Also, if each of these two ERG populations indeed track different density environments (although both in dense regions),

just by separating them, one can follow the SF history and mass assembly dependency on clustering from high redshifts in ERG populations.

5.2.2 Morphology evolution

Another interesting question to be answered is, if indeed ERGs are all the same population, which of the two populations — passively evolved or dusty starburst — grows faster and larger in order to fit the spheroid sizes found in the local Universe (Trujillo et al., 2006, 2007; Buitrago et al., 2008)? Or do they turn into the same kind of local spheroids? Will they differ in size nonetheless? In order to assess these morphology-related questions, different observed wave-bands (optical to near-IR) are required to follow the same rest-frame wavelength up to high redshifts. Most of the work done until today on deep and far galaxy samples was based on a comparison of *HST*-ACS with *HST*-NICMOS imaging. The latter unavoidably limited the studies to smaller patches of the sky (like in GOODS NICMOS Survey, Conselice et al., 2011) due to its smaller field of view and integration efficiency. With the advent of the Wide Field Camera 3 (WFC3) installed on *HST* in May 2009, *H* and *J*-band imaging is enabled down to unprecedented depths and with improved resolution¹, closer to that achieved with ACS. The Cosmic Assembly Near-infrared Deep Extragalactic Legacy Survey² (CANDELS) team was granted 902 *HST* orbits of WFC3 observing time (started on October 2010) to cover significant portions of some of the best studied extragalactic fields so far (GOODS north and south, Ultra Deep Survey, Extended Groth Strip, and COSMOS). The first orbits of CANDELS were reserved for GOODSs and some of the data is already available for public use.

¹Ground-based telescopes are limited by Earth's atmospheric molecular, ionic, and continuum emission (Mountain et al., 2009), and have significantly higher telescope thermal emission comparatively to *HST* (Mountain et al., 2009). Unless aided with a (laser) guiding star and an active and adaptive optic system, the image resolution will always be limited by the atmospheric seeing.

²<http://candels.ucolick.org/>

As can be seen in Section 5.3, the CANDELS (and the WFC3 Early Release Science³ observations, Windhorst et al., 2011) data are already being used in one of the most interesting follow-up studies arising from this thesis, the study of Passive Disc Galaxies. Another subject that will take advantage of such data-set is the study of pure-DRGs (Section 2.4.7.1). The near-IR imaging from WFC3 (probing the rest-frame optical at $z > 2$) will allow to follow the older and colder stellar population present in these galaxies, and, by matching with the observed optical (rest-frame UV) ACS imaging, analyse possible differences in the dynamics between the old and young stellar populations producing, respectively, the characteristic red $J - K$ and monochromatic/blue $i_{775} - K$ colours in each pDRG SED. Grism observations will also allow for a faster spectral coverage of this population, which is still scarce (only about 10% of the pDRGs have a good quality spectrum). While those are not available for a significant patch of GOODSs, we have applied for 20 h of observation time with FORS2⁴ at the Very Large Telescope, in order to get spectroscopic redshifts for 30 of the brightest pDRGs. The requested time length is that needed to get enough signal to noise to allow for a proper AGN census (relying on line ratios and high ionization emission line detections), a type of activity which is believed to be still in action in pDRGs and is related to a possible recent evolution of these galaxies (Section 2.4.7.1).

5.2.3 Stacking algorithm

In parallel, the stacking procedure is being tested in order to search for possible improvements. We focus on both the stacking procedure itself and the pre-analysis of each stamp to be stacked. We aim to constrain the bias towards a given type of source (e.g., flux or apparent extension dependency). Should the science image or a source-removed image be used for stacking? Do we actually understand the statistics behind the stacking analysis?

³Program 11359 (PI R. W. O’Connell), <http://archive.stsci.edu/prepds/wfc3ers/>

⁴<http://www.eso.org/sci/facilities/paranal/instruments/fors/overview.html#fors2>

Can we go deeper than the expected *rms* decrease with $1/\sqrt{N}$ by means of a pre-stacking procedure? These are some of the issues we are exploring. For that purpose, real radio data are being considered and simulations ran depending on both parent galaxy properties and telescope capabilities. This will be of great importance for all-sky surveys done with near-future radio facilities such as ASKAP⁵, MeerKAT⁶, and MWA⁷.

5.3 High-*z* passive discs

This has been one of the most interesting outcomes of this thesis, enough to have its own section — this one — detailing the implications and what will be done henceforth. It should be stressed that PDGs are one of the ultimate goals of the Atacama Large Millimetre Array⁸, which is now being prepared for the inaugural Cycle 0 observations.

The presence of discs at high-*z* ($z \gtrsim 2$) has been known (e.g., Labbé et al., 2003) and expected (Sommer-Larsen et al., 2003) for a number of years. Most massive objects presenting disc-like profiles don't actually pose any problem to hierarchical models, as a disc can be the result of a highly gas-rich merger (Okamoto et al., 2005; Robertson et al., 2006; Robertson & Bullock, 2008; Hopkins et al., 2009a; Cresci et al., 2009; Wuyts et al., 2010). The disc is extended, possessing intense star formation (SF). Although these discs may not be completely stable (due to strong instability, a bulge dominated system is obtained by $z \sim 0$, e.g., Scannapieco et al., 2009; Bournaud et al., 2011), this is in agreement with most observations of large disc galaxies at high-*z*, which present high SF rates and clumpy and/or disturbed stellar discs (Labbé et al., 2003; Genzel et al., 2006; Cresci et al., 2009; Förster Schreiber et al., 2009; Cava et al., 2010). However, there are increasing evidences for massive compact disc galaxies with rather old stellar populations.

⁵<http://www.atnf.csiro.au/SKA/>

⁶<http://www.ska.ac.za/meerkat/specsci.php>

⁷<http://www.mwatelescope.org/>

⁸<http://almascience.eso.org/>

These are characteristics that have not been predicted so far by any hierarchical model. Passive disc galaxies (PDGs) are quiescent and small ($r_e \sim 2$ kpc; Stockton et al., 2008; van der Wel et al., 2011, and Section 2.4.2) and seem to be the result of inside-out formation (Elmegreen et al., 2005; Elmegreen, 2009; Genzel et al., 2011).

Knowing that high- z discs are expected to form at $z \sim 3-7$ (a 1.5 Gyr interval) and a disc takes $\lesssim 1$ Gyr to form (Eggen et al., 1962; Scannapieco et al., 2009; Bournaud et al., 2011), can dissipative collapse alone (Eggen et al., 1962; Silk & Wyse, 1993) produce such evolved systems at $z=2-3$? Stellar and AGN feedbacks, either result in more extended disc profiles or spheroidal systems (Okamoto et al., 2005; Governato et al., 2007; Scannapieco et al., 2008; Agertz et al., 2011; Bournaud et al., 2011), so, if not a consequence of simple galaxy evolution, what kind of feedback could have caused such rapid evolution? It is known that disc instabilities speed up galaxy growth, this is, the more unstable a galaxy is (to a certain amount), the quicker and more efficiently its gas content collapses gravitationally and forms stars (e.g., Li et al., 2006; Bournaud et al., 2010, and references therein). Also, the disc formation mechanism had to be gradual and gentle in order to have the gas settling onto a disc before converting into stars (Bournaud et al., 2011; van der Wel et al., 2011). This was simulated by Dekel et al. (2009), where smooth and clumpy cold streams were shown to maintain an unstable gas-rich disc, producing, for several Gyr, giant clumps which would convert into stars and could eventually migrate to the bulge. Hence, finding a possible shut-down mechanism of the cold gas streams in these sources is one of the goals of this future project.

The observational work done so far found in the literature (see above) is based in the very generic $J - K$ colours (or similar colours) or in mass selected samples ($\geq 10^{10} M_\odot$). While the first is known to select extremely obscured SF systems (including edge-on dusty SF discs), the latter may miss smaller/lighter disc examples. Also, many of the disc samples are still selected in observed optical bands, where an old system at $z \sim 2$ appears

faint, hence hard to detect. For instance, the PDG candidate referred in this work (Section 2.3.3.2) is not detected even in the reddest ACS-*HST* band, z_{850} .

The aim of this future project is a major statistical study of PDGs at high- z ($z > 1$) based on an IR colour-morphology selected sample more numerous than any of the samples referred in previous works (e.g., Tamm & Tenjes, 2006; van der Wel et al., 2011). A consistent sample has now been assembled in CDFS using the MUSIC catalogue (Santini et al. 2009). It is composed by ~ 40 objects at $1 < z_{phot} < 3$. The first selection-step is based on two IR colours (Figure 5.1). Unless there is a significant AGN contribution, any late-type galaxy having $K - [4.5] > 0$ will likely be at $z > 1$. The $[8.0] - [24] < 0$ cut ensures that there is no significant star formation nor AGN related dust emission. However, a morphology inspection is necessary due to the fact that high- z dust-free blue starbursts also follow the colour criterion. A few examples of PDGs found in the final sample are shown in Figure 5.2.

The immediate objective of this project will be the census of $1 < z < 3$ passive discs by confirming their redshifts, either by absorption features or emission lines. Although there is no significant star formation, emission lines are expected given the 17% detection rate in the X-rays (cross-correlation with the 2Ms catalogue, Luo et al., 2008, using a conservative search radius of $0.8''$). This calls for a possible AGN feedback link to the nature of PDGs. However, it can not be anything like we are used to see in current galaxy evolution models accounting for AGN feedback at high redshifts. The end product of such feedback is always a spheroidal system. Thus, if an AGN feedback is indeed responsible for the existence of PDGs at $z > 2$, it has to be comparatively weaker to the “quasar mode”, and a “radio mode” may have to be called to these high redshift systems (Croton et al., 2006b,a; Fontanot et al., 2011). The study of identified PDGs hosting an AGN either by their X-ray properties or spectroscopy identification will help unveil such scenario.

As a final remark, it should be emphasized that these passive discs are one of the primary

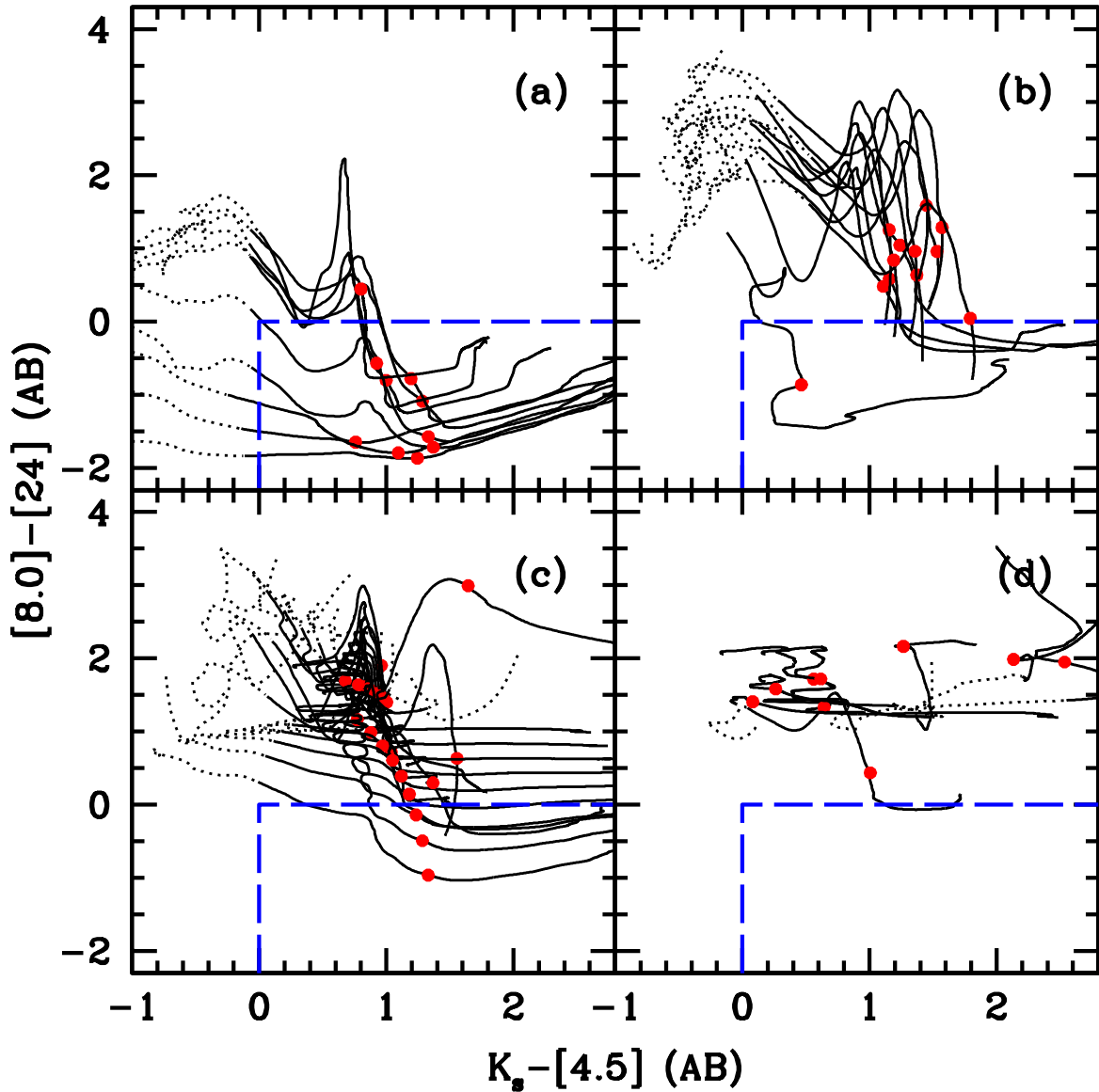


Figure 5.1: The selection of high- z PDGs. Panel (a) is reserved for early and late-type galaxies, (b) for starburst systems, (c) for hybrid sources, and (d) for pure AGN sources. The colour tracks extend from $z = 0$ up to $z = 7$. The dotted portion of the tracks indicates the $z < 1$ range. The red circle marks $z = 2.5$. The dashed line demarks the selection region where blue dust-free starbursts also fall. These are easily discarded by means of a visual inspection based on their small light profile and/or bright optical detections. For a complete description and discussion of the considered templates, see Chapter 3 of this thesis.

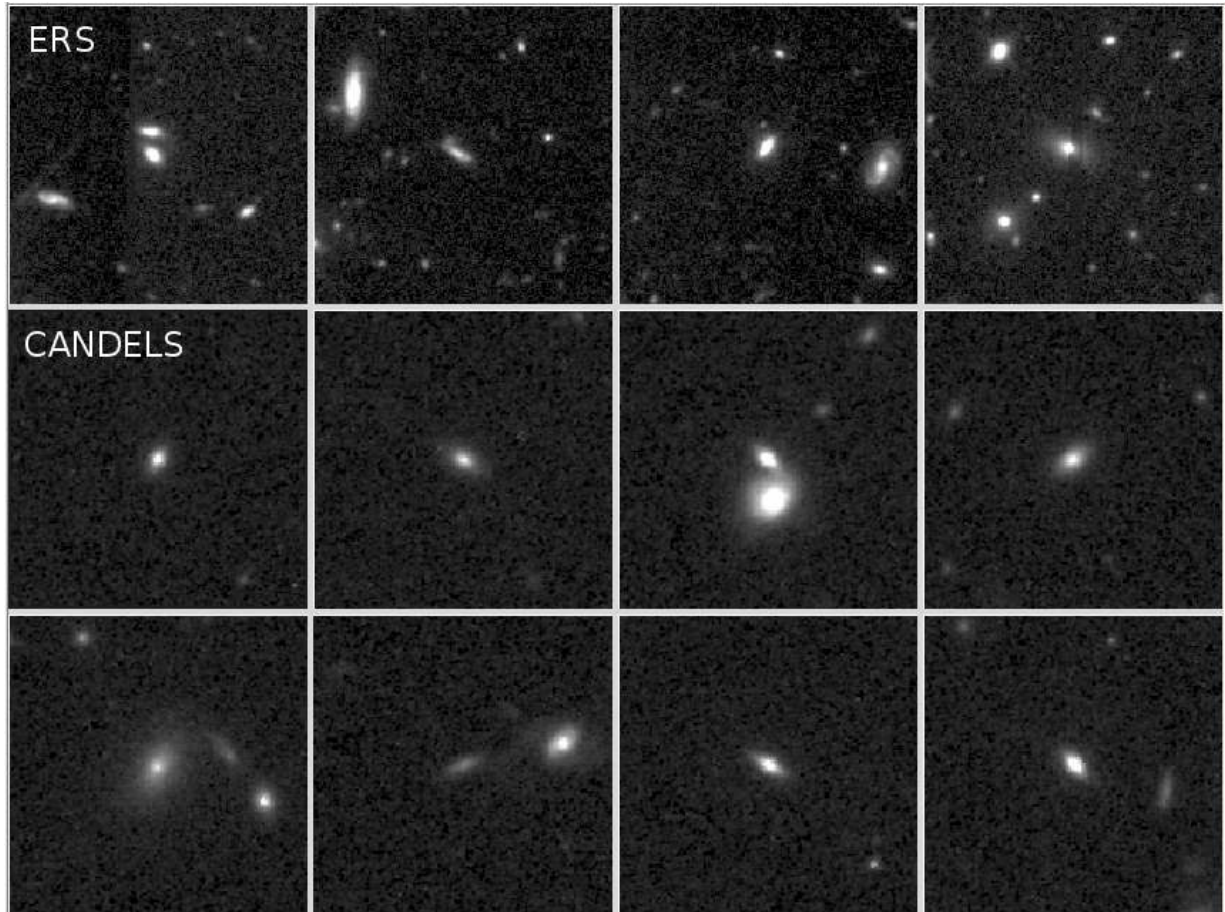


Figure 5.2: Twelve examples of PDGs found in GOODSs are presented. These are $10''$ wide WFC3- $H160$ cut-outs from ERS (top row) and CANDELS (two bottom rows) observations. In most, the disc profile is clearly observed.

goals of the Atacama Large Millimetre Array (ALMA). As the ALMA team frequently refers, milky-way type galaxies will be detected up to $z \sim 3$ in full array mode in less than 24 hours of observation. PDGs are likely such type of galaxies, presenting (practically) no star-formation activity (Milky Way's SFR is about $3 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$), given their lack of rest-frame UV light and blue [8.0] – [24] colours. ALMA will provide spectral observations to the brightest objects and, more interestingly, disc dynamics, leaving an open door to unveil the mystery of PDGs.

5.4 The search for the most obscured AGN

It is now clear that the development of the KI and KIM criteria (Chapter 3) has great implications to the science to be made with *James Webb Space Telescope* (*JWST*). These criteria together with the depth and resolving power of *JWST* will allow the selection of deep and large samples of PDGs (previous section), as well as a detailed morphological and spectroscopical study of these galaxies.

However, the prime objective of these criteria is the search for the most obscured AGN sources in the Universe. In the literature, many groups have attempted to select the so-called compton thick AGN in deep hard-band X-ray surveys or with extremely red optical-to-MIR colours. While the former is known to miss a significant portion of the obscured AGN sample, the latter is contaminated by extremely obscured non-AGN galaxies, unless stringent constraints are considered. One of this rigorous constraints is high MIR flux cuts ($f_{24\mu\text{m}} > 1 \text{ mJy}$), attainable only by the brightest AGN sources. Fiore et al. (2008) considered even fainter sources on the assumption that extremely red $R - K$ colours would select a higher fraction of AGN sources. However, as seen in Figure 2.10 (Section 3) shows that, although Fiore et al. (2008) are right in their assumption, a $J - K$ is more efficient on achieving that goal, with the advantage that the selected sources will be at higher redshifts

with increasingly redder $J - K$ colour cuts (Figure 2.13).

One final class of objects holds a place of interest. In Chapter 3, it was shown the importance of the $K - [4.5]$ colour for the selection of AGN hosts and the characterization of high- z sources. Hence, searching for those sources appearing in deep $4.5\ \mu\text{m}$ coverages while remaining undetected in the K -band will certainly provide samples of the most extreme sources in the Universe. In combination with higher wavelength bands ($\geq 8\ \mu\text{m}$), a reliable sample of extremely obscured AGN will be assembled. While GOODSs is already being surveyed for such class of AGN (relying on the MUSIC catalogue, which considers z_{850-} , K_s- , and $4.5\ \mu\text{m}$ -selected sources), COSMOS is likely another deep survey to explore in the search for such class of objects. Also, as soon as SERVS data (deep 3.6 and $4.5\ \mu\text{m}$ coverage, PI M. Lacy) is available on VIDEO (a $12\ \text{deg.}^2$ deep near-IR survey, PI M. Jarvis), a large statistical sample of extreme $4.5\ \mu\text{m}$ -detected K -undetected sources will be assembled for further study, providing useful constraints to both galaxy and AGN evolution models (e.g., number densities, luminosity distributions).

Nonetheless, the IR AGN selection may still require some fine tuning. For instance, all the IR AGN diagnostics have never been tested against the emission from TP-AGB stars (which is known to peak at $2\ \mu\text{m}$, Maraston, 2005). This is crucial to the high-redshift regime where a larger incidence of systems with enhanced TP-AGB stellar emission is known to reside (Maraston, 2005; Henriques et al., 2010). If such effect in the IR regime significantly affects IR AGN selection, than we are forced to use only the most restrictive AGN criteria (like the bright IR excess sources, e.g., Polletta et al., 2006; Dey et al., 2008) or to rely solely on the remainder spectral regimes, which sometimes is not the ideal scenario.

5.5 Direct comparison of the evolution of hot and cold dust

Chapter 4 has shown that the evolution of $3.3\ \mu\text{m}$ dust emission is declining much more rapidly than the overall SF history (and hence the colder dust emission) in the Universe. But this study allows to go even further. With the large galaxy numbers available in the COSMOS field, it will be possible to obtain cold-dust luminosity density functions like those present in Figure 4.15. Hence, a direct comparison of hot and cold dust at each given luminosity bin will be possible. The comparatively shallow FIR/millimetre surveys poses a problem that can be circumvented in this project, as the large galaxy numbers available in each of these bins will allow for a proper stacking analysis, providing average FIR/mm fluxes for each of the luminosity classes. With this we aim to track the interplay between the hot and cold dust regions since high redshifts to the present.

5.6 Closing remarks

There is no doubt that the IR spectral regime has revolutionised our understanding of the Universe “around”⁹ us. The presence of numerous galaxy populations undetected at optical wavelengths has showed us that there is much more to see beyond the narrow optical spectral window. The journey is still far from finished. Our ability to probe the multi-wavelength Universe to amazing depths is improving by the day, either through instrumental advances or better facilities. Although one should never underestimate archive-based science, the coming observational facilities will provide data-sets that will revolutionise once again our way of thinking, and show that the Universe is as unpredictable as it is fun.

⁹Quotation marks to avoid any misunderstanding. No, the IR does not support a geocentric Universe.

Bibliography

- Abell, G. O., 1959. The luminosity function of the Coma cluster of galaxies. *AJ*, **64**, 125–+.
- Adelberger, K. L., Steidel, C. C., Shapley, A. E., Hunt, M. P., Erb, D. K., Reddy, N. A. & Pettini, M., 2004. Optical Selection of Star-forming Galaxies at Redshifts $1 < z < 3$. *ApJ*, **607**, 226–240.
- Afonso, J., Georgakakis, A., Almeida, C., Hopkins, A. M., Cram, L. E., Mobasher, B. & Sullivan, M., 2005. The Phoenix Deep Survey: Spectroscopic Catalog. *ApJ*, **624**, 135–154.
- Afonso, J., Hopkins, A., Mobasher, B. & Almeida, C., 2003. Dependence of Dust Obscuration on Star Formation Rates in Galaxies. *ApJ*, **597**, 269–273.
- Afonso, J., Mobasher, B., Chan, B. & Cram, L., 2001. Discovery of an Extremely Red Galaxy at $z=0.65$ with Dusty Star Formation and Nuclear Activity. *ApJ*, **559**, L101–L104.
- Afonso, J., Mobasher, B., Koekemoer, A., Norris, R. P. & Cram, L., 2006. Optical and X-Ray Identification of Faint Radio Sources in the GOODS CDF-S Advanced Camera for Surveys Field. *AJ*, **131**, 1216–1230.
- Agertz, O., Teyssier, R. & Moore, B., 2011. The formation of disc galaxies in a Λ CDM universe. *MNRAS*, **410**, 1391–1408.
- Aird, J., Nandra, K., Laird, E. S., Georgakakis, A., Ashby, M. L. N., Barmby, P., Coil, A. L., Huang, J.-S., Koekemoer, A. M., Steidel, C. C. & Willmer, C. N. A., 2010. The evolution of the hard X-ray luminosity function of AGN. *MNRAS*, **401**, 2531–2551.
- Akylas, A., Georgantopoulos, I., Georgakakis, A., Kitsionas, S. & Hatziminaoglou, E., 2006. XMM-Newton and Chandra measurements of the AGN intrinsic absorption: dependence on luminosity and redshift. *A&A*, **459**, 693–701.
- Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., Schneider, D. P., Hornschemeier, A. E., Vignali, C., Barger, A. J., Broos, P. S., Cowie, L. L., Garmire, G. P., Townsley, L. K., Bautz, M. W., Chartas, G. & Sargent, W. L. W., 2003. The Chandra Deep Field North Survey. XIII. 2 Ms Point-Source Catalogs. *AJ*, **126**, 539–574.

- Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Chapman, S. C., Smail, I., Blain, A. W., Brandt, W. N. & Ivison, R. J., 2005. The X-Ray Spectral Properties of SCUBA Galaxies. *ApJ*, **632**, 736–750.
- Alexander, D. M., Vignali, C., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., Hornschemeier, A. E., Garmire, G. P. & Schneider, D. P., 2002. The Chandra Deep Field North Survey. X. X-Ray Emission from Very Red Objects. *AJ*, **123**, 1149–1162.
- Alonso-Herrero, A., Pérez-González, P. G., Alexander, D. M., Rieke, G. H., Rigopoulou, D., Le Floch, E., Barmby, P., Papovich, C., Rigby, J. R., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., Egami, E., Willner, S. P., Dole, H. & Huang, J.-S., 2006. Infrared Power-Law Galaxies in the Chandra Deep Field-South: Active Galactic Nuclei and Ultraluminous Infrared Galaxies. *ApJ*, **640**, 167–184.
- Antonucci, R., 1993. Unified models for active galactic nuclei and quasars. *ARA&A*, **31**, 473–521.
- Antonucci, R. R. J. & Miller, J. S., 1985. Spectropolarimetry and the nature of NGC 1068. *ApJ*, **297**, 621–632.
- Assef, R. J., Kochanek, C. S., Ashby, M. L. N., Brodwin, M., Brown, M. J. I., Cool, R., Forman, W., Gonzalez, A. H., Hickox, R. C., Jannuzi, B. T., Jones, C., Le Floch, E., Moustakas, J., Murray, S. S. & Stern, D., 2011. The Mid-IR- and X-ray-Selected QSO Luminosity Function. *ApJ*, **728**, 56–+.
- Assef, R. J., Kochanek, C. S., Brodwin, M., Cool, R., Forman, W., Gonzalez, A. H., Hickox, R. C., Jones, C., Le Floch, E., Moustakas, J., Murray, S. S. & Stern, D., 2010. Low-Resolution Spectral Templates for Active Galactic Nuclei and Galaxies from 0.03 to 30 μm . *ApJ*, **713**, 970–985.
- Baldry, I. K., Glazebrook, K. & Driver, S. P., 2008. On the galaxy stellar mass function, the mass-metallicity relation and the implied baryonic mass function. *MNRAS*, **388**, 945–959.
- Balestra, I., Mainieri, V., Popesso, P., Dickinson, M., Nonino, M., Rosati, P., Teimoorinia, H., Vanzella, E., Cristiani, S., Cesarsky, C., Fosbury, R. A. E., Kuntschner, H. & Rettura, A., 2010. The Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey. VLT/VIMOS spectroscopy in the GOODS-south field: Part II. *A&A*, **512**, A12+.
- Barger, A. J., Aragon-Salamanca, A., Ellis, R. S., Couch, W. J., Smail, I. & Sharples, R. M., 1996. The life-cycle of star formation in distant clusters. *MNRAS*, **279**, 1–24.
- Barlow, M. J., Krause, O., Swinyard, B. M., Sibthorpe, B., Besel, M.-A., Wesson, R., Ivison, R. J., Dunne, L., Gear, W. K., Gomez, H. L., Hargrave, P. C., Henning, T., Leeks, S. J., Lim, T. L., Olofsson, G. & Polehampton, E. T., 2010. A Herschel PACS and SPIRE study of the dust content of the Cassiopeia A supernova remnant. *A&A*, **518**, L138+.

- Barmby, P., Alonso-Herrero, A., Donley, J. L., Egami, E., Fazio, G. G., Georgakakis, A., Huang, J.-S., Laird, E. S., Miyazaki, S., Nandra, K., Park, S. Q., Pérez-González, P. G., Rieke, G. H., Rigby, J. R. & Willner, S. P., 2006. Mid-Infrared Properties of X-Ray Sources in the Extended Groth Strip. *ApJ*, **642**, 126–139.
- Bauer, A. E., Drory, N., Hill, G. J. & Feulner, G., 2005. Specific Star Formation Rates to Redshift 1.5. *ApJ*, **621**, L89–L92.
- Baugh, C. M., 2006. A primer on hierarchical galaxy formation: the semi-analytical approach. *Reports on Progress in Physics*, **69**, 3101–3156.
- Baugh, C. M., Benson, A. J., Cole, S., Frenk, C. S. & Lacey, C. G., 1999. Modelling the evolution of galaxy clustering. *MNRAS*, **305**, L21–L25.
- Beals, C. S., 1929. On the nature of Wolf-Rayet emission. *MNRAS*, **90**, 202–212.
- Bell, E. F., 2003. Estimating Star Formation Rates from Infrared and Radio Luminosities: The Origin of the Radio-Infrared Correlation. *ApJ*, **586**, 794–813.
- Bell, E. F., Naab, T., McIntosh, D. H., Somerville, R. S., Caldwell, J. A. R. et al., 2006. Dry Mergers in GEMS: The Dynamical Evolution of Massive Early-Type Galaxies. *ApJ*, **640**, 241–251.
- Bell, E. F., Wolf, C., Meisenheimer, K., Rix, H.-W., Borch, A., Dye, S., Kleinheinrich, M., Wisotzki, L. & McIntosh, D. H., 2004. Nearly 5000 Distant Early-Type Galaxies in COMBO-17: A Red Sequence and Its Evolution since $z \sim 1$. *ApJ*, **608**, 752–767.
- Bennett, C. L., Halpern, M., Hinshaw, G., Jarosik, N., Kogut, A. et al., 2003. First-Year Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP) Observations: Preliminary Maps and Basic Results. *ApJS*, **148**, 1–27.
- Benson, A. J., 2010. Galaxy formation theory. *Phys. Rep.*, **495**, 33–86.
- Benson, A. J., Bower, R. G., Frenk, C. S., Lacey, C. G., Baugh, C. M. & Cole, S., 2003. What Shapes the Luminosity Function of Galaxies? *ApJ*, **599**, 38–49.
- Bergström, S. & Wiklind, T., 2004. On the colour-colour properties of the Extremely Red Objects. *A&A*, **414**, 95–106.
- Berta, S., 2005. *Multiwavelength analyses of faint infrared galaxies*. Ph.D. thesis, Dipartimento di Astronomia, Univ. di Padova, Vicolo dell'Osservatorio 2, I-35122, Padova, Italy.
- Bezanson, R., van Dokkum, P. G., Tal, T., Marchesini, D., Kriek, M., Franx, M. & Coppi, P., 2009. The Relation Between Compact, Quiescent High-redshift Galaxies and Massive Nearby Elliptical Galaxies: Evidence for Hierarchical, Inside-Out Growth. *ApJ*, **697**, 1290–1298.

- Binggeli, B., Sandage, A. & Tammann, G. A., 1988. The luminosity function of galaxies. *ARA&A*, **26**, 509–560.
- Biviano, A., 1998. Our best friend, the Coma cluster (a historical review). In A. Mazure, F. Casoli, F. Durret, & D. Gerbal, ed., *Untangling Coma Berenices: A New Vision of an Old Cluster*, 1–+.
- Blain, A. W., Smail, I., Ivison, R. J. & Kneib, J.-P., 1999. The history of star formation in dusty galaxies. *MNRAS*, **302**, 632–648.
- Bolzonella, M., Kovač, K., Pozzetti, L., Zucca, E., Cucciati, O. et al., 2010. Tracking the impact of environment on the galaxy stellar mass function up to $z \sim 1$ in the 10 k zCOSMOS sample. *A&A*, **524**, A76+.
- Bolzonella, M., Miralles, J.-M. & Pelló, R., 2000. Photometric redshifts based on standard SED fitting procedures. *A&A*, **363**, 476–492.
- Bongiorno, A., Mignoli, M., Zamorani, G., Lamareille, F., Lanzuisi, G. et al., 2010. The [O iii] emission line luminosity function of optically selected type-2 AGN from zCOSMOS. *A&A*, **510**, A56+.
- Boselli, A., Boissier, S., Cortese, L. & Gavazzi, G., 2008. The Origin of Dwarf Ellipticals in the Virgo Cluster. *ApJ*, **674**, 742–767.
- Bournaud, F., Chapon, D., Teyssier, R., Powell, L. C., Elmegreen, B. G., Elmegreen, D. M., Duc, P.-A., Contini, T., Epinat, B. & Shapiro, K. L., 2011. Hydrodynamics of High-redshift Galaxy Collisions: From Gas-rich Disks to Dispersion-dominated Mergers and Compact Spheroids. *ApJ*, **730**, 4–+.
- Bournaud, F., Elmegreen, B. G., Teyssier, R., Block, D. L. & Puerari, I., 2010. ISM properties in hydrodynamic galaxy simulations: turbulence cascades, cloud formation, role of gravity and feedback. *MNRAS*, **409**, 1088–1099.
- Bourne, N., Dunne, L., Ivison, R. J., Maddox, S. J., Dickinson, M. & Frayer, D. T., 2011. Evolution of the far-infrared-radio correlation and infrared spectral energy distributions of massive galaxies over $z=0-2$. *MNRAS*, **410**, 1155–1173.
- Bouwens, R. J., Illingworth, G. D., Franx, M., Chary, R.-R., Meurer, G. R., Conselice, C. J., Ford, H., Giavalisco, M. & van Dokkum, P., 2009. UV Continuum Slope and Dust Obscuration from $z \sim 6$ to $z \sim 2$: The Star Formation Rate Density at High Redshift. *ApJ*, **705**, 936–961.
- Bouwens, R. J., Illingworth, G. D., Franx, M. & Ford, H., 2007. UV Luminosity Functions at $z \sim 4, 5$, and 6 from the Hubble Ultra Deep Field and Other Deep Hubble Space Telescope ACS Fields: Evolution and Star Formation History. *ApJ*, **670**, 928–958.

- Bouwens, R. J., Illingworth, G. D., Oesch, P. A., Stiavelli, M., van Dokkum, P., Trenti, M., Magee, D., Labbé, I., Franx, M., Carollo, C. M. & Gonzalez, V., 2010. Discovery of $z \sim 8$ Galaxies in the Hubble Ultra Deep Field from Ultra-Deep WFC3/IR Observations. *ApJ*, **709**, L133–L137.
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., Malbon, R., Helly, J. C., Frenk, C. S., Baugh, C. M., Cole, S. & Lacey, C. G., 2006. Breaking the hierarchy of galaxy formation. *MNRAS*, **370**, 645–655.
- Brand, K., Dey, A., Weedman, D., Desai, V., Le Floc’h, E., Jannuzi, B. T., Soifer, B. T., Brown, M. J. I., Eisenhardt, P., Gorjian, V., Papovich, C., Smith, H. A., Willner, S. P. & Cool, R. J., 2006. The Active Galactic Nuclei Contribution to the Mid-Infrared Emission of Luminous Infrared Galaxies. *ApJ*, **644**, 143–147.
- Brinchmann, J. & Ellis, R. S., 2000. The Mass Assembly and Star Formation Characteristics of Field Galaxies of Known Morphology. *ApJ*, **536**, L77–L80.
- Brusa, M., Civano, F., Comastri, A., Miyaji, T., Salvato, M. et al., 2010. The XMM-Newton Wide-field Survey in the Cosmos Field (XMM-COSMOS): Demography and Multiwavelength Properties of Obscured and Unobscured Luminous Active Galactic Nuclei. *ApJ*, **716**, 348–369.
- Bruzual, G. & Charlot, S., 2003. Stellar population synthesis at the resolution of 2003. *MNRAS*, **344**, 1000–1028.
- Buat, V., Iglesias-Páramo, J., Seibert, M., Burgarella, D., Charlot, S. et al., 2005. Dust Attenuation in the Nearby Universe: A Comparison between Galaxies Selected in the Ultraviolet and in the Far-Infrared. *ApJ*, **619**, L51–L54.
- Buitrago, F., Trujillo, I., Conselice, C. J., Bouwens, R. J., Dickinson, M. & Yan, H., 2008. Size Evolution of the Most Massive Galaxies at $1.7 < z < 3$ from GOODS NICMOS Survey Imaging. *ApJ*, **687**, L61–L64.
- Bundy, K., Ellis, R. S., Conselice, C. J., Taylor, J. E., Cooper, M. C., Willmer, C. N. A., Weiner, B. J., Coil, A. L., Noeske, K. G. & Eisenhardt, P. R. M., 2006. The Mass Assembly History of Field Galaxies: Detection of an Evolving Mass Limit for Star-forming Galaxies. *ApJ*, **651**, 120–141.
- Bussmann, R. S., Dey, A., Lotz, J., Armus, L., Brand, K., Brown, M. J. I., Desai, V., Eisenhardt, P., Higdon, J., Higdon, S., Jannuzi, B. T., Le Floc’h, E., Melbourne, J., Soifer, B. T. & Weedman, D., 2009. Hubble Space Telescope Morphologies of $z \sim 2$ Dust Obscured Galaxies. I. Power-Law Sources. *ApJ*, **693**, 750–770.
- Calzetti, D., Armus, L., Bohlin, R. C., Kinney, A. L., Koornneef, J. & Storchi-Bergmann, T., 2000. The Dust Content and Opacity of Actively Star-forming Galaxies. *ApJ*, **533**, 682–695.

- Cappelluti, N., Brusa, M., Hasinger, G., Comastri, A., Zamorani, G. et al., 2009. The XMM-Newton wide-field survey in the COSMOS field. The point-like X-ray source catalogue. *A&A*, **497**, 635–648.
- Cardamone, C. N., Moran, E. C. & Kay, L. E., 2007. "Hidden" Seyfert 2 Galaxies in the Chandra Deep Field North. *AJ*, **134**, 1263–1275.
- Cardamone, C. N., Urry, C. M., Damen, M., van Dokkum, P., Treister, E., Labbé, I., Virani, S. N., Lira, P. & Gawiser, E., 2008. Mid-Infrared Properties and Color Selection for X-Ray-Detected Active Galactic Nuclei in the MUSYC Extended Chandra Deep Field-South. *ApJ*, **680**, 130–142.
- Cardamone, C. N., Urry, C. M., Schawinski, K., Treister, E., Brammer, G. & Gawiser, E., 2010. Dust-corrected Colors Reveal Bimodality in the Host-galaxy Colors of Active Galactic Nuclei at $z \sim 1$. *ApJ*, **721**, L38–L42.
- Carlberg, R. G., Sullivan, M. & Le Borgne, D., 2009. Dwarf Galaxy Clustering and Missing Satellites. *ApJ*, **694**, 1131–1138.
- Casali, M., Adamson, A., Alves de Oliveira, C., Almaini, O., Burch, K. et al., 2007. The UKIRT wide-field camera. *A&A*, **467**, 777–784.
- Cava, A., Rodighiero, G., Pérez-Fournon, I., Buitrago, F., Trujillo, I. et al., 2010. HerMES: SPIRE detection of high-redshift massive compact galaxies in GOODS-N field. *MNRAS*, **409**, L19–L24.
- Chambers, K. C., Miley, G. K., van Breugel, W. J. M., Bremer, M. A. R., Huang, J.-S. & Trentham, N. A., 1996. Ultra-Steep-Spectrum Radio Sources. II. Radio, Infrared, Optical, and HST Imaging of High-Redshift 4C Objects. *ApJS*, **106**, 247–+.
- Chapman, S. C., Blain, A. W., Ivison, R. J. & Smail, I. R., 2003. A median redshift of 2.4 for galaxies bright at submillimetre wavelengths. *Nature*, **422**, 695–698.
- Chary, R. & Elbaz, D., 2001. Interpreting the Cosmic Infrared Background: Constraints on the Evolution of the Dust-enshrouded Star Formation Rate. *ApJ*, **556**, 562–581.
- Cimatti, A., Daddi, E., Cassata, P., Pignatelli, E., Fasano, G., Vernet, J., Fomalont, E., Kellermann, K., Zamorani, G., Mignoli, M., Pozzetti, L., Renzini, A., di Serego Alighieri, S., Franceschini, A., Giallongo, E. & Fontana, A., 2003. The manifold spectra and morphologies of EROs. *A&A*, **412**, L1–L5.
- Cimatti, A., Daddi, E., Mignoli, M., Pozzetti, L., Renzini, A., Zamorani, G., Broadhurst, T., Fontana, A., Saracco, P., Poli, F., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S., Giallongo, E., Gilmozzi, R. & Menci, N., 2002a. The K20 survey. I. Disentangling old and dusty star-forming galaxies in the ERO population. *A&A*, **381**, L68–L72.

- Cimatti, A., Daddi, E. & Renzini, A., 2006. Mass downsizing and “top-down” assembly of early-type galaxies. *A&A*, **453**, L29–L33.
- Cimatti, A., Pozzetti, L., Mignoli, M., Daddi, E., Menci, N., Poli, F., Fontana, A., Renzini, A., Zamorani, G., Broadhurst, T., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S., Giallongo, E. & Gilmozzi, R., 2002b. The K20 survey. IV. The redshift distribution of $K_s < 20$ galaxies: A test of galaxy formation models. *A&A*, **391**, L1–L5.
- Cirasuolo, M., McLure, R. J., Dunlop, J. S., Almaini, O., Foucaud, S. & Simpson, C., 2010. A new measurement of the evolving near-infrared galaxy luminosity function out to $z \sim 4$: a continuing challenge to theoretical models of galaxy formation. *MNRAS*, **401**, 1166–1176.
- Cisternas, M., Jahnke, K., Inskip, K. J., Kartaltepe, J., Koekemoer, A. M. et al., 2011. The Bulk of the Black Hole Growth Since $z \sim 1$ Occurs in a Secular Universe: No Major Merger-AGN Connection. *ApJ*, **726**, 57–+.
- Clarke, C. J., Kinney, A. L. & Pringle, J. E., 1998. An Investigation into the Geometry of Seyfert Galaxies. *ApJ*, **495**, 189–+.
- Colbert, E. J. M., Heckman, T. M., Ptak, A. F., Strickland, D. K. & Weaver, K. A., 2004. Old and Young X-Ray Point Source Populations in Nearby Galaxies. *ApJ*, **602**, 231–248.
- Cole, S., 1991. Modeling galaxy formation in evolving dark matter halos. *ApJ*, **367**, 45–53.
- Cole, S., Lacey, C. G., Baugh, C. M. & Frenk, C. S., 2000. Hierarchical galaxy formation. *MNRAS*, **319**, 168–204.
- Cole, S., Norberg, P., Baugh, C. M., Frenk, C. S., Bland-Hawthorn, J. et al., 2001. The 2dF galaxy redshift survey: near-infrared galaxy luminosity functions. *MNRAS*, **326**, 255–273.
- Comastri, A., Fiore, F., Vignali, C., Matt, G., Perola, G. C. & La Franca, F., 2001. The BeppoSAX High Energy Large Area Survey (HELLAS) - III. Testing synthesis models for the X-ray background. *MNRAS*, **327**, 781–787.
- Conselice, C. J., 2003. The Relationship between Stellar Light Distributions of Galaxies and Their Formation Histories. *ApJS*, **147**, 1–28.
- Conselice, C. J., 2008. The Assembly History of Massive Galaxies: What Do We Know? In J. H. Knapen, T. J. Mahoney, & A. Vazdekis, ed., *Pathways Through an Eclectic Universe*, vol. 390 of *Astronomical Society of the Pacific Conference Series*, 403–+.
- Conselice, C. J. & Arnold, J., 2009. The structures of distant galaxies - II. Diverse galaxy structures and local environments at $z = 4-6$ implications for early galaxy assembly. *MNRAS*, **397**, 208–231.

- Conselice, C. J., Bluck, A. F. L., Buitrago, F., Bauer, A. E., Grützbauch, R. et al., 2011. The Hubble Space Telescope GOODS NICMOS Survey: overview and the evolution of massive galaxies at $1.5 < z < 3$. *MNRAS*, **413**, 80–100.
- Conselice, C. J., Bundy, K., U, V., Eisenhardt, P., Lotz, J. & Newman, J., 2008. The faint and extremely red K-band-selected galaxy population in the DEEP2/Palomar fields. *MNRAS*, **383**, 1366–1384.
- Cowie, L. L., Songaila, A., Hu, E. M. & Cohen, J. G., 1996. New Insight on Galaxy Formation and Evolution From Keck Spectroscopy of the Hawaii Deep Fields. *AJ*, **112**, 839–+.
- Cresci, G., Hicks, E. K. S., Genzel, R., Schreiber, N. M. F., Davies, R. et al., 2009. The SINS Survey: Modeling the Dynamics of $z \sim 2$ Galaxies and the High- z Tully-Fisher Relation. *ApJ*, **697**, 115–132.
- Cristiani, S., Appenzeller, I., Arnouts, S., Nonino, M., Aragón-Salamanca, A., Benoist, C., da Costa, L., Denefeld, M., Rengelink, R., Renzini, A., Szeifert, T. & White, S., 2000. The first VLT FORS1 spectra of Lyman-break candidates in the HDF-S and AXAF Deep Field. *A&A*, **359**, 489–492.
- Croom, S. M., Smith, R. J., Boyle, B. J., Shanks, T., Miller, L., Outram, P. J. & Loaring, N. S., 2004. The 2dF QSO Redshift Survey - XII. The spectroscopic catalogue and luminosity function. *MNRAS*, **349**, 1397–1418.
- Croton, D. J., Springel, V., White, S. D. M., De Lucia, G., Frenk, C. S., Gao, L., Jenkins, A., Kauffmann, G., Navarro, J. F. & Yoshida, N., 2006a. Erratum: The many lives of active galactic nuclei: cooling flows, black holes and the luminosities and colours of galaxies. *MNRAS*, **367**, 864–864.
- Croton, D. J., Springel, V., White, S. D. M., De Lucia, G., Frenk, C. S., Gao, L., Jenkins, A., Kauffmann, G., Navarro, J. F. & Yoshida, N., 2006b. The many lives of active galactic nuclei: cooling flows, black holes and the luminosities and colours of galaxies. *MNRAS*, **365**, 11–28.
- Crowther, P. A., 2007. Physical Properties of Wolf-Rayet Stars. *ARA&A*, **45**, 177–219.
- da Cunha, E., Charlot, S. & Elbaz, D., 2008. A simple model to interpret the ultraviolet, optical and infrared emission from galaxies. *MNRAS*, **388**, 1595–1617.
- Daddi, E., Cimatti, A., Broadhurst, T., Renzini, A., Zamorani, G., Mignoli, M., Saracco, P., Fontana, A., Pozzetti, L., Poli, F., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S., Giallongo, E., Gilmozzi, R. & Menci, N., 2002. The K20 survey. II. The different spatial clustering of $z \sim 1$ old and dusty star-forming EROs. *A&A*, **384**, L1–L5.

- Daddi, E., Dickinson, M., Morrison, G., Chary, R., Cimatti, A., Elbaz, D., Frayer, D., Renzini, A., Pope, A., Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Giavalisco, M., Huynh, M., Kurk, J. & Mignoli, M., 2007. Multiwavelength Study of Massive Galaxies at $z \sim 2$. I. Star Formation and Galaxy Growth. *ApJ*, **670**, 156–172.
- Dahlen, T., Mobasher, B., Dickinson, M., Ferguson, H. C., Giavalisco, M., Kretchmer, C. & Ravindranath, S., 2007. Evolution of the 9Ap Luminosity Function, Star Formation Rate, Morphology, and Size of Star-forming Galaxies Selected at Rest-Frame 1500 and 2800 Å. *ApJ*, **654**, 172–185.
- Dai, X., Assef, R. J., Kochanek, C. S., Brodwin, M., Brown, M. J. I., Caldwell, N., Cool, R. J., Dey, A., Eisenhardt, P., Eisenstein, D., Gonzalez, A. H., Jannuzi, B. T., Jones, C., Murray, S. S. & Stern, D., 2009. Mid-Infrared Galaxy Luminosity Functions from the AGN and Galaxy Evolution Survey. *ApJ*, **697**, 506–521.
- Damen, M., Labbé, I., Franx, M., van Dokkum, P. G., Taylor, E. N. & Gawiser, E. J., 2009. The Evolution of the Specific Star Formation Rate of Massive Galaxies to $z \sim 1.8$ in the Extended Chandra Deep Field South. *ApJ*, **690**, 937–943.
- de Grijp, M. H. K., Miley, G. K., Lub, J. & de Jong, T., 1985. Infrared Seyferts - A new population of active galaxies? *Nature*, **314**, 240–242.
- De Lucia, G. & Blaizot, J., 2007. The hierarchical formation of the brightest cluster galaxies. *MNRAS*, **375**, 2–14.
- De Lucia, G., Springel, V., White, S. D. M., Croton, D. & Kauffmann, G., 2006. The formation history of elliptical galaxies. *MNRAS*, **366**, 499–509.
- Dekel, A., Sari, R. & Ceverino, D., 2009. Formation of Massive Galaxies at High Redshift: Cold Streams, Clumpy Disks, and Compact Spheroids. *ApJ*, **703**, 785–801.
- Dey, A., Graham, J. R., Ivison, R. J., Smail, I., Wright, G. S. & Liu, M. C., 1999. Observations of a $Z = 1.44$ Dusty, Ultraluminous Galaxy and Implications for Deep Submillimeter Surveys. *ApJ*, **519**, 610–621.
- Dey, A., Soifer, B. T., Desai, V., Brand, K., Le Floc’h, E., Brown, M. J. I., Jannuzi, B. T., Armus, L., Bussmann, S., Brodwin, M., Bian, C., Eisenhardt, P., Higdon, S. J., Weedman, D. & Willner, S. P., 2008. A Significant Population of Very Luminous Dust-Obscured Galaxies at Redshift $z \sim 2$. *ApJ*, **677**, 943–956.
- Di Matteo, T., Springel, V. & Hernquist, L., 2005. Energy input from quasars regulates the growth and activity of black holes and their host galaxies. *Nature*, **433**, 604–607.
- Dole, H., Lagache, G., Puget, J.-L., Caputi, K. I., Fernández-Conde, N., Le Floc’h, E., Papovich, C., Pérez-González, P. G., Rieke, G. H. & Blaylock, M., 2006. The cosmic infrared background resolved by Spitzer. Contributions of mid-infrared galaxies to the far-infrared background. *A&A*, **451**, 417–429.

- Donley, J. L., Rieke, G. H., Alexander, D. M., Egami, E. & Pérez-González, P. G., 2010. The AGN, Star-forming, and Morphological Properties of Luminous IR-bright/optically-faint Galaxies. *ApJ*, **719**, 1393–1407.
- Donley, J. L., Rieke, G. H., Pérez-González, P. G. & Barro, G., 2008. Spitzer’s Contribution to the AGN Population. *ApJ*, **687**, 111–132.
- Donley, J. L., Rieke, G. H., Pérez-González, P. G., Rigby, J. R. & Alonso-Herrero, A., 2007. Spitzer Power-Law Active Galactic Nucleus Candidates in the Chandra Deep Field-North. *ApJ*, **660**, 167–190.
- Driver, S. P., Norberg, P., Baldry, I. K., Bamford, S. P., Hopkins, A. M. et al., 2009. GAMA: towards a physical understanding of galaxy formation. *Astronomy and Geophysics*, **50**(5), 050000–5.
- Drory, N., Bundy, K., Leauthaud, A., Scoville, N., Capak, P., Ilbert, O., Kartaltepe, J. S., Kneib, J. P., McCracken, H. J., Salvato, M., Sanders, D. B., Thompson, D. & Willott, C. J., 2009. The Bimodal Galaxy Stellar Mass Function in the COSMOS Survey to $z \sim 1$: A Steep Faint End and a New Galaxy Dichotomy. *ApJ*, **707**, 1595–1609.
- Drory, N., Salvato, M., Gabasch, A., Bender, R., Hopp, U., Feulner, G. & Pannella, M., 2005. The Stellar Mass Function of Galaxies to $z \sim 5$ in the FORS Deep and GOODS-South Fields. *ApJ*, **619**, L131–L134.
- Dunlop, J. S., Hughes, D. H., Rawlings, S., Eales, S. A. & Ward, M. J., 1994. Detection of a large mass of dust in a radio galaxy at redshift $z = 3.8$. *Nature*, **370**, 347–349.
- Dunne, L., Gomez, H., da Cunha, E., Charlot, S., Dye, S. et al., 2010. Herschel-ATLAS: Rapid evolution of dust in galaxies in the last 5 billion years. *ArXiv e-prints*.
- Dunne, L., Ivison, R. J., Maddox, S., Cirasuolo, M., Mortier, A. M., Foucaud, S., Ibar, E., Almaini, O., Simpson, C. & McLure, R., 2009. The star formation history of K-selected galaxies. *MNRAS*, **394**, 3–20.
- Eckart, M. E., McGreer, I. D., Stern, D., Harrison, F. A. & Helfand, D. J., 2010. A Comparison of X-ray and Mid-Infrared Selection of Obscured Active Galactic Nuclei. *ApJ*, **708**, 584–597.
- Eckart, M. E., Stern, D., Helfand, D. J., Harrison, F. A., Mao, P. H. & Yost, S. A., 2006. The Serendipitous Extragalactic X-Ray Source Identification (SEXSI) Program. III. Optical Spectroscopy. *ApJS*, **165**, 19–56.
- Eggen, O. J., Lynden-Bell, D. & Sandage, A. R., 1962. Evidence from the motions of old stars that the Galaxy collapsed. *ApJ*, **136**, 748–+.

- Elbaz, D., Flores, H., Chantal, P., Mirabel, I. F., Sanders, D., Duc, P.-A., Cesarsky, C. J. & Aussel, H., 2002. ISOCAM mid-infrared detection of HR 10: A distant clone of Arp 220 at $z = 1.44$. *A&A*, **381**, L1–L4.
- Elmegreen, B. G., 2009. Bulge Formation by the Coalescence of Giant Clumps in Primordial Disk Galaxies. In S. Jogee, I. Marinova, L. Hao, & G. A. Blanc, ed., *Galaxy Evolution: Emerging Insights and Future Challenges*, vol. 419 of *Astronomical Society of the Pacific Conference Series*, 23–+.
- Elmegreen, B. G., Elmegreen, D. M., Vollbach, D. R., Foster, E. R. & Ferguson, T. E., 2005. On the Origin of Exponential Disks at High Redshift. *ApJ*, **634**, 101–108.
- Elston, R., Rieke, G. H. & Rieke, M. J., 1988. Deep 2 micron imaging of the sky - Evidence for a new extragalactic population. *ApJ*, **331**, L77–L80.
- Elston, R., Rieke, M. J. & Rieke, G. H., 1989. Observations of deep 2 micron survey galaxies - Primeval galaxy candidates. *ApJ*, **341**, 80–88.
- Elston, R. J., 1988. *Search for rapidly star forming galaxies at high redshift*. Ph.D. thesis, Arizona Univ., Tucson.
- Elvis, M., Risaliti, G., Nicastro, F., Miller, J. M., Fiore, F. & Puccetti, S., 2004. An Unveiling Event in the Type 2 Active Galactic Nucleus NGC 4388: A Challenge for a Parsec-Scale Absorber. *ApJ*, **615**, L25–L28.
- Faber, S. M., Willmer, C. N. A., Wolf, C., Koo, D. C., Weiner, B. J. et al., 2007. Galaxy Luminosity Functions to $z \sim 1$ from DEEP2 and COMBO-17: Implications for Red Galaxy Formation. *ApJ*, **665**, 265–294.
- Farrah, D., Lacy, M., Priddey, R., Borys, C. & Afonso, J., 2007. Evidence that FeLoBALs May Signify the Transition between an Ultraluminous Infrared Galaxy and a Quasar. *ApJ*, **662**, L59–L62.
- Farrah, D., Urrutia, T., Lacy, M., Lebouteiller, V., Spoon, H. W. W., Bernard-Salas, J., Connolly, N., Afonso, J., Connolly, B. & Houck, J., 2010. The Extraordinary Mid-infrared Spectral Properties of FeLoBAL Quasars. *ApJ*, **717**, 868–877.
- Ferrarese, L., Ford, H. C. & Jaffe, W., 1996. Evidence for a Massive Black Hole in the Active Galaxy NGC 4261 from Hubble Space Telescope Images and Spectra. *ApJ*, **470**, 444–+.
- Ferrarotti, A. S. & Gail, H.-P., 2006. Composition and quantities of dust produced by AGB-stars and returned to the interstellar medium. *A&A*, **447**, 553–576.
- Fiore, F., Grazian, A., Santini, P., Puccetti, S., Brusa, M., Feruglio, C., Fontana, A., Giallongo, E., Comastri, A., Gruppioni, C., Pozzi, F., Zamorani, G. & Vignali, C., 2008. Unveiling Obscured Accretion in the Chandra Deep Field-South. *ApJ*, **672**, 94–101.

- Fiore, F., Puccetti, S., Brusa, M., Salvato, M., Zamorani, G. et al., 2009. Chasing Highly Obscured QSOs in the COSMOS Field. *ApJ*, **693**, 447–462.
- Firth, A. E., Lahav, O. & Somerville, R. S., 2003. Estimating photometric redshifts with artificial neural networks. *MNRAS*, **339**, 1195–1202.
- Firth, A. E., Somerville, R. S., McMahon, R. G., Lahav, O., Ellis, R. S. et al., 2002. The Las Campanas Infrared Survey - II. Photometric redshifts, comparison with models and clustering evolution. *MNRAS*, **332**, 617–646.
- Fontana, A., Donnarumma, I., Vanzella, E., Giallongo, E., Menci, N., Nonino, M., Saracco, P., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S. & Poli, F., 2003. The Assembly of Massive Galaxies from Near-Infrared Observations of the Hubble Deep Field-South. *ApJ*, **594**, L9–L12.
- Fontana, A., Pozzetti, L., Donnarumma, I., Renzini, A., Cimatti, A., Zamorani, G., Menci, N., Daddi, E., Giallongo, E., Mignoli, M., Perna, C., Salimbeni, S., Saracco, P., Broadhurst, T., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S. & Gilmozzi, R., 2004. The K20 survey. VI. The distribution of the stellar masses in galaxies up to $z \sim 2$. *A&A*, **424**, 23–42.
- Fontanot, F., De Lucia, G., Monaco, P., Somerville, R. S. & Santini, P., 2009. The many manifestations of downsizing: hierarchical galaxy formation models confront observations. *MNRAS*, **397**, 1776–1790.
- Fontanot, F. & Monaco, P., 2010. The active and passive populations of extremely red objects. *MNRAS*, **405**, 705–717.
- Fontanot, F., Pasquali, A., De Lucia, G., van den Bosch, F. C., Somerville, R. S. & Kang, X., 2011. The dependence of AGN activity on stellar and halo mass in semi-analytic models. *MNRAS*, **413**, 957–970.
- Förster Schreiber, N. M., Genzel, R., Bouché, N., Cresci, G., Davies, R. et al., 2009. The SINS Survey: SINFONI Integral Field Spectroscopy of $z > 2$ Star-forming Galaxies. *ApJ*, **706**, 1364–1428.
- Förster Schreiber, N. M., van Dokkum, P. G., Franx, M., Labbé, I., Rudnick, G., Daddi, E., Illingworth, G. D., Kriek, M., Moorwood, A. F. M., Rix, H.-W., Röttgering, H., Trujillo, I., van der Werf, P., van Starckenburg, L. & Wuyts, S., 2004. A Substantial Population of Red Galaxies at $z > 2$: Modeling of the Spectral Energy Distributions of an Extended Sample. *ApJ*, **616**, 40–62.
- Foucaud, S., Almaini, O., Smail, I., Conselice, C. J., Lane, K. P., Edge, A. C., Simpson, C., Dunlop, J. S., McLure, R. J., Cirasuolo, M., Hirst, P., Watson, M. G. & Page, M. J., 2007. Number counts and clustering properties of bright distant red galaxies in the UKIDSS Ultra Deep Survey Early Data Release. *MNRAS*, **376**, L20–L24.

- Franceschini, A., Rodighiero, G. & Vaccari, M., 2008. Extragalactic optical-infrared background radiation, its time evolution and the cosmic photon-photon opacity. *A&A*, **487**, 837–852.
- Franx, M., Labbé, I., Rudnick, G., van Dokkum, P. G., Daddi, E., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Moorwood, A., Rix, H.-W., Röttgering, H., van der Wel, A., van der Werf, P. & van Starckenburg, L., 2003. A Significant Population of Red, Near-Infrared-selected High-Redshift Galaxies. *ApJ*, **587**, L79–L82.
- Fu, H., Yan, L., Scoville, N. Z., Capak, P., Aussel, H., Le Floc'h, E., Ilbert, O., Salvato, M., Kartaltepe, J. S., Frayer, D. T., Sanders, D. B., Sheth, K. & Taniguchi, Y., 2010. Decomposing Star Formation and Active Galactic Nucleus with Spitzer Mid-infrared Spectra: Luminosity Functions and Co-evolution. *ApJ*, **722**, 653–667.
- Gabor, J. M., Davé, R., Finlator, K. & Oppenheimer, B. D., 2010. How is star formation quenched in massive galaxies? *MNRAS*, **407**, 749–771.
- Garcet, O., Gandhi, P., Gosset, E., Sprimont, P. G., Surdej, J. et al., 2007. The XMM large scale structure survey: optical vs. X-ray classifications of active galactic nuclei and the unified scheme. *A&A*, **474**, 473–489.
- Garn, T., Sobral, D., Best, P. N., Geach, J. E., Smail, I., Cirasuolo, M., Dalton, G. B., Dunlop, J. S., McLure, R. J. & Farrah, D., 2010. Obscured star formation at $z = 0.84$ with HiZELS: the relationship between star formation rate and $H\alpha$ or ultraviolet dust extinction. *MNRAS*, **402**, 2017–2030.
- Gaskell, C. M., Klimek, E. S. & Nazarova, L. S., 2007. NGC 5548: The AGN Energy Budget Problem and the Geometry of the Broad-Line Region and Torus. *ArXiv e-prints*.
- Gavazzi, G. & Scodreggio, M., 1996. The mass dependence of the star formation history of disk galaxies. *A&A*, **312**, L29–L32.
- Gehrz, R., 1989. Sources of Stardust in the Galaxy. In L. J. Allamandola & A. G. G. M. Tielens, ed., *Interstellar Dust*, vol. 135 of *IAU Symposium*, 445–+.
- Genzel, R., Newman, S., Jones, T., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Shapiro, K. et al., 2011. The Sins Survey of $z \sim 2$ Galaxy Kinematics: Properties of the Giant Star-forming Clumps. *ApJ*, **733**, 101–+.
- Genzel, R., Tacconi, L. J., Eisenhauer, F., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Cimatti, A. et al., 2006. The rapid formation of a large rotating disk galaxy three billion years after the Big Bang. *Nature*, **442**, 786–789.
- Georgakakis, A., Afonso, J., Hopkins, A. M., Sullivan, M., Mobasher, B. & Cram, L. E., 2005. The Phoenix Deep Survey: The Clustering and Environment of Extremely Red Objects. *ApJ*, **620**, 584–594.

- Georgakakis, A., Hopkins, A. M., Afonso, J., Sullivan, M., Mobasher, B. & Cram, L. E., 2006. The Phoenix Deep Survey: the star formation rates and the stellar masses of extremely red objects. *MNRAS*, **367**, 331–338.
- Giavalisco, M., Ferguson, H. C., Koekemoer, A. M., Dickinson, M., Alexander, D. M. et al., 2004. The Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey: Initial Results from Optical and Near-Infrared Imaging. *ApJ*, **600**, L93–L98.
- Gilli, R., 2004. The X-ray background and the deep X-ray surveys. *Advances in Space Research*, **34**, 2470–2477.
- Glazebrook, K., Abraham, R. G., McCarthy, P. J., Savaglio, S., Chen, H.-W., Crampton, D., Murowinski, R., Jørgensen, I., Roth, K., Hook, I., Marzke, R. O. & Carlberg, R. G., 2004. A high abundance of massive galaxies 3-6 billion years after the Big Bang. *Nature*, **430**, 181–184.
- Gonzalez-Perez, V., Baugh, C. M., Lacey, C. G. & Almeida, C., 2009. Massive, red galaxies in a hierarchical universe - I. Counts of extremely red objects and basic properties. *MNRAS*, **398**, 497–514.
- Governato, F., Willman, B., Mayer, L., Brooks, A., Stinson, G., Valenzuela, O., Wadsley, J. & Quinn, T., 2007. Forming disc galaxies in Λ CDM simulations. *MNRAS*, **374**, 1479–1494.
- Granato, G. L., De Zotti, G., Silva, L., Bressan, A. & Danese, L., 2004. A Physical Model for the Coevolution of QSOs and Their Spheroidal Hosts. *ApJ*, **600**, 580–594.
- Granato, G. L., Silva, L., Monaco, P., Panuzzo, P., Salucci, P., De Zotti, G. & Danese, L., 2001. Joint formation of QSOs and spheroids: QSOs as clocks of star formation in spheroids. *MNRAS*, **324**, 757–768.
- Grazian, A., Fontana, A., de Santis, C., Nonino, M., Salimbeni, S., Giallongo, E., Cristiani, S., Gallozzi, S. & Vanzella, E., 2006a. The GOODS-MUSIC sample: a multicolour catalog of near-IR selected galaxies in the GOODS-South field. *A&A*, **449**, 951–968.
- Grazian, A., Fontana, A., Moscardini, L., Salimbeni, S., Menci, N., Giallongo, E., de Santis, C., Gallozzi, S., Nonino, M., Cristiani, S. & Vanzella, E., 2006b. The clustering evolution of distant red galaxies in the GOODS-MUSIC sample. *A&A*, **453**, 507–515.
- Grazian, A., Salimbeni, S., Pentericci, L., Fontana, A., Nonino, M., Vanzella, E., Cristiani, S., de Santis, C., Gallozzi, S., Giallongo, E. & Santini, P., 2007. A comparison of LBGs, DRGs, and BzK galaxies: their contribution to the stellar mass density in the GOODS-MUSIC sample. *A&A*, **465**, 393–404.
- Greenstein, J. L. & Matthews, T. A., 1963. Redshift of the Radio Source 3C 48. *AJ*, **68**, 279–+.

- Gregg, M. D., Becker, R. H., White, R. L., Richards, G. T., Chaffee, F. H. & Fan, X., 2002. An FeLoBAL Binary Quasar. *ApJ*, **573**, L85–L89.
- Greve, T. R., Weiß, A., Walter, F., Smail, I., Zheng, X. Z. et al., 2010. A LABOCA Survey of the Extended Chandra Deep Field South—Submillimeter Properties of Near-infrared Selected Galaxies. *ApJ*, **719**, 483–496.
- Griffith, R. L. & Stern, D., 2010. Morphologies of Radio-, X-ray-, and Mid-infrared-selected Active Galactic Nuclei. *AJ*, **140**, 533–545.
- Guandalini, R., Busso, M., Ciprini, S., Silvestro, G. & Persi, P., 2006. Infrared photometry and evolution of mass-losing AGB stars. I. Carbon stars revisited. *A&A*, **445**, 1069–1080.
- Gunn, J. E., Hoessel, J. G. & Oke, J. B., 1986. A systematic survey for distant galaxy clusters. *ApJ*, **306**, 30–37.
- Guzman, R., Gallego, J., Koo, D. C., Phillips, A. C., Lowenthal, J. D., Faber, S. M., Illingworth, G. D. & Vogt, N. P., 1997. The Nature of Compact Galaxies in the Hubble Deep Field. II. Spectroscopic Properties and Implications for the Evolution of the Star Formation Rate Density of the Universe. *ApJ*, **489**, 559–+.
- Haines, C. P., Gargiulo, A., La Barbera, F., Mercurio, A., Merluzzi, P. & Busarello, G., 2007. The different physical mechanisms that drive the star formation histories of giant and dwarf galaxies. *MNRAS*, **381**, 7–32.
- Haines, C. P., La Barbera, F., Mercurio, A., Merluzzi, P. & Busarello, G., 2006. The Different Environmental Dependencies of Star Formation for Giant and Dwarf Galaxies. *ApJ*, **647**, L21–L24.
- Hall, P. B., Anderson, S. F., Strauss, M. A., York, D. G., Richards, G. T. et al., 2002. Unusual Broad Absorption Line Quasars from the Sloan Digital Sky Survey. *ApJS*, **141**, 267–309.
- Hambly, N. C., Collins, R. S., Cross, N. J. G., Mann, R. G., Read, M. A., Sutorius, E. T. W., Bond, I., Bryant, J., Emerson, J. P., Lawrence, A., Rimoldini, L., Stewart, J. M., Williams, P. M., Adamson, A., Hirst, P., Dye, S. & Warren, S. J., 2008. The WFCAM Science Archive. *MNRAS*, **384**, 637–662.
- Hasinger, G., 2008. Absorption properties and evolution of active galactic nuclei. *A&A*, **490**, 905–922.
- Hatziminaoglou, E., Pérez-Fournon, I., Polletta, M., Afonso-Luis, A., Hernán-Caballero, A. et al., 2005. Sloan Digital Sky Survey Quasars in the Spitzer Wide-Area Infrared Extragalactic Survey (SWIRE) ELAIS N1 Field: Properties and Spectral Energy Distributions. *AJ*, **129**, 1198–1211.

- Hauser, M. G. & Dwek, E., 2001. The Cosmic Infrared Background: Measurements and Implications. *ARA&A*, **39**, 249–307.
- Henriques, B., Maraston, C., Monaco, P., Fontanot, F., Menci, N., De Lucia, G. & Tonini, C., 2010. The effect of TP-AGB stars on the evolution of the rest-frame near-infrared galaxy luminosity function. *MNRAS accepted*.
- Henriques, B. M., Bertone, S. & Thomas, P. A., 2008. The effect of dwarf galaxy disruption in semi-analytic models. *MNRAS*, **383**, 1649–1654.
- Herald, J. E., Schulte-Ladbeck, R. E., Eenens, P. R. J. & Morris, P., 2000. The Structure of Wolf-Rayet Winds. II. Observations of Ionization Stratification in the WN Subtype. *ApJS*, **126**, 469–491.
- Hewett, P. C., Warren, S. J., Leggett, S. K. & Hodgkin, S. T., 2006. The UKIRT Infrared Deep Sky Survey ZY JHK photometric system: passbands and synthetic colours. *MNRAS*, **367**, 454–468.
- Hönig, S. F. & Kishimoto, M., 2010. The dusty heart of nearby active galaxies. II. From clumpy torus models to physical properties of dust around AGN. *A&A*, **523**, A27+.
- Hopkins, A. M. & Beacom, J. F., 2006. On the Normalization of the Cosmic Star Formation History. *ApJ*, **651**, 142–154.
- Hopkins, P. F., Bundy, K., Hernquist, L., Wuyts, S. & Cox, T. J., 2010. Discriminating between the physical processes that drive spheroid size evolution. *MNRAS*, **401**, 1099–1117.
- Hopkins, P. F., Cox, T. J., Younger, J. D. & Hernquist, L., 2009a. How do Disks Survive Mergers? *ApJ*, **691**, 1168–1201.
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., Di Matteo, T., Robertson, B. & Springel, V., 2006. A Unified, Merger-driven Model of the Origin of Starbursts, Quasars, the Cosmic X-Ray Background, Supermassive Black Holes, and Galaxy Spheroids. *ApJS*, **163**, 1–49.
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., Keres, D. & Wuyts, S., 2009b. Dissipation and Extra Light in Galactic Nuclei. IV. Evolution in the Scaling Relations of Spheroids. *ApJ*, **691**, 1424–1458.
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Martini, P., Cox, T. J., Robertson, B., Di Matteo, T. & Springel, V., 2005. A Physical Model for the Origin of Quasar Lifetimes. *ApJ*, **625**, L71–L74.
- Hopkins, P. F., Richards, G. T. & Hernquist, L., 2007. An Observational Determination of the Bolometric Quasar Luminosity Function. *ApJ*, **654**, 731–753.

- Hoyle, F., 1951. The Origin of the Rotations of the Galaxies. In *Problems of Cosmical Aerodynamics*, 195–+.
- Hu, E. M. & Ridgway, S. E., 1994. Two extremely red galaxies. *AJ*, **107**, 1303–1306.
- Hubble, E. & Humason, M. L., 1931. The Velocity-Distance Relation among Extra-Galactic Nebulae. *ApJ*, **74**, 43–+.
- Hughes, D. H., Dunlop, J. S. & Rawlings, S., 1997. High-redshift radio galaxies and quasars at submillimetre wavelengths: assessing their evolutionary status. *MNRAS*, **289**, 766–782.
- Hunt, L. K., 2010. The dusty Universe: astronomy at infrared wavelengths. *Memorie della Societa Astronomica Italiana Supplementi*, **14**, 78–+.
- Ibar, E., Ivison, R. J., Biggs, A. D., Lal, D. V., Best, P. N. & Green, D. A., 2009. Deep multi-frequency radio imaging in the Lockman Hole using the GMRT and VLA - I. The nature of the sub-mJy radio population. *MNRAS*, **397**, 281–298.
- Ikeda, H., Nagao, T., Matsuoka, K., Taniguchi, Y., Shioya, Y. et al., 2011. Probing the Faint End of the Quasar Luminosity Function at $z \sim 4$ in the COSMOS Field. *ApJ*, **728**, L25+.
- Ilbert, O., Capak, P., Salvato, M., Aussel, H., McCracken, H. J. et al., 2009. Cosmos Photometric Redshifts with 30-Bands for 2-deg². *ApJ*, **690**, 1236–1249.
- Ilbert, O., Salvato, M., Le Floc'h, E., Aussel, H., Capak, P. et al., 2010. Galaxy Stellar Mass Assembly Between $0.2 < z < 2$ from the S-COSMOS Survey. *ApJ*, **709**, 644–663.
- Ivison, R. J., 1995. Detection of dust in the most distant known radio galaxy. *MNRAS*, **275**, L33–L36.
- Ivison, R. J., Greve, T. R., Serjeant, S., Bertoldi, F., Egami, E. et al., 2004. Spitzer Observations of MAMBO Galaxies: Weeding Out Active Nuclei in Starbursting Protoellipticals. *ApJS*, **154**, 124–129.
- Jacobs, B. A., Sanders, D. B., Rupke, D. S. N., Aussel, H., Frayer, D. T., Ilbert, O., Kartaltepe, J. S., Kawara, K., Kim, D.-C., Le Floc'h, E., Murayama, T., Smolčić, V., Surace, J. A., Taniguchi, Y., Veilleux, S. & Yun, M. S., 2011. Identification of a Complete 160 μm Flux-limited Sample of Infrared Galaxies in the ISO Lockman Hole 1 deg² Deep Fields: Source Properties and Evidence for Strong Evolution in the FIR Luminosity Function for ULIRGs. *AJ*, **141**, 110–+.
- Jaffe, W., Ford, H., Ferrarese, L., van den Bosch, F. & O'Connell, R. W., 1996. The Nuclear Disk of NGC 4261: Hubble Space Telescope Images and Ground-based Spectra. *ApJ*, **460**, 214–+.

- Jiang, L., Fan, X., Hines, D. C., Shi, Y., Vestergaard, M., Bertoldi, F., Brandt, W. N., Carilli, C. L., Cox, P., Le Floch, E., Pentericci, L., Richards, G. T., Rieke, G. H., Schneider, D. P., Strauss, M. A., Walter, F. & Brinkmann, J., 2006. Probing the Evolution of Infrared Properties of $z \sim 6$ Quasars: Spitzer Observations. *AJ*, **132**, 2127–2134.
- Juneau, S., Glazebrook, K., Crampton, D., McCarthy, P. J., Savaglio, S., Abraham, R., Carlberg, R. G., Chen, H.-W., Le Borgne, D., Marzke, R. O., Roth, K., Jørgensen, I., Hook, I. & Murowinski, R., 2005. Cosmic Star Formation History and Its Dependence on Galaxy Stellar Mass. *ApJ*, **619**, L135–L138.
- Kang, X., Jing, Y. P., Mo, H. J. & Börner, G., 2005. Semianalytical Model of Galaxy Formation with High-Resolution N-Body Simulations. *ApJ*, **631**, 21–40.
- Karim, A., Schinnerer, E., Martínez-Sansigre, A., Sargent, M. T., van der Wel, A., Rix, H.-W., Ilbert, O., Smolčić, V., Carilli, C., Pannella, M., Koekemoer, A. M., Bell, E. F. & Salvato, M., 2011. The Star Formation History of Mass-selected Galaxies in the COSMOS Field. *ApJ*, **730**, 61–+.
- Kay, S. T., Pearce, F. R., Frenk, C. S. & Jenkins, A., 2002. Including star formation and supernova feedback within cosmological simulations of galaxy formation. *MNRAS*, **330**, 113–128.
- Kellermann, K. I., Fomalont, E. B., Mainieri, V., Padovani, P., Rosati, P., Shaver, P., Tozzi, P. & Miller, N., 2008. The VLA Survey of the Chandra Deep Field-South. I. Overview and the Radio Data. *ApJS*, **179**, 71–94.
- Kelson, D. D. & Holden, B. P., 2010. The Mid-infrared Luminosities of Normal Galaxies Over Cosmic Time. *ApJ*, **713**, L28–L32.
- Kewley, L. J., Dopita, M. A., Sutherland, R. S., Heisler, C. A. & Trevena, J., 2001. Theoretical Modeling of Starburst Galaxies. *ApJ*, **556**, 121–140.
- Kim, J.-W., Edge, A. C., Wake, D. A. & Stott, J. P., 2011. Clustering properties of high-redshift red galaxies in SA22 from the UKIDSS Deep eXtragalactic Survey. *MNRAS*, **410**, 241–256.
- Kinney, A. L., Schmitt, H. R., Clarke, C. J., Pringle, J. E., Ulvestad, J. S. & Antonucci, R. R. J., 2000. Jet Directions in Seyfert Galaxies. *ApJ*, **537**, 152–177.
- Kitzbichler, M. G. & White, S. D. M., 2007. The high-redshift galaxy population in hierarchical galaxy formation models. *MNRAS*, **376**, 2–12.
- Kleinmann, D. E. & Low, F. J., 1970. Observations of Infrared Galaxies. *ApJ*, **159**, L165+.
- Knudsen, K. K., van der Werf, P., Franx, M., Förster Schreiber, N. M., van Dokkum, P. G., Illingworth, G. D., Labbé, I., Moorwood, A., Rix, H.-W. & Rudnick, G., 2005. Submillimeter Observations of Distant Red Galaxies: Uncovering the 1 mJy 850 μ m Population. *ApJ*, **632**, L9–L12.

- Kong, X., Daddi, E., Arimoto, N., Renzini, A., Broadhurst, T., Cimatti, A., Ikuta, C., Ohta, K., da Costa, L., Olsen, L. F., Onodera, M. & Tamura, N., 2006. A Wide Area Survey for High-Redshift Massive Galaxies. I. Number Counts and Clustering of BzKs and EROs. *ApJ*, **638**, 72–87.
- Kong, X., Fang, G., Arimoto, N. & Wang, M., 2009. Classification of Extremely Red Objects in the Cosmos Field. *ApJ*, **702**, 1458–1471.
- Kormendy, J., 1985. Families of ellipsoidal stellar systems and the formation of dwarf elliptical galaxies. *ApJ*, **295**, 73–79.
- Kriek, M., van Dokkum, P. G., Franx, M., Illingworth, G. D., Coppi, P., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Gawiser, E., Labbé, I., Lira, P., Marchesini, D., Quadri, R., Rudnick, G., Taylor, E. N., Urry, C. M. & van der Werf, P. P., 2007. The Origin of Line Emission in Massive $z \sim 2.3$ Galaxies: Evidence for Cosmic Downsizing of AGN Host Galaxies. *ApJ*, **669**, 776–790.
- Labbé, I., Rudnick, G., Franx, M., Daddi, E., van Dokkum, P. G., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Kuijken, K., Moorwood, A., Rix, H.-W., Röttgering, H., Trujillo, I., van der Wel, A., van der Werf, P. & van Starckenburg, L., 2003. Large Disklike Galaxies at High Redshift. *ApJ*, **591**, L95–L98.
- Lacey, C. & Silk, J., 1991. Tidally triggered galaxy formation. I - Evolution of the galaxy luminosity function. *ApJ*, **381**, 14–32.
- Lacy, M., Petric, A. O., Sajina, A., Canalizo, G., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J., Armus, L., Fadda, D. & Marleau, F. R., 2007. Optical Spectroscopy and X-Ray Detections of a Sample of Quasars and Active Galactic Nuclei Selected in the Mid-Infrared from Two Spitzer Space Telescope Wide-Area Surveys. *AJ*, **133**, 186–205.
- Lacy, M., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J., Sajina, A., Appleton, P. N., Armus, L. et al., 2004. Obscured and Unobscured Active Galactic Nuclei in the Spitzer Space Telescope First Look Survey. *ApJS*, **154**, 166–169.
- Larson, R. B., 1975. Models for the formation of elliptical galaxies. *MNRAS*, **173**, 671–699.
- Laurent, O., Mirabel, I. F., Charmandaris, V., Gallais, P., Madden, S. C., Sauvage, M., Vigroux, L. & Cesarsky, C., 2000. Mid-infrared diagnostics to distinguish AGNs from starbursts. *A&A*, **359**, 887–899.
- Lawrence, A., Warren, S. J., Almaini, O., Edge, A. C., Hambly, N. C. et al., 2007. The UKIRT Infrared Deep Sky Survey (UKIDSS). *MNRAS*, **379**, 1599–1617.
- Le Floc’h, E., Aussel, H., Ilbert, O., Riguccini, L., Frayer, D. T. et al., 2009. Deep Spitzer 24 μm COSMOS Imaging. I. The Evolution of Luminous Dusty Galaxies—Confronting the Models. *ApJ*, **703**, 222–239.

- Le Floc'h, E., Papovich, C., Dole, H., Bell, E. F., Lagache, G., Rieke, G. H., Egami, E., Pérez-González, P. G., Alonso-Herrero, A., Rieke, M. J., Blaylock, M., Engelbracht, C. W., Gordon, K. D., Hines, D. C., Misselt, K. A., Morrison, J. E. & Mould, J., 2005. Infrared Luminosity Functions from the Chandra Deep Field-South: The Spitzer View on the History of Dusty Star Formation at $0 \lesssim z \lesssim 1$. *ApJ*, **632**, 169–190.
- Lee, N., Le Floc'h, E., Sanders, D. B., Frayer, D. T., Arnouts, S., Ilbert, O., Aussel, H., Salvato, M., Scoville, N. Z. & Kartaltepe, J. S., 2010. A Far-infrared Characterization of 24 μm Selected Galaxies at $0 < z < 2.5$ using Stacking at 70 μm and 160 μm in the COSMOS Field. *ApJ*, **717**, 175–182.
- Li, C. & White, S. D. M., 2009. The distribution of stellar mass in the low-redshift Universe. *MNRAS*, **398**, 2177–2187.
- Li, Y., Mac Low, M.-M. & Klessen, R. S., 2006. Star Formation in Isolated Disk Galaxies. II. Schmidt Laws and Efficiency of Gravitational Collapse. *ApJ*, **639**, 879–896.
- Lilly, S. J., 1988. Discovery of a radio galaxy at a redshift of 3.395. *ApJ*, **333**, 161–167.
- Lilly, S. J., Le Brun, V., Maier, C., Mainieri, V., Mignoli, M. et al., 2009. The zCOSMOS 10k-Bright Spectroscopic Sample. *ApJS*, **184**, 218–229.
- Lilly, S. J. & Longair, M. S., 1984. Stellar populations in distant radio galaxies. *MNRAS*, **211**, 833–855.
- Lilly, S. J., Longair, M. S. & Allington-Smith, J. R., 1985. Infrared Observations of 1-JANSKY Radio Source Identifications and Empty Fields. *MNRAS*, **215**, 37–+.
- Lonsdale, C. J., Smith, H. E., Rowan-Robinson, M., Surace, J., Shupe, D. et al., 2003. SWIRE: The SIRTf Wide-Area Infrared Extragalactic Survey. *PASP*, **115**, 897–927.
- Lotz, J. M., Jonsson, P., Cox, T. J. & Primack, J. R., 2008. Galaxy merger morphologies and time-scales from simulations of equal-mass gas-rich disc mergers. *MNRAS*, **391**, 1137–1162.
- Lotz, J. M., Madau, P., Giavalisco, M., Primack, J. & Ferguson, H. C., 2006. The Rest-Frame Far-Ultraviolet Morphologies of Star-forming Galaxies at $z \sim 1.5$ and 4. *ApJ*, **636**, 592–609.
- Lotz, J. M., Primack, J. & Madau, P., 2004. A New Nonparametric Approach to Galaxy Morphological Classification. *AJ*, **128**, 163–182.
- Luo, B., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., Alexander, D. M., Lehmer, B. D. et al., 2008. The Chandra Deep Field-South Survey: 2 Ms Source Catalogs. *ApJS*, **179**, 19–36.

- Luo, B., Brandt, W. N., Xue, Y. Q., Brusa, M., Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Comastri, A., Koekemoer, A., Lehmer, B. D., Mainieri, V., Rafferty, D. A., Schneider, D. P., Silverman, J. D. & Vignali, C., 2010. Identifications and Photometric Redshifts of the 2 Ms Chandra Deep Field-South Sources. *ApJS*, **187**, 560–580.
- Maccacaro, T., Perola, G. C. & Elvis, M., 1982. X-ray observations with the Einstein Observatory of emission-line galaxies. *ApJ*, **257**, 47–55.
- Madau, P., 1995. Radiative transfer in a clumpy universe: The colors of high-redshift galaxies. *ApJ*, **441**, 18–27.
- Madau, P., Ferguson, H. C., Dickinson, M. E., Giavalisco, M., Steidel, C. C. & Fruchter, A., 1996. High-redshift galaxies in the Hubble Deep Field: colour selection and star formation history to $z \sim 4$. *MNRAS*, **283**, 1388–1404.
- Maiolino, R., Comastri, A., Gilli, R., Nagar, N. M., Bianchi, S., Böker, T., Colbert, E., Krabbe, A., Marconi, A., Matt, G. & Salvati, M., 2003. Elusive active galactic nuclei. *MNRAS*, **344**, L59–L64.
- Maiolino, R. & Rieke, G. H., 1995. Low-Luminosity and Obscured Seyfert Nuclei in Nearby Galaxies. *ApJ*, **454**, 95–+.
- Maiolino, R., Salvati, M., Bassani, L., Dadina, M., della Ceca, R., Matt, G., Risaliti, G. & Zamorani, G., 1998. Heavy obscuration in X-ray weak AGNs. *A&A*, **338**, 781–794.
- Mannucci, F., Pozzetti, L., Thompson, D., Oliva, E., Baffa, C., Comoretto, G., Gennari, S. & Lisi, F., 2002. The relative abundances of ellipticals and starbursts among the extremely red galaxies. *MNRAS*, **329**, L57–L61.
- Maraston, C., 2005. Evolutionary population synthesis: models, analysis of the ingredients and application to high- z galaxies. *MNRAS*, **362**, 799–825.
- Marchesini, D., van Dokkum, P., Quadri, R., Rudnick, G., Franx, M., Lira, P., Wuyts, S., Gawiser, E., Christlein, D. & Toft, S., 2007. The Rest-Frame Optical Luminosity Functions of Galaxies at $2 \leq z \leq 3.5$. *ApJ*, **656**, 42–65.
- Marchesini, D., van Dokkum, P. G., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Franx, M., Labbé, I. & Wuyts, S., 2009. The Evolution of the Stellar Mass Function of Galaxies from $z = 4.0$ and the First Comprehensive Analysis of its Uncertainties: Evidence for Mass-Dependent Evolution. *ApJ*, **701**, 1765–1796.
- Martin, D. C., Small, T., Schiminovich, D., Wyder, T. K., Pérez-González, P. G. et al., 2007. The Star Formation and Extinction Coevolution of UV-Selected Galaxies over $0.05 < z < 1.2$. *ApJS*, **173**, 415–431.

- Martínez-Sansigre, A., Karim, A., Schinnerer, E., Omont, A., Smith, D. J. B., Wu, J., Hill, G. J., Klöckner, H.-R., Lacy, M., Rawlings, S. & Willott, C. J., 2009. Millimeter Observations of a Sample of High-Redshift Obscured Quasars. *ApJ*, **706**, 184–202.
- Matthews, T. A. & Sandage, A. R., 1963. Optical Identification of 3c 48, 3c 196, and 3c 286 with Stellar Objects. *ApJ*, **138**, 30–+.
- McCarthy, P. J., 2004. Eros and Faint Red Galaxies. *ARA&A*, **42**, 477–515.
- McCarthy, P. J., Le Borgne, D., Crampton, D., Chen, H.-W., Abraham, R. G., Glazebrook, K., Savaglio, S., Carlberg, R. G., Marzke, R. O., Roth, K., Jørgensen, I., Hook, I., Murowinski, R. & Juneau, S., 2004. Evolved Galaxies at $z > 1.5$ from the Gemini Deep Deep Survey: The Formation Epoch of Massive Stellar Systems. *ApJ*, **614**, L9–L12.
- McCracken, H. J., Capak, P., Salvato, M., Aussel, H., Thompson, D. et al., 2010. The COSMOS-WIRCam Near-Infrared Imaging Survey. I. BzK-Selected Passive and Star-Forming Galaxy Candidates at $z \gtrsim 1.4$. *ApJ*, **708**, 202–217.
- McLure, R. J., Dunlop, J. S., Cirasuolo, M., Koekemoer, A. M., Sabbi, E., Stark, D. P., Targett, T. A. & Ellis, R. S., 2010. Galaxies at $z = 6-9$ from the WFC3/IR imaging of the Hubble Ultra Deep Field. *MNRAS*, **403**, 960–983.
- Messias, H., Afonso, J., Hopkins, A., Mobasher, B., Dominici, T. & Alexander, D. M., 2010. A Multi-wavelength Approach to the Properties of Extremely Red Galaxy Populations. I. Contribution to the Star Formation Rate Density and Active Galactic Nucleus Content. *ApJ*, **719**, 790–802.
- Middelberg, E., Norris, R. P., Tingay, S., Mao, M. Y., Phillips, C. J. & Hotan, A. W., 2008. The first VLBI image of an infrared-faint radio source. *A&A*, **491**, 435–439.
- Miley, G. K., Neugebauer, G. & Soifer, B. T., 1985. IRAS observations of Seyfert galaxies. *ApJ*, **293**, L11–L14.
- Miller, J. S. & Antonucci, R. R. J., 1983. Evidence for a highly polarized continuum in the nucleus of NGC 1068. *ApJ*, **271**, L7–L11.
- Miller, N. A., Fomalont, E. B., Kellermann, K. I., Mainieri, V., Norman, C., Padovani, P., Rosati, P. & Tozzi, P., 2008. The VLA 1.4 GHz Survey of the Extended Chandra Deep Field-South: First Data Release. *ApJS*, **179**, 114–123.
- Mobasher, B., Dickinson, M., Ferguson, H. C., Giavalisco, M., Wiklind, T. et al., 2005. Evidence for a Massive Poststarburst Galaxy at $z \sim 6.5$. *ApJ*, **635**, 832–844.
- Mobasher, B. & Trentham, N., 1998. Near-infrared luminosity function and colours of dwarf galaxies in the Coma cluster. *MNRAS*, **293**, 315–+.

- Moran, E. C., Filippenko, A. V. & Chornock, R., 2002. “Hidden” Seyfert 2 Galaxies and the X-Ray Background. *ApJ*, **579**, L71–L74.
- Mountain, M., van der Marel, R., Soummer, R., Koekemoer, A., Ferguson, H., Postman, M., Gavel, D. T., Guyon, O., Simons, D. & Traub, W. A., 2009. Comparison of optical observational capabilities for the coming decades: ground versus space. In *astro2010: The Astronomy and Astrophysics Decadal Survey*, vol. 2010 of *Astronomy*, 12–+.
- Moustakas, L. A., Casertano, S., Conselice, C. J., Dickinson, M. E., Eisenhardt, P., Ferguson, H. C., Giavalisco, M., Grogin, N. A., Koekemoer, A. M., Lucas, R. A., Mobasher, B., Papovich, C., Renzini, A., Somerville, R. S. & Stern, D., 2004. Morphologies and Spectral Energy Distributions of Extremely Red Galaxies in the GOODS-South Field. *ApJ*, **600**, L131–L134.
- Muxlow, T. W. B., Richards, A. M. S., Garrington, S. T., Wilkinson, P. N., Anderson, B., Richards, E. A., Axon, D. J., Fomalont, E. B., Kellermann, K. I., Partridge, R. B. & Windhorst, R. A., 2005. High-resolution studies of radio sources in the Hubble Deep and Flanking Fields. *MNRAS*, **358**, 1159–1194.
- Muzzin, A., Marchesini, D., van Dokkum, P. G., Labbé, I., Kriek, M. & Franx, M., 2009. A Near-Infrared Spectroscopic Survey of K-Selected Galaxies at $z \sim 2.3$: Comparison of Stellar Population Synthesis Codes and Constraints from the Rest-Frame NIR. *ApJ*, **701**, 1839–1864.
- Naab, T., Johansson, P. H. & Ostriker, J. P., 2009. Minor Mergers and the Size Evolution of Elliptical Galaxies. *ApJ*, **699**, L178–L182.
- Naab, T., Johansson, P. H., Ostriker, J. P. & Efstathiou, G., 2007. Formation of Early-Type Galaxies from Cosmological Initial Conditions. *ApJ*, **658**, 710–720.
- Nagamine, K., Cen, R., Hernquist, L., Ostriker, J. P. & Springel, V., 2005. Massive Galaxies and Extremely Red Objects at $z = 1-3$ in Cosmological Hydrodynamic Simulations: Near-Infrared Properties. *ApJ*, **627**, 608–620.
- Nagar, N. M. & Wilson, A. S., 1999. The Relative Orientation of Nuclear Accretion and Galaxy Stellar Disks in Seyfert Galaxies. *ApJ*, **516**, 97–113.
- Narayanan, D., Cox, T. J., Hayward, C. C., Younger, J. D. & Hernquist, L., 2009. The star-forming molecular gas in high-redshift Submillimetre Galaxies. *MNRAS*, **400**, 1919–1935.
- Narayanan, D., Dey, A., Hayward, C. C., Cox, T. J., Bussmann, R. S., Brodwin, M., Jonsson, P., Hopkins, P. F., Groves, B., Younger, J. D. & Hernquist, L., 2010. A physical model for $z \sim 2$ dust-obscured galaxies. *MNRAS*, **407**, 1701–1720.
- Neistein, E., van den Bosch, F. C. & Dekel, A., 2006. Natural downsizing in hierarchical galaxy formation. *MNRAS*, **372**, 933–948.

- Nenkova, M., Sirocky, M. M., Nikutta, R., Ivezić, Ž. & Elitzur, M., 2008. AGN Dusty Tori. II. Observational Implications of Clumpiness. *ApJ*, **685**, 160–180.
- Neugebauer, G., Miley, G. K., Soifer, B. T. & Clegg, P. E., 1986. Quasars measured by the Infrared Astronomical Satellite. *ApJ*, **308**, 815–828.
- Nordon, R., Lutz, D., Shao, L., Magnelli, B., Berta, S. et al., 2010. The star-formation rates of $1.5 < z < 2.5$ massive galaxies. *A&A*, **518**, L24+.
- Norman, C., Hasinger, G., Giacconi, R., Gilli, R., Kewley, L., Nonino, M., Rosati, P., Szokoly, G., Tozzi, P., Wang, J., Zheng, W., Zirm, A., Bergeron, J., Gilmozzi, R., Grogin, N., Koekemoer, A. & Schreier, E., 2002. A Classic Type 2 QSO. *ApJ*, **571**, 218–225.
- Norris, R. P., Afonso, J., Appleton, P. N., Boyle, B. J., Ciliegi, P., Croom, S. M., Huynh, M. T., Jackson, C. A., Koekemoer, A. M., Lonsdale, C. J., Middelberg, E., Mobasher, B., Oliver, S. J., Polletta, M., Siana, B. D., Smail, I. & Voronkov, M. A., 2006. Deep ATLAS Radio Observations of the Chandra Deep Field-South/Spitzer Wide-Area Infrared Extragalactic Field. *AJ*, **132**, 2409–2423.
- Oemler, Jr., A., 1974. The Systematic Properties of Clusters of Galaxies. Photometry of 15 Clusters. *ApJ*, **194**, 1–20.
- Oesch, P. A., Bouwens, R. J., Illingworth, G. D., Carollo, C. M., Franx, M., Labbé, I., Magee, D., Stiavelli, M., Trenti, M. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2010. $z \sim 7$ Galaxies in the HUDF: First Epoch WFC3/IR Results. *ApJ*, **709**, L16–L20.
- Okamoto, T., Eke, V. R., Frenk, C. S. & Jenkins, A., 2005. Effects of feedback on the morphology of galaxy discs. *MNRAS*, **363**, 1299–1314.
- Omont, A., Petitjean, P., Guilloteau, S., McMahon, R. G., Solomon, P. M. & Pécontal, E., 1996. Molecular gas and dust around a radio-quiet quasar at redshift 4.69. *Nature*, **382**, 428–431.
- Osmer, P. S., 2004. The Evolution of Quasars. *Coevolution of Black Holes and Galaxies*, 324+.
- Osterbrock, D. E. & Koski, A. T., 1976. NGC 4151 and Markarian 6 - two intermediate-type Seyfert galaxies. *MNRAS*, **176**, 61P–66P.
- Ouchi, M., Mobasher, B., Shimasaku, K., Ferguson, H. C., Fall, S. M., Ono, Y., Kashikawa, N., Morokuma, T., Nakajima, K., Okamura, S., Dickinson, M., Giavalisco, M. & Ohta, K., 2009. Large Area Survey for $z = 7$ Galaxies in SDF and GOODS-N: Implications for Galaxy Formation and Cosmic Reionization. *ApJ*, **706**, 1136–1151.

- Padovani, P., Mainieri, V., Tozzi, P., Kellermann, K. I., Fomalont, E. B., Miller, N., Rosati, P. & Shaver, P., 2009. The Very Large Array Survey of the Chandra Deep Field South. IV. Source Population. *ApJ*, **694**, 235–246.
- Page, M. J., Loaring, N. S., Dwelly, T., Mason, K. O., McHardy, I., Gunn, K., Moss, D., Sasseen, T., Cordova, F., Kennea, J. & Seymour, N., 2006. X-ray spectra of sources in the 13^H XMM-Newton/Chandra deep field. *MNRAS*, **369**, 156–170.
- Papovich, C., Moustakas, L. A., Dickinson, M., Le Floch, E., Rieke, G. H. et al., 2006. Spitzer Observations of Massive, Red Galaxies at High Redshift. *ApJ*, **640**, 92–113.
- Papovich, C., Rudnick, G., Le Floch, E., van Dokkum, P. G., Rieke, G. H., Taylor, E. N., Armus, L., Gawiser, E., Huang, J., Marcillac, D. & Franx, M., 2007. Spitzer Mid- to Far-Infrared Flux Densities of Distant Galaxies. *ApJ*, **668**, 45–61.
- Patten, B. M., Stauffer, J. R., Burrows, A., Marengo, M., Hora, J. L., Luhman, K. L., Sonnett, S. M., Henry, T. J., Raghavan, D., Megeath, S. T., Liebert, J. & Fazio, G. G., 2006. Spitzer IRAC Photometry of M, L, and T Dwarfs. *ApJ*, **651**, 502–516.
- Peebles, P. J. E., 1980. *The large-scale structure of the universe*.
- Peng, Y.-j., Lilly, S. J., Kovač, K., Bolzonella, M., Pozzetti, L. et al., 2010. Mass and Environment as Drivers of Galaxy Evolution in SDSS and zCOSMOS and the Origin of the Schechter Function. *ApJ*, **721**, 193–221.
- Pérez-González, P. G., Rieke, G. H., Egami, E., Alonso-Herrero, A., Dole, H., Papovich, C., Blaylock, M., Jones, J., Rieke, M., Rigby, J., Barmby, P., Fazio, G. G., Huang, J. & Martin, C., 2005. Spitzer View on the Evolution of Star-forming Galaxies from $z = 0$ to $z \sim 3$. *ApJ*, **630**, 82–107.
- Perola, G. C., Puccetti, S., Fiore, F., Sacchi, N., Brusa, M., Cocchia, F., Baldi, A., Carangelo, N., Ciliegi, P., Comastri, A., La Franca, F., Maiolino, R., Matt, G., Mignoli, M., Molendi, S. & Vignali, C., 2004. The HELLAS2XMM survey. VI. X-ray absorption in the 1df AGN sample through a spectral analysis. *A&A*, **421**, 491–501.
- Pier, E. A. & Krolik, J. H., 1992. Infrared spectra of obscuring dust tori around active galactic nuclei. I - Computational method and basic trends. *ApJ*, **401**, 99–109.
- Pierini, D., Maraston, C., Bender, R. & Witt, A. N., 2004. Extremely red galaxies: dust attenuation and classification. *MNRAS*, **347**, 1–16.
- Polletta, M., Tajer, M., Maraschi, L., Trinchieri, G., Lonsdale, C. J. et al., 2007. Spectral Energy Distributions of Hard X-Ray Selected Active Galactic Nuclei in the XMM-Newton Medium Deep Survey. *ApJ*, **663**, 81–102.
- Polletta, M., Weedman, D., Hönig, S., Lonsdale, C. J., Smith, H. E. & Houck, J., 2008. Obscuration in Extremely Luminous Quasars. *ApJ*, **675**, 960–984.

- Polletta, M. d. C., Wilkes, B. J., Siana, B., Lonsdale, C. J., Kilgard, R. et al., 2006. Chandra and Spitzer Unveil Heavily Obscured Quasars in the Chandra/SWIRE Survey. *ApJ*, **642**, 673–693.
- Pope, A., Chary, R.-R., Alexander, D. M., Armus, L., Dickinson, M., Elbaz, D., Frayer, D., Scott, D. & Teplitz, H., 2008. Mid-Infrared Spectral Diagnosis of Submillimeter Galaxies. *ApJ*, **675**, 1171–1193.
- Popescu, C. C., Tuffs, R. J., Dopita, M. A., Fischera, J., Kylafis, N. D. & Madore, B. F., 2011. Modelling the spectral energy distribution of galaxies. V. The dust and PAH emission SEDs of disk galaxies. *A&A*, **527**, A109+.
- Popesso, P., Dickinson, M., Nonino, M., Vanzella, E., Daddi, E., Fosbury, R. A. E., Kuntschner, H., Mainieri, V., Cristiani, S., Cesarsky, C., Giavalisco, M., Renzini, A. & GOODS Team, 2009. The great observatories origins deep survey. VLT/VIMOS spectroscopy in the GOODS-south field. *A&A*, **494**, 443–460.
- Pozzetti, L., Bolzonella, M., Zucca, E., Zamorani, G., Lilly, S. et al., 2010. zCOSMOS - 10k-bright spectroscopic sample. The bimodality in the galaxy stellar mass function: exploring its evolution with redshift. *A&A*, **523**, A13+.
- Pozzetti, L., Cimatti, A., Zamorani, G., Daddi, E., Menci, N., Fontana, A., Renzini, A., Mignoli, M., Poli, F., Saracco, P., Broadhurst, T., Cristiani, S., D’Odorico, S., Giallongo, E. & Gilmozzi, R., 2003. The K20 survey. V. The evolution of the near-IR Luminosity Function. *A&A*, **402**, 837–848.
- Pozzetti, L. & Mannucci, F., 2000. Extremely red galaxies: age and dust degeneracy solved? *MNRAS*, **317**, L17–L21.
- Predehl, P., Andritschke, R., Böhringer, H., Bornemann, W., Bräuninger, H. et al., 2010. eROSITA on SRG. In *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, vol. 7732 of *Presented at the Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference*.
- Reddy, N. A., Erb, D. K., Steidel, C. C., Shapley, A. E., Adelberger, K. L. & Pettini, M., 2005. A Census of Optical and Near-Infrared Selected Star-forming and Passively Evolving Galaxies at Redshift $z \sim 2$. *ApJ*, **633**, 748–767.
- Rees, M. J., 1984. Black Hole Models for Active Galactic Nuclei. *ARA&A*, **22**, 471–506.
- Rho, J., Kozasa, T., Reach, W. T., Smith, J. D., Rudnick, L., DeLaney, T., Ennis, J. A., Gomez, H. & Tappe, A., 2008. Freshly Formed Dust in the Cassiopeia A Supernova Remnant as Revealed by the Spitzer Space Telescope. *ApJ*, **673**, 271–282.
- Ricci, C., Walter, R., Courvoisier, T. J. . & Paltani, S., 2011. Reflection in Seyfert Galaxies and the Unified Model of AGN. *ApJ accepted*.

- Richards, G. T., Croom, S. M., Anderson, S. F., Bland-Hawthorn, J., Boyle, B. J. et al., 2005. The 2dF-SDSS LRG and QSO (2SLAQ) Survey: the $z < 2.1$ quasar luminosity function from 5645 quasars to $g= 21.85$. *MNRAS*, **360**, 839–852.
- Richards, G. T., Deo, R. P., Lacy, M., Myers, A. D., Nichol, R. C., Zakamska, N. L., Brunner, R. J., Brandt, W. N., Gray, A. G., Parejko, J. K., Ptak, A., Schneider, D. P., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J. & Szalay, A. S., 2009. Eight-Dimensional Mid-Infrared/Optical Bayesian Quasar Selection. *AJ*, **137**, 3884–3899.
- Rieke, G. H., 1978. The infrared emission of Seyfert galaxies. *ApJ*, **226**, 550–558.
- Rieke, G. H., Alonso-Herrero, A., Weiner, B. J., Pérez-González, P. G., Blaylock, M., Donley, J. L. & Marcillac, D., 2009. Determining Star Formation Rates for Infrared Galaxies. *ApJ*, **692**, 556–573.
- Rieke, G. H., Lebofsky, M. J. & Kinman, T. D., 1979. A possibly new type of QSO identified through infrared measurements. *ApJ*, **232**, L151–L154.
- Rigopoulou, D., Spoon, H. W. W., Genzel, R., Lutz, D., Moorwood, A. F. M. & Tran, Q. D., 1999. A Large Mid-Infrared Spectroscopic and Near-Infrared Imaging Survey of Ultraluminous Infrared Galaxies: Their Nature and Evolution. *AJ*, **118**, 2625–2645.
- Risaliti, G., Elvis, M., Fabbiano, G., Baldi, A., Zezas, A. & Salvati, M., 2007. Occultation Measurement of the Size of the X-Ray-emitting Region in the Active Galactic Nucleus of NGC 1365. *ApJ*, **659**, L111–L114.
- Risaliti, G., Maiolino, R. & Salvati, M., 1999. The Distribution of Absorbing Column Densities among Seyfert 2 Galaxies. *ApJ*, **522**, 157–164.
- Robertson, B., Bullock, J. S., Cox, T. J., Di Matteo, T., Hernquist, L., Springel, V. & Yoshida, N., 2006. A Merger-driven Scenario for Cosmological Disk Galaxy Formation. *ApJ*, **645**, 986–1000.
- Robertson, B. E. & Bullock, J. S., 2008. High-Redshift Galaxy Kinematics: Constraints on Models of Disk Formation. *ApJ*, **685**, L27–L30.
- Roche, N. D., Almaini, O., Dunlop, J., Ivison, R. J. & Willott, C. J., 2002. The clustering, number counts and morphology of extremely red ($R-K < 5$) galaxies to $K \leq 21$. *MNRAS*, **337**, 1282–1298.
- Roche, N. D., Dunlop, J. & Almaini, O., 2003. The nature, evolution, clustering and X-ray properties of extremely red galaxies in the Chandra Deep Field South/Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey field. *MNRAS*, **346**, 803–817.
- Rodighiero, G., Cimatti, A., Gruppioni, C., Popesso, P., Andreani, P. et al., 2010. The first Herschel view of the mass-SFR link in high- z galaxies. *A&A*, **518**, L25+.

- Rosati, P., Borgani, S., Gilli, R., Paolillo, M., Tozzi, P., Murray, S., Giacconi, R., Ptak, A., Weisskopf, M., Forman, W., Jones, C. & WFXT Team, 2011. Wide Field X-ray Telescope: Mission Overview. *Memorie della Societa Astronomica Italiana Supplementi*, **17**, 8–+.
- Rubin, K. H. R., van Dokkum, P. G., Coppi, P., Johnson, O., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Franx, M. & van der Werf, P., 2004. Chandra Constraints on the Active Galactic Nucleus Fraction and Star Formation Rate of Red $z \gtrsim 2$ Galaxies in the FIRES MS 1054-03 Field. *ApJ*, **613**, L5–L8.
- Rudnick, G., Labbé, I., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Wuyts, S., Franx, M., Finlator, K., Kriek, M., Moorwood, A., Rix, H.-W., Röttgering, H., Trujillo, I., van der Wel, A., van der Werf, P. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2006. Measuring the Average Evolution of Luminous Galaxies at $z < 3$: The Rest-Frame Optical Luminosity Density, Spectral Energy Distribution, and Stellar Mass Density. *ApJ*, **650**, 624–643.
- Salpeter, E. E., 1955. The Luminosity Function and Stellar Evolution. *ApJ*, **121**, 161–+.
- Salvato, M., Hasinger, G., Ilbert, O., Zamorani, G., Brusa, M. et al., 2009. Photometric Redshift and Classification for the XMM-COSMOS Sources. *ApJ*, **690**, 1250–1263.
- Sanders, D. B., 1999. Infrared Emission from AGN. In Y. Terzian, E. Khachikian, & D. Weedman, ed., *Activity in Galaxies and Related Phenomena*, vol. 194 of *IAU Symposium*, 25–+.
- Sanders, D. B. & Mirabel, I. F., 1996. Luminous Infrared Galaxies. *ARA&A*, **34**, 749–+.
- Sanders, D. B., Phinney, E. S., Neugebauer, G., Soifer, B. T. & Matthews, K., 1989. Continuum energy distribution of quasars - Shapes and origins. *ApJ*, **347**, 29–51.
- Sanders, D. B., Salvato, M., Aussel, H., Ilbert, O., Scoville, N. et al., 2007. S-COSMOS: The Spitzer Legacy Survey of the Hubble Space Telescope ACS 2 deg² COSMOS Field I: Survey Strategy and First Analysis. *ApJS*, **172**, 86–98.
- Santini, P., Fontana, A., Grazian, A., Salimbeni, S., Fiore, F., Fontanot, F., Boutsia, K., Castellano, M., Cristiani, S., de Santis, C., Gallozzi, S., Giallongo, E., Menci, N., Nonino, M., Paris, D., Pentericci, L. & Vanzella, E., 2009. Star formation and mass assembly in high redshift galaxies. *A&A*, **504**, 751–767.
- Sargent, B. A., Srinivasan, S., Meixner, M., Kemper, F., Tielens, A. G. G. M., Speck, A. K., Matsuura, M., Bernard, J.-P., Hony, S., Gordon, K. D., Indebetouw, R., Marengo, M., Sloan, G. C. & Woods, P. M., 2010. The Mass-loss Return from Evolved Stars to the Large Magellanic Cloud. II. Dust Properties for Oxygen-rich Asymptotic Giant Branch Stars. *ApJ*, **716**, 878–890.

- Saunders, W., 1990. *Statistical Cosmology with IRAS Galaxies: The Large Scale Structure and Evolution of the Universe*. Ph.D. thesis, , Queen Mary College, University of London, (1990).
- Saunders, W., Rowan-Robinson, M., Lawrence, A., Efstathiou, G., Kaiser, N., Ellis, R. S. & Frenk, C. S., 1990. The 60-micron and far-infrared luminosity functions of IRAS galaxies. *MNRAS*, **242**, 318–337.
- Scannapieco, C., Tissera, P. B., White, S. D. M. & Springel, V., 2008. Effects of supernova feedback on the formation of galaxy discs. *MNRAS*, **389**, 1137–1149.
- Scannapieco, C., White, S. D. M., Springel, V. & Tissera, P. B., 2009. The formation and survival of discs in a Λ CDM universe. *MNRAS*, **396**, 696–708.
- Schawinski, K., Treister, E., Urry, C. M., Cardamone, C. N., Simmons, B. & Yi, S. K., 2011. HST WFC3/IR Observations of Active Galactic Nucleus Host Galaxies at $z \sim 2$: Supermassive Black Holes Grow in Disk Galaxies. *ApJ*, **727**, L31+.
- Schechter, P., 1976. An analytic expression for the luminosity function for galaxies. *ApJ*, **203**, 297–306.
- Schmidt, M., 1968. Space Distribution and Luminosity Functions of Quasi-Stellar Radio Sources. *ApJ*, **151**, 393–+.
- Schmitt, H. R., Pringle, J. E., Clarke, C. J. & Kinney, A. L., 2002. The Orientation of Jets Relative to Dust Disks in Radio Galaxies. *ApJ*, **575**, 150–155.
- Schneider, D. P., Richards, G. T., Hall, P. B., Strauss, M. A., Anderson, S. F. et al., 2010. The Sloan Digital Sky Survey Quasar Catalog. V. Seventh Data Release. *AJ*, **139**, 2360–2373.
- Schulte-Ladbeck, R. E., Eenens, P. R. J. & Davis, K., 1995. The Structure of Wolf-Rayet Winds. I. Observation of Ionization Stratification in WR 6 and WR 111. *ApJ*, **454**, 917–+.
- Schweizer, F. & Seitzer, P., 1992. Correlations between UBV colors and fine structure in E and S0 galaxies - A first attempt at dating ancient merger events. *AJ*, **104**, 1039–1067.
- Scoville, N., Aussel, H., Brusa, M., Capak, P., Carollo, C. M. et al., 2007. The Cosmic Evolution Survey (COSMOS): Overview. *ApJS*, **172**, 1–8.
- Scoville, N. Z., Evans, A. S., Thompson, R., Rieke, M., Hines, D. C., Low, F. J., Dinshaw, N., Surace, J. A. & Armus, L., 2000. NICMOS Imaging of Infrared-Luminous Galaxies. *AJ*, **119**, 991–1061.
- Sellgren, K., 1983. *Near infrared studies of reflection nebulae*. Ph.D. thesis, California Inst. of Tech., Pasadena.

- Sellgren, K., Werner, M. W. & Dinerstein, H. L., 1983. Extended near-infrared emission from visual reflection nebulae. *ApJ*, **271**, L13–L17.
- Severgnini, P., Caccianiga, A., Braitto, V., Della Ceca, R., Maccacaro, T., Wolter, A., Sekiguchi, K., Sasaki, T., Yoshida, M., Akiyama, M., Watson, M. G., Barcons, X., Carrera, F. J., Pietsch, W. & Webb, N. A., 2003. XMM-Newton observations reveal AGN in apparently normal galaxies. *A&A*, **406**, 483–492.
- Seyfert, C. K., 1943. Nuclear Emission in Spiral Nebulae. *ApJ*, **97**, 28–+.
- Seymour, N., Dwelly, T., Moss, D., McHardy, I., Zoghbi, A., Rieke, G., Page, M., Hopkins, A. & Loaring, N., 2008. The star formation history of the Universe as revealed by deep radio observations. *MNRAS*, **386**, 1695–1708.
- Seymour, N., Stern, D., De Breuck, C., Vernet, J., Rettura, A. et al., 2007. The Massive Hosts of Radio Galaxies across Cosmic Time. *ApJS*, **171**, 353–375.
- Shao, L., Lutz, D., Nordon, R., Maiolino, R., Alexander, D. M. et al., 2010. Star formation in AGN hosts in GOODS-N. *A&A*, **518**, L26+.
- Shapley, A. E., Steidel, C. C., Erb, D. K., Reddy, N. A., Adelberger, K. L., Pettini, M., Barmby, P. & Huang, J., 2005. Ultraviolet to Mid-Infrared Observations of Star-forming Galaxies at $z \sim 2$: Stellar Masses and Stellar Populations. *ApJ*, **626**, 698–722.
- Shaver, P. A., Wall, J. V., Kellermann, K. I., Jackson, C. A. & Hawkins, M. R. S., 1996. Decrease in the space density of quasars at high redshift. *Nature*, **384**, 439–441.
- Silk, J. & Wyse, R. F. G., 1993. Galaxy formation and Hubble sequence. *Phys. Rep.*, **231**, 293–365.
- Silverman, J. D., Green, P. J., Barkhouse, W. A., Kim, D.-W., Aldcroft, T. L., Cameron, R. A., Wilkes, B. J., Mossman, A., Ghosh, H., Tananbaum, H., Smith, M. G., Smith, R. C., Smith, P. S., Foltz, C., Wik, D. & Jannuzi, B. T., 2005. Hard X-Ray-emitting Active Galactic Nuclei Selected by the Chandra Multiwavelength Project. *ApJ*, **618**, 123–138.
- Silverman, J. D., Lamareille, F., Maier, C., Lilly, S. J., Mainieri, V. et al., 2009. Ongoing and Co-Evolving Star Formation in zCOSMOS Galaxies Hosting Active Galactic Nuclei. *ApJ*, **696**, 396–410.
- Silverman, J. D., Mainieri, V., Salvato, M., Hasinger, G., Bergeron, J. et al., 2010. The Extended Chandra Deep Field-South Survey: Optical Spectroscopy of Faint X-ray Sources with the VLT and Keck. *ApJS*, **191**, 124–142.
- Simpson, C., Martínez-Sansigre, A., Rawlings, S., Ivison, R., Akiyama, M., Sekiguchi, K., Takata, T., Ueda, Y. & Watson, M., 2006. Radio imaging of the Subaru/XMM-Newton Deep Field - I. The 100- μ Jy catalogue, optical identifications, and the nature of the faint radio source population. *MNRAS*, **372**, 741–757.

- Skrutskie, M. F., Cutri, R. M., Stiening, R., Weinberg, M. D., Schneider, S. et al., 2006. The Two Micron All Sky Survey (2MASS). *AJ*, **131**, 1163–1183.
- Smail, I., Owen, F. N., Morrison, G. E., Keel, W. C., Ivison, R. J. & Ledlow, M. J., 2002. The Diversity of Extremely Red Objects. *ApJ*, **581**, 844–864.
- Smith, G. P., Smail, I., Kneib, J.-P., Davis, C. J., Takamiya, M., Ebeling, H. & Czoske, O., 2002. A Hubble Space Telescope lensing survey of X-ray luminous galaxy clusters - III. A multiply imaged extremely red galaxy at $z=1.6$. *MNRAS*, **333**, L16–L20.
- Smolčić, V., Schinnerer, E., Scodreggio, M., Franzetti, P., Aussel, H. et al., 2008. A New Method to Separate Star-forming from AGN Galaxies at Intermediate Redshift: The Submillijansky Radio Population in the VLA-COSMOS Survey. *ApJS*, **177**, 14–38.
- Soifer, B. T., Helou, G. & Werner, M., 2008. The Spitzer View of the Extragalactic Universe. *ARA&A*, **46**, 201–240.
- Sommer-Larsen, J., Götz, M. & Portinari, L., 2003. Galaxy Formation: Cold Dark Matter, Feedback, and the Hubble Sequence. *ApJ*, **596**, 47–66.
- Springel, V., Di Matteo, T. & Hernquist, L., 2005a. Black Holes in Galaxy Mergers: The Formation of Red Elliptical Galaxies. *ApJ*, **620**, L79–L82.
- Springel, V., Di Matteo, T. & Hernquist, L., 2005b. Modelling feedback from stars and black holes in galaxy mergers. *MNRAS*, **361**, 776–794.
- Springel, V., White, S. D. M., Jenkins, A., Frenk, C. S., Yoshida, N., Gao, L., Navarro, J., Thacker, R., Croton, D., Helly, J., Peacock, J. A., Cole, S., Thomas, P., Couchman, H., Evrard, A., Colberg, J. & Pearce, F., 2005c. Simulations of the formation, evolution and clustering of galaxies and quasars. *Nature*, **435**, 629–636.
- Stark, D. P., Ellis, R. S., Bunker, A., Bundy, K., Targett, T., Benson, A. & Lacy, M., 2009. The Evolutionary History of Lyman Break Galaxies Between Redshift 4 and 6: Observing Successive Generations of Massive Galaxies in Formation. *ApJ*, **697**, 1493–1511.
- Steidel, C. C., Adelberger, K. L., Giavalisco, M., Dickinson, M. & Pettini, M., 1999. Lyman-Break Galaxies at $z \gtrsim 4$ and the Evolution of the Ultraviolet Luminosity Density at High Redshift. *ApJ*, **519**, 1–17.
- Steidel, C. C., Adelberger, K. L., Shapley, A. E., Pettini, M., Dickinson, M. & Giavalisco, M., 2003. Lyman Break Galaxies at Redshift $z \sim 3$: Survey Description and Full Data Set. *ApJ*, **592**, 728–754.
- Steidel, C. C., Giavalisco, M., Pettini, M., Dickinson, M. & Adelberger, K. L., 1996. Spectroscopic Confirmation of a Population of Normal Star-forming Galaxies at Redshifts $z > 3$. *ApJ*, **462**, L17+.

- Steidel, C. C. & Hamilton, D., 1993. Deep imaging of high redshift QSO fields below the Lyman limit. II - Number counts and colors of field galaxies. *AJ*, **105**, 2017–2030.
- Steidel, C. C., Shapley, A. E., Pettini, M., Adelberger, K. L., Erb, D. K., Reddy, N. A. & Hunt, M. P., 2004. A Survey of Star-forming Galaxies in the $1.4 \lesssim z \lesssim 2.5$ Redshift Desert: Overview. *ApJ*, **604**, 534–550.
- Stern, D., Eisenhardt, P., Gorjian, V., Kochanek, C. S., Caldwell, N., Eisenstein, D., Brodwin, M., Brown, M. J. I., Cool, R., Dey, A., Green, P., Jannuzi, B. T., Murray, S. S., Pahre, M. A. & Willner, S. P., 2005. Mid-Infrared Selection of Active Galaxies. *ApJ*, **631**, 163–168.
- Stockton, A., McGrath, E., Canalizo, G., Iye, M. & Maihara, T., 2008. Morphologies of Two Massive Old Galaxies at $z \sim 2.5$. *ApJ*, **672**, 146–152.
- Strazzullo, V., Rosati, P., Pannella, M., Gobat, R., Santos, J. S. et al., 2010. Cluster galaxies in XMMU J2235-2557: galaxy population properties in most massive environments at $z \sim 1.4$. *A&A*, **524**, A17+.
- Suganuma, M., Yoshii, Y., Kobayashi, Y., Minezaki, T., Enya, K., Tomita, H., Aoki, T., Koshida, S. & Peterson, B. A., 2006. Reverberation Measurements of the Inner Radius of the Dust Torus in Nearby Seyfert 1 Galaxies. *ApJ*, **639**, 46–63.
- Szokoly, G. P., Bergeron, J., Hasinger, G., Lehmann, I., Kewley, L. et al., 2004. The Chandra Deep Field-South: Optical Spectroscopy. I. *ApJS*, **155**, 271–349.
- Tacconi, L. J., Genzel, R., Smail, I., Neri, R., Chapman, S. C. et al., 2008. Submillimeter Galaxies at $z \sim 2$: Evidence for Major Mergers and Constraints on Lifetimes, IMF, and CO-H₂ Conversion Factor. *ApJ*, **680**, 246–262.
- Tacconi, L. J., Neri, R., Chapman, S. C., Genzel, R., Smail, I., Ivison, R. J., Bertoldi, F., Blain, A., Cox, P., Greve, T. & Omont, A., 2006. High-Resolution Millimeter Imaging of Submillimeter Galaxies. *ApJ*, **640**, 228–240.
- Tamm, A. & Tenjes, P., 2006. Surface photometry and structure of high redshift disk galaxies in the HDF-S NICMOS field. *A&A*, **449**, 67–78.
- Tanaka, M., Kodama, T., Arimoto, N., Okamura, S., Umetsu, K., Shimasaku, K., Tanaka, I. & Yamada, T., 2005. The build-up of the colour-magnitude relation as a function of environment. *MNRAS*, **362**, 268–288.
- Tanvir, N. R., Fox, D. B., Levan, A. J., Berger, E., Wiersema, K. et al., 2009. A γ -ray burst at a redshift of $z \sim 8.2$. *Nature*, **461**, 1254–1257.
- Tielens, A. G. G. M., 2011. 25 years of PAH hypothesis. In *EAS Publications Series*, vol. 46 of *EAS Publications Series*, 3–10.

- Tielens, A. G. G. M., Miley, G. K. & Willis, A. G., 1979. Westerbork Observations of 4C Sources with Steep Radio Spectra. *A&AS*, **35**, 153–+.
- Tinsley, B. M., 1972. Stellar Evolution in Elliptical Galaxies. *ApJ*, **178**, 319–336.
- Tozzi, P., Gilli, R., Mainieri, V., Norman, C., Risaliti, G., Rosati, P., Bergeron, J., Borgani, S., Giacconi, R., Hasinger, G., Nonino, M., Streblyanska, A., Szokoly, G., Wang, J. X. & Zheng, W., 2006. X-ray spectral properties of active galactic nuclei in the Chandra Deep Field South. *A&A*, **451**, 457–474.
- Treister, E., Cardamone, C. N., Schawinski, K., Urry, C. M., Gawiser, E., Virani, S., Lira, P., Kartaltepe, J., Damen, M., Taylor, E. N., Le Floch, E., Justham, S. & Koekemoer, A. M., 2009a. Heavily Obscured AGN in Star-Forming Galaxies at $z \sim 2$. *ApJ*, **706**, 535–552.
- Treister, E., Castander, F. J., Maccarone, T. J., Gawiser, E., Coppi, P. S., Urry, C. M., Maza, J., Herrera, D., Gonzalez, V., Montoya, C. & Pineda, P., 2005. The Calán-Yale Deep Extragalactic Research (CYDER) Survey: Optical Properties and Deep Spectroscopy of Serendipitous X-Ray Sources. *ApJ*, **621**, 104–122.
- Treister, E. & Urry, C. M., 2006. The Evolution of Obscuration in Active Galactic Nuclei. *ApJ*, **652**, L79–L82.
- Treister, E., Urry, C. M., Chatzichristou, E., Bauer, F., Alexander, D. M., Koekemoer, A., Van Duyne, J., Brandt, W. N., Bergeron, J., Stern, D., Moustakas, L. A., Chary, R.-R., Conselice, C., Cristiani, S. & Grogin, N., 2004. Obscured Active Galactic Nuclei and the X-Ray, Optical, and Far-Infrared Number Counts of Active Galactic Nuclei in the GOODS Fields. *ApJ*, **616**, 123–135.
- Treister, E., Urry, C. M., Van Duyne, J., Dickinson, M., Chary, R.-R., Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F., Natarajan, P., Lira, P. & Grogin, N. A., 2006. Spitzer Number Counts of Active Galactic Nuclei in the GOODS Fields. *ApJ*, **640**, 603–611.
- Treister, E., Virani, S., Gawiser, E., Urry, C. M., Lira, P., Francke, H., Blanc, G. A., Cardamone, C. N., Damen, M., Taylor, E. N. & Schawinski, K., 2009b. Optical Spectroscopy of X-Ray Sources in the Extended Chandra Deep Field South. *ApJ*, **693**, 1713–1727.
- Trujillo, I., Conselice, C. J., Bundy, K., Cooper, M. C., Eisenhardt, P. & Ellis, R. S., 2007. Strong size evolution of the most massive galaxies since $z \sim 2$. *MNRAS*, **382**, 109–120.
- Trujillo, I., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Rudnick, G., Barden, M., Franx, M. et al., 2006. The Size Evolution of Galaxies since $z \sim 3$: Combining SDSS, GEMS, and FIRES. *ApJ*, **650**, 18–41.
- Ueda, Y., Akiyama, M., Ohta, K. & Miyaji, T., 2003. Cosmological Evolution of the Hard X-Ray Active Galactic Nucleus Luminosity Function and the Origin of the Hard X-Ray Background. *ApJ*, **598**, 886–908.

- Urry, C. M. & Padovani, P., 1995. Unified Schemes for Radio-Loud Active Galactic Nuclei. *PASP*, **107**, 803–+.
- van Albada, T. S., 1982. Dissipationless galaxy formation and the R to the 1/4-power law. *MNRAS*, **201**, 939–955.
- van der Wel, A., Bell, E. F., van den Bosch, F. C., Gallazzi, A. & Rix, H.-W., 2009. On the Size and Comoving Mass Density Evolution of Early-Type Galaxies. *ApJ*, **698**, 1232–1243.
- van der Wel, A., Rix, H.-W., Wuyts, S., McGrath, E. J., Koekemoer, A. M., Bell, E. F., Holden, B. P., Robaina, A. R. & McIntosh, D. H., 2011. The Majority of Compact Massive Galaxies at $z \sim 2$ are Disk Dominated. *ApJ*, **730**, 38–+.
- van Dokkum, P. G., 2005. The Recent and Continuing Assembly of Field Elliptical Galaxies by Red Mergers. *AJ*, **130**, 2647–2665.
- van Dokkum, P. G., Quadri, R., Marchesini, D., Rudnick, G., Franx, M. et al., 2006. The Space Density and Colors of Massive Galaxies at $2 < z < 3$: The Predominance of Distant Red Galaxies. *ApJ*, **638**, L59–L62.
- van Dokkum, P. G., Whitaker, K. E., Brammer, G., Franx, M., Kriek, M., Labbé, I., Marchesini, D., Quadri, R., Bezanson, R., Illingworth, G. D., Muzzin, A., Rudnick, G., Tal, T. & Wake, D., 2010. The Growth of Massive Galaxies Since $z = 2$. *ApJ*, **709**, 1018–1041.
- Vandame, B., 2002. New algorithms and technologies for the un-supervised reduction of Optical/IR images. In J.-L. Starck & F. D. Murtagh, ed., *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, vol. 4847 of *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, 123–134.
- Walcher, J., Groves, B., Budavári, T. & Dale, D., 2011. Fitting the integrated spectral energy distributions of galaxies. *Ap&SS*, **331**, 1–52.
- Walsh, D., Lebofsky, M. J., Rieke, G. H., Shone, D. & Elston, R., 1985. Infrared study and classification of optically faint steep-spectrum radio sources. *MNRAS*, **212**, 631–643.
- Warren, S., Lawrence, A., Almaini, O., Cirasuolo, M., Foucaud, S., Hambly, N., Hewett, P., Jameson, R., Leggett, S., Lodieu, N., Lucas, P., McLure, R., McMahan, R., Mortlock, D., Pinfield, D. & Venemans, B., 2006. Early Science Results from the UKIDSS ESO Public Survey. *The Messenger*, **126**, 7–10.
- White, R. L., Helfand, D. J., Becker, R. H., Glikman, E. & de Vries, W., 2007. Signals from the Noise: Image Stacking for Quasars in the FIRST Survey. *ApJ*, **654**, 99–114.
- White, S. D. M. & Frenk, C. S., 1991. Galaxy formation through hierarchical clustering. *ApJ*, **379**, 52–79.

- Wiklind, T., Dickinson, M., Ferguson, H. C., Giavalisco, M., Mobasher, B., Grogin, N. A. & Panagia, N., 2008. A Population of Massive and Evolved Galaxies at $z \geq 5$. *ApJ*, **676**, 781–806.
- Williams, R. J., Quadri, R. F., Franx, M., van Dokkum, P. & Labbé, I., 2009. Detection of Quiescent Galaxies in a Bicolor Sequence from $Z = 0-2$. *ApJ*, **691**, 1879–1895.
- Windhorst, R. A., Cohen, S. H., Hathi, N. P., McCarthy, P. J., Ryan, R. E. et al., 2011. The Hubble Space Telescope Wide Field Camera 3 Early Release Science Data: Panchromatic Faint Object Counts for $0.2-2 \mu\text{m}$ Wavelength. *ApJS*, **193**, 27–+.
- Worsley, M. A., Fabian, A. C., Barcons, X., Mateos, S., Hasinger, G. & Brunner, H., 2004. The (un)resolved X-ray background in the Lockman Hole. *MNRAS*, **352**, L28–L33.
- Worsley, M. A., Fabian, A. C., Bauer, F. E., Alexander, D. M., Hasinger, G., Mateos, S., Brunner, H., Brandt, W. N. & Schneider, D. P., 2005. The unresolved hard X-ray background: the missing source population implied by the Chandra and XMM-Newton deep fields. *MNRAS*, **357**, 1281–1287.
- Wright, E. L., Eisenhardt, P. R. M., Mainzer, A. K., Ressler, M. E., Cutri, R. M. et al., 2010. The Wide-field Infrared Survey Explorer (WISE): Mission Description and Initial On-orbit Performance. *AJ*, **140**, 1868–1881.
- Wuyts, S., Cox, T. J., Hayward, C. C., Franx, M., Hernquist, L., Hopkins, P. F., Jonsson, P. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2010. On Sizes, Kinematics, M/L Gradients, and Light Profiles of Massive Compact Galaxies at $z \sim 2$. *ApJ*, **722**, 1666–1684.
- Wuyts, S., Franx, M., Cox, T. J., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Hayward, C. C., Hernquist, L., Hopkins, P. F., Labbé, I., Marchesini, D., Robertson, B. E., Toft, S. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2009a. Color Distributions, Number, and Mass Densities of Massive Galaxies at $1.5 < z < 3$: Comparing Observations with Merger Simulations. *ApJ*, **700**, 799–819.
- Wuyts, S., Franx, M., Cox, T. J., Hernquist, L., Hopkins, P. F., Robertson, B. E. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2009b. Recovering Stellar Population Properties and Redshifts from Broadband Photometry of Simulated Galaxies: Lessons for SED Modeling. *ApJ*, **696**, 348–369.
- Wuyts, S., Labbé, I., Franx, M., Rudnick, G., van Dokkum, P. G., Fazio, G. G., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Huang, J., Moorwood, A. F. M., Rix, H.-W., Röttgering, H. & van der Werf, P., 2007. What Do We Learn from IRAC Observations of Galaxies at $2 < z < 3.5$? *ApJ*, **655**, 51–65.
- Wuyts, S., Labbé, I., Schreiber, N. M. F., Franx, M., Rudnick, G., Brammer, G. B. & van Dokkum, P. G., 2008. FIREWORKS $U_{38\text{-to-}24 \mu\text{m}}$ Photometry of the GOODS Chandra Deep Field-South: Multiwavelength Catalog and Total Infrared Properties of Distant K_s -selected Galaxies. *ApJ*, **682**, 985–1003.

- Wuyts, S., van Dokkum, P. G., Franx, M., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Illingworth, G. D., Labbé, I. & Rudnick, G., 2009c. Optical Spectroscopy of Distant Red Galaxies. *ApJ*, **706**, 885–895.
- Yan, H., Dickinson, M., Eisenhardt, P. R. M., Ferguson, H. C., Grogin, N. A., Paolillo, M., Chary, R.-R., Casertano, S., Stern, D., Reach, W. T., Moustakas, L. A. & Fall, S. M., 2004. High-Redshift Extremely Red Objects in the Hubble Space Telescope Ultra Deep Field Revealed by the GOODS Infrared Array Camera Observations. *ApJ*, **616**, 63–70.
- York, D. G., Adelman, J., Anderson, Jr., J. E., Anderson, S. F., Annis, J. et al., 2000. The Sloan Digital Sky Survey: Technical Summary. *AJ*, **120**, 1579–1587.
- Zehavi, I., Zheng, Z., Weinberg, D. H., Frieman, J. A., Berlind, A. A. et al., 2005. The Luminosity and Color Dependence of the Galaxy Correlation Function. *ApJ*, **630**, 1–27.
- Zheng, X. Z., Bell, E. F., Papovich, C., Wolf, C., Meisenheimer, K., Rix, H.-W., Rieke, G. H. & Somerville, R., 2007. The Dependence of Star Formation on Galaxy Stellar Mass. *ApJ*, **661**, L41–L44.
- Zheng, X. Z., Bell, E. F., Rix, H.-W., Papovich, C., Le Floch, E., Rieke, G. H. & Pérez-González, P. G., 2006. Detecting Faint Galaxies by Stacking at 24 μm . *ApJ*, **640**, 784–800.
- Zucca, E., Bardelli, S., Bolzonella, M., Zamorani, G., Ilbert, O. et al., 2009. The zCOSMOS survey: the role of the environment in the evolution of the luminosity function of different galaxy types. *A&A*, **508**, 1217–1234.
- Zwicky, F., 1951. The Coma Cluster of Galaxies. *PASP*, **63**, 61–+.